

A Sonamy story

The complete series



*A Sonic the Hedgehog fanfiction
written by T1Weasel*

Cover art by Myly14

Characters are (c) SEGA and Sonic Team



Disclaimer

This ebook contains the two fanfictions "A Sonamy Story", "A sonamy Story Sequel" and "A sonamy Story Threequel" bundled in one book.

This ebook contains sexual content and violence. The warnings before the said contents have been removed for a better and fluid reading. This reading is only for adults.

This story was converted on eBook by Max le Fou in 2022. The art in the cover is made by [Myly14](#) and the rest of the cover is made by Max le Fou. Many thanks to PperCorn who archived the story and without who I couldn't build this ebook.

T1Weasel owns this story, Chief Parkinson, Doctor Alnilam, Robot Alnilam, Dash, Lily, the Prower triplets, Slasher, Samuel, Monica, Igor, Knuckles and Tikal's quadruplets, Rachel the waitress, Reverend Spolowicz and Mark the diamond store owner. (These two last ones are based off of real people that asked him to be in his story.) Sonic, Amy Rose, and everything related are owned and copyrighted by Sega.

Sonic, Amy Rose, and all related characters are owned and copyrighted by Sega and Team Sonic. Below are the rest of the disclaimers...

"Good Vibrations" - Artist: The Beach Boys. Album: Smiley Smile. Label: Capitol Records. Released: October 10, 1966. Written by Brian Wilson and Mike Love. Produced by Brian Wilson. Recorded: February-September 1966.

"I Knew I Loved You" – Artist: Savage Garden. Album: Affirmation. Label: Columbia Records. Written and Produced by Daniel Jones and Darren Hayes. Recorded: 1999. Released: October 11th, 1999.

"Forever" – Artist: The Beach Boys. Album: Sunflower. Label: Brother Records/Reprise Records. Released: 1970. Written by: Dennis Wilson and Gregg Jakobson. Recorded: January 9th and March 17th, 1969. Produced

by: The Beach Boys. A Capella version from the "Hawthorne, CA" Anthology Album (released May 22, 2001).

"All I Ask Of You" – From the 1986 "Phantom Of The Opera" musical by Andrew Lloyd Webber. Released as a single on 7 and 12 inch vinyl in 1986 by Sarah Brightman and Cliff Richard. It's also in the 2004 movie "Phantom Of the Opera".

"Come What May" – From the 2001 movie "Moulin Rouge!" Released September 24th, 2001. Label: Interscope Records. Written by: David Baerwald and Kevin Gilbert.

"Your Song" – Written by: Elton John and Bernie Taupin. Produced by: Gus Dudgeon. Recorded: January 1970 at Trident Studios. Released: October 1970 on the album "Elton John". Performed in the 2001 film "Moulin Rouge!" by Ewan McGregor.

"Pachelbel Canon" – Written in 1680 by German Baroque composer Johann Pachelbel.

Movies: "Phantom Of The Opera" – Directed by Joel Schumacher (2004 Film adaptation of Andrew Lloyd Webber's 1986 musical of the same name). Produced by: Andrew Lloyd Webber. Screenplay by: Joel Schumacher and Andrew Lloyd Webber. 1986 Musical by: Andrew Lloyd Webber, Charles Hart, and Richard Stilgoe. Novel written by: Gaston Leroux. Publication date: September 23, 1909 to January 8, 1910. Published in English: 1911.

"Moulin Rouge!" – 2001 movie. Written by: Baz Luhrmann and Craig Pearce. Produced by: Baz Luhrmann, Fred Baron, and Martin Brown. Directed by: Baz Luhrmann. Distributed by: 20th Century Fox. Release Date: June 1st, 2001.

Olive Garden: I do have an Olive Garden in this story. Olive Garden was founded in 1982, and their headquarters are in Orlando, Florida. Parent is Darden Restaurants.

Sources: The above information was taken from Wikipedia

A Sonamy Story

The Story Begins

"Our story begins with Sonic the Hedgehog relaxing on one of the many benches in the Station Square park. It was a mid-March afternoon, and it's a sunny day. The clear blue sky matched Sonic's fur perfectly. The 22 year old hedgehog hero hadn't changed too much over the years. His quills were longer, but they were still in his usual slicked back style.

Also, Sonic had grown a few inches, and all the fighting he did against Robotnik's machines had given him a very muscular body, abs and all. The emerald green eyes still made women swoon, though Sonic tended to ignore it.

Women all around the cobalt hedgehog fell when he walked by, and several reasons were given as to why it happened. Sonic said it was his abs. The women said it was the quills, which moved freely in the breeze wherever Sonic went.

But there was one who said it was the bright emerald eyes. That one was none other than Amy Rose. Ever since Sonic rescued her from Mecha Sonic on Little Planet, she'd been head over heels for the blue speedster. That was 10 years ago. Now 19, Amy Rose had the kind of looks all guys drooled over. Everywhere she went, guys tried to give her their phone number, and each time it failed. Amy's love remained strong for Sonic, and only Sonic.

Amy's quills were a little longer, and she now stood about four inches shorter than Sonic. Another change was that she didn't glomp Sonic anymore. He didn't like it, and she got tired of it herself. The blue hero was listening to the Beach Boys on his iPhone. He liked the harmonies, and often sang along.

Sonic stretched, making a dozen fangirls near him faint. Giving a deep chuckle, Sonic opened his emerald green eyes, frowning at the lint on his

light blue shirt and dark green shorts. Then he saw Amy Rose walking to him, wearing her typical red dress. The song playing on the iPhone was "Good Vibrations", still by the Beach Boys. However, Sonic wasn't singing anymore. He was staring at Amy, unable to look away. 'Whoa.... Puberty was good to her...'

Amy was staring at Sonic, but with a confused look on her face. She was surprised to see Sonic not running from her. 'Why isn't he running? He's usually long gone by now....'

In short, Sonic was blown away. Amy's large breasts bounced visibly with each of her steps, and the toned body kept Sonic rooted to the bench. Amy's green eyes looked over Sonic's abs and various other muscles before locking on to the bright emerald eyes of the blue blur.

Her thoughts: 'I know he sees me... He can't stop staring.... Do I have something on my face?' Sitting down next to Sonic, Amy Rose smiled. "Hi Sonic."

The speedy hedgehog finally found words. "Hi there Amy. How are you?"

This time, Amy couldn't speak. She'd gotten lost in the power of Sonic's emerald eyes. Sonic chuckled, waving his hand in front of Amy's face. "Amy? You there?"

Amy snapped back to reality, blushing a little. "Huh? Oh, sorry Sonic."

He smiled at her. "It's okay. What's up?"

The pink hedgehog smiled. "Well, I was wondering if you had any plans tomorrow night."

Sonic shrugged. "I don't know. I don't think I have anything planned right now. Why do you ask?"

Amy giggled. "I was hoping you'd like to go to Twinkle Park with me tomorrow night."

Sonic made his face a faked mix of uncertainty and thinking. "I don't know, Amy.... I kind of told Tails I'd help him with the Tornado...." He looks over at Amy, and sees she's about to cry. "Aww, don't cry Amy. I'll go with you to Twinkle Park."

The pink hedgehog's green eyes light up and it was all she could do to stay seated. "Y-You will?"

Sonic nods. "I feel kind of bad about running away from you for so long. Besides, I like going to Twinkle Park too."

Amy nodded. "Pick me up at 7 PM at my house, okay?"

The blue hedgehog smiled, making Amy melt inside. "I'll be there."

Giving him a quick kiss on the cheek, Amy left for her house. Once again, Sonic found himself staring, but this time it was Amy's ample rear and long legs that had his attention. 'Wow she's hot..... Wait. What did I just think? I can't like her as more than a friend, even *if* we hang out together. I'm a free spirit, not the kind to settle down with.'

After a few more minutes of trying to figure out his feelings for Amy Rose, Sonic bolted to his house, still listening to the Beach Boys on his iPhone.

-Amy's House-

Amy Rose's house was located on the outer areas of Station Square. It was small, but cozy, and had a sign that said 'The House Of Amy Rose' for obvious reasons. We find the pink hedgehog walking down the path to her house, sighing happily. 'I can't believe Sonic agreed to go with me to Twinkle Park! I'm so excited! I think I have just the outfit too.'

Walking to the door, Amy unlocked it, and went inside. Like most living rooms, it was white, with a table and couch to watch TV while eating. It was a one story house, so rooms were easy to get to. Not that Amy was lazy at all. She was thinking about the future when she picked this house....

-Flashback-

"Well, Miss Rose, here's a house that I think will fit your needs". Amy looked at the real estate agent, then at the house, beaming. 'This house would be perfect for raising a family. No stairs, easy room access, I like the colors....'

The agent gave Amy a tour of the house. "It's perfect" was the pink hedgehog's decision. A week goes by, and Amy Rose had all of her things in the house. She stood in the living room, smiling. 'Now all I need is my Sonikku, and I'll have everything I need.'

-End flashback-

We rejoin Amy in her room at the far end of the house. It's a pink color, to match her bed sheets, and her fur at the same time. She's looking through her closet, trying to find something to wear at Twinkle Park tomorrow night. Amy finally comes across a green tank top with spaghetti straps, and chose jeans with a matching jean jacket to go with it.

Walking to her mirror, Amy frowns. 'Do I want a headband for tomorrow night?'

Holding up the outfit, Amy took off her red headband, and placed it on her dresser. Resuming looking herself over, the sakura hedgehog smiled. 'No headband tomorrow night'

Putting the outfit away, Amy returned to her mirror, looking at her stunning curves. 'What was Sonic staring at earlier today?'

Then it hit her, and she giggled. 'He must have liked what he saw. Well, wait until tomorrow night Sonikku.'

Amy got a brush, and spent the next half hour fiddling with her quills. As previously mentioned, they were a little longer than usual, but Amy kept her quills short, since she didn't believe she'd look good with long quills. Also, the familiar red dress was being worn for the last time on this day.

Amy frowned as she messed with her quills. 'I don't know what's taken me so long to say it, but this dress has to go. I like it and all, but it's time for a

change. After today, the red dress is no more.'

After finishing with her quills, Amy put her brush down, and went to her kitchen to make some dinner. 'Hmm.... I'm feeling like grilled cheese tonight.'

Getting what she needed from the cabinets, Amy had a grilled cheese sandwich ready in 10 minutes. It took 5 minutes for the skillet to heat up, and another 5 to make the sandwich. After cleaning up from making it, Amy got some milk, poured a glass, and went into her living room to eat.

Sitting on the couch, Amy turned on the TV and was a little confused to see a news bulletin. The anchor was once again talking about Dr Ivo Robotnik, Sonic's arch enemy. *"Dr Robotnik has once again sworn ultimate vengeance against Sonic the Hedgehog. As usual, he wouldn't say when or where it would happen. Please be careful, and alert the local authorities if you see Dr Robotnik. That is all."*

Amy shook her head, laughing a little bit. "Why doesn't he just give up already?"

Finishing her dinner, the pink hedgehog put her dishes away, and locked her front door. It was about 9 PM, and Amy knew she'd need her strength for tomorrow night at Twinkle Park. Turning off all the lights, Amy went into her room and changed into some purple pajamas with various green patterns on them.

Walking over to her window, the pink hedgehog looked at all the bright stars outside. Getting down on her knees, Amy folded her hands, closed her eyes, and made the same wish she'd been making for the last 10 years. "Please, please help Sonic tell me he loves me. I've waited for so long, and I don't know how much longer I can hold on. I don't want to lose him to another woman again. It was hard enough watching him and Sally Acorn together. Please, I'm begging you."

At this point, a few tears began to fall from her eyes. "I just want him to say he loves me. Grant my wish... just this once."

Wiping the tears from her green eyes, the pink hedgehog got up, closed the curtains, and turned off her bedroom light. Climbing into her bed, Amy pulled the pink bed sheets over her body, and held her blue plushy of Sonic close to her chest. Closing her green eyes, Amy dreamed of the day when Sonic would hold her in the same way.

-Sonic's House-

Sonic lived in a blue two story house in the heart of Station Square. His house also had a basement, where he usually lifted weights. The first floor had the living room, kitchen, and the game room. On the second floor were Sonic's room, the guest bedroom, and the bathroom. The inside of the house was white, since Sonic didn't feel like changing the color.

The blue hedgehog was cleaning up from his workout when he heard the news bulletin on the radio. Shaking his head, Sonic tried to figure out why Dr Robotnik always swore ultimate vengeance on him when it always failed. Sonic turned off the radio, finished cleaning up, and exited the basement, locking the door when he got out.

Drying his quills and fur off with a towel, Sonic went to the kitchen, and made a sandwich. Nothing special, just ham and cheese. After eating, Sonic locked the front door and turned off the lights. Going into his room, Sonic changed into a pair of blue boxers, and crawled under the blue silk sheets on his king-size bed. He's asleep in minutes, but little did he know that Robotnik's scheme would hit him where it hurt most...

Evil with a twist

-Amy's POV-

I wake up around 9 AM. The sun is shining, and the blue sky reminds me of Sonic. sigh What a stud he is. All the women he turns down, it's like he's either not interested in love, or he's waiting for the right girl to come along. I really hope that girl is me. I love him so much. Climbing out of bed, I stretch and get a green sundress from my dresser.

Taking a quick shower, I dry off, get dressed, and go into the kitchen for breakfast. I feel like cereal, so I get a bowl and some milk, and sit down in my living room on the couch. Turning on the TV, my green eyes take in the weather forecast and last night's news. I finish my cereal, put up the dishes, and head to the park. I know Sonic will be there, so I lock the door, and waste no time running to the park.

-Sonic's POV-

A sound wakes me up. It's my alarm clock. Hitting it repeatedly until it stops ringing I stretch and open my emerald eyes. It's 7 AM, and the sun is just starting to rise over the horizon. I get out of bed, put on an old pair of shorts and an old shirt, and then bolt to the park for my morning run.

-Normal POV-

Amy Rose reaches a bench in the middle of the park, and sits down, waiting for Sonic. In a few seconds, Amy sees a blue streak blow by her and then stop in front of her.

It's Sonic of course, and he decides to end his run right then and there. "Hi Ames. How are you?"

The pink hedgehog blushes, her fur turning a light purple color. She loved it when Sonic called her Ames. "I'm great Sonikku."

This time, the blue hedgehog blushes, turning his fur a bluish-purple color. He secretly liked it when she called him Sonikku. "What brings you to the park, Amy?"

She giggled. "I'm just reminding you about our date at Twinkle Park tonight."

Sonic nodded. "Don't worry, I didn't forget Ames."

Amy smiled, and walked over to Sonic, her jade eyes meeting Sonic's emerald ones. "Good. See you tonight Sonikku."

She kissed Sonic on the cheek, and left him blushing in the park. Meanwhile, a long distance away, two pairs of eyes were watching the hedgehogs.

One pair belonged to Dr Robotnik. "So, it seems that Amy Rose is Sonic's weakness. Good. Are you ready?"

Robotnik's accomplice grinned. "She won't know what happened to her when I'm done with her."

-6:30 PM, Sonic's House-

Sonic steps out of his bathroom, drying his fur off. He's just finished showering for his date with Amy. "If I'm going, I'll look decent. It is a date, even if we aren't together."

Going to the dresser in his room, Sonic gets blue boxers, blue jeans, and a black shirt. It's a collared shirt, but not a dress shirt, since it's not a formal date.

Getting dressed, Sonic puts on his black speed shoes, and walks outside. "This is going to be an interesting night."

Locking the door, Sonic runs to Amy's house.

-6:45 PM, Amy's House-

We find the pink hedgehog in her room getting ready for her date with Sonic. She's wearing the green spaghetti strap tank top and jeans with the matching jacket. Green sandals and straightened quills finish the look. There is no headband on Amy's head tonight. She didn't eat since she and Sonic had planned on eating while at Twinkle Park. Turning off the light in her room, Amy Rose walked to her porch, locked the door, and waited for Sonic.

-7 PM-

Sonic arrives at Amy's house exactly at 7 PM. Both hedgehogs stared at each other. "Y-You look great Amy."

The sakura hedgehog blushed. "So do you Sonic."

He blushes now, and offers Amy his arm. "Ready?"

Amy Rose took the blue hedgehog's strong arm, and nodded. "Let's go."

Sonic smiles and the two hedgehogs walk to Twinkle Park.

-7:30 PM-

Sonic and Amy Rose now stood inside the gate to the huge amusement park. They'd gotten in free, because they were a cute couple, as the brightly lit sign dictated.

Amy looks at Sonic. "Where do we go first Sonic?"

The emerald eyes of the blue hero soon find a ride that rises really high then drops really fast. "That one looks fun. Let's go."

The two hedgehogs quickly made it to the ride, and strap themselves in, Amy a little tighter than Sonic. Once the ride was filled up, the gate closed, and the ride slowly rose up. 100 feet, then 200 feet, then it reached 275 feet high and stopped rising. You could see for miles around the park. As the suspense built, Amy grabbed Sonic's arm tightly.

Without warning the ride dropped, and everyone screamed..... well, everyone except Sonic. He was laughing. The ride stopped about 50 feet up, then slowly lowered to the ground. As soon as the bars lifted, Amy Rose bolted from the ride.

Sonic soon caught up to the shaking pink hedgehog. "You okay Ames?"

She nodded, hugging the blue speedster tightly. "Y-Y-Yes-ss, b-but n-no m-m-more r-rides l-l-like that p-please."

Sonic chuckled and led Amy to another, much calmer ride.

-Three hours later-

It was now 10:30 PM. The two hedgehogs had ridden pretty much every ride in Twinkle Park. Now they stood outside the park, smiling and blushing.

Amy softly speaks to Sonic. "I had a great time tonight Sonic."

The blue hero blushed. "So did I Amy."

They looked at each other for a few seconds. For some reason, Sonic felt himself leaning toward Amy. She was doing the same. Their lips got closer, and closer, and then a voice made them freeze. "So sorry to interrupt this moment."

Turning, Sonic and Amy see Dr Robotnik. He pushes a button on his wrist and four chains wrap themselves around Sonic's wrists and ankles. As Sonic struggled to break free Robotnik grabbed Amy and held her in place. "Come on out, accomplice. I know you've had a vendetta against Amy Rose here. Now's your chance."

The accomplice steps out of the shadows, wielding a heavy pipe. Sonic and Amy are shocked as the accomplice is revealed. "Sally?"

The squirrel nodded. "That's right. I was very upset when you left me, Sonic. Only Amy stands in the way of me getting you back. Now, you'll watch as I take Amy's place by your side."

A crowd had gathered around them, growing in size. Sally turned to Amy, a sinister smile on her face. Rearing back, Sally swung the heavy pipe, connecting with Amy's jaw. Blood erupted from Amy's mouth as her head was jerked toward the right. Sally repeated the motion, this time from the opposite direction. The result was more blood flowing from Amy's mouth.

Sonic had tears in his eyes, but they weren't sad tears. They were angry tears. The blue hedgehog lurched repeatedly against the chains, baring his fangs at Robotnik. Amy started struggling as well, but the mad doctor's grip was too tight.

He laughed at the two hedgehogs, mainly at Sonic. "Don't bother, Sonic. By the time you get free, Amy Rose will be no more."

Sally continued to beat Amy, each hit making Sonic angrier. Five tense minutes pass. Amy Rose was fading. She managed one word before slipping into unconsciousness. "Sonic..."

Robotnik dropped her when he felt the pink hedgehog go limp. "I told you Sonic."

The blue hedgehog was shaking with rage. "You have *no* idea what you've just done."

Two police officers arrived, and arrested Sally, who was still holding the pipe. Someone had called 911, which wound up working in Sonic's favor. The police officers put Sally into their car, and drove her to jail. An ambulance arrived, and two paramedics put the unconscious Amy on a stretcher. Gently, she's put in the ambulance, and taken to the hospital.

Meanwhile, Doctor Robotnik laughed at Sonic again. "You'll have to watch me get away again slowpoke."

The evil scientist turned and froze when he heard a roar behind him. Turning around again, Robotnik sees all four chains snap, and is unable to move as Sonic, now Dark Super Sonic, walks toward him.

Being who he is, Dr Robotnik tried to explain. "N-Now Sonic, I can explain-!"

He's cut off as Dark Super Sonic's hand wraps around his throat. The voice is a low, menacing growl. "Normally, I'd let you crawl away. This time, you won't get that chance."

The evil doctor's eyes grow wide as he realizes what Sonic has just said. "No! Please, let me live!"

Dark Super Sonic slammed Robotnik to the ground and then pulled his face close. "Not a chance."

Then the beat down began. Dark Super Sonic threw Robotnik into a nearby tree. The blow split the bark, and put a nice crack in Robotnik's head. Blood began flowing down the mechanical maniac's face as he swayed from the force of the throw. Dark Super Sonic charged at Robotnik, and landed a hard Flying Kick to Robotnik's jaw. The mad scientist hit the ground hard, the sound of breaking bone being heard as he went down.

Dark Super Sonic saw a machine come toward them. It was Robotnik's personal one-man carrier. The evil doctor lifted his head just in time to see the machine explode, and slowly stood up, the blood from his head forgotten. A dark blur rockets toward him, and tackles him to the ground.

Dark Super Sonic growls in the doctor's face. "I told you that you wouldn't get away."

Doctor Robotnik covered his face with his arms, but the dark blue hedgehog grabbed his wrists and kicked the elbows. A scream comes from the mad doctor as the pain roars through his body, and his arms flop uselessly to his sides. Dark Super Sonic wraps both hands around the mechanical maniac's throat and beats his head against the hard ground.

15 hits later Robotnik lay unmoving on the ground. Getting behind the nearby tree that Robotnik had split, Dark Super Sonic rolled into a ball and hit the tree until it started falling. As it turns out, the position of Robotnik's

body had him exactly where the tree would fall. The evil doctor's eyes slowly opened, and saw the tree falling toward him.

The blood loss from his head wound and his useless arms prevented him from moving, so he could only scream. "NOOOO!"

The tree fell right on top of Dr Robotnik, crushing him and ending his life. Dark Super Sonic slowly became normal Sonic, and then he bolted to the hospital to check on Amy.

An unexpected confession

-11 PM, Station Square Hospital-

Sonic bursts into the doors and runs straight to the secretary. "Where's Amy Rose?"

The secretary nearly faints. "Sonic the Hedgehog? Can I have your autograph?"

The blue blur frowns. "Only if you tell me where Amy Rose is."

The secretary taps a few keys on the keyboard, and finds the room. "She's in Room 327."

Quickly scribbling his autograph, Sonic bolts to Amy's room. Quietly opening the door, Sonic freezes in his tracks, barely able to form words. "Amy....."

Walking in and shutting the door Sonic goes to Amy's bedside. The pink hedgehog was covered in cuts and bruises suffered from Sally Acorn's pipe. She was hooked up to life support, and several wires ran from various machines to Amy's limp body.

It was too much for Sonic to take, and he collapsed onto Amy, tears streaming from his emerald eyes. "No.... No..... Why did this have to happen to her?.... I'm so sorry Amy.... I'm sorry I couldn't get to you in time...."

Someone knocked on the door. It opened, revealing Tails and Cream. The two 18 year olds took one look at Amy, and Cream fell against Tails, crying loudly. The orange fox shut the door with one of his tails, and held Cream. What brought tears to Tails' eyes other than seeing Amy was seeing Sonic crying as much as he was.

Tails put a hand on Sonic's shoulder, making the blue hedgehog turn around. "Tails..."

Sonic resumed crying despite his attempts to stop. Tails was concerned. "Sonic, I've never seen you so heartbroken. Why now?"

Sonic answered his orange little brother between sobs. "You don't understand. I've run away all these years because I was shy."

Tails was confused, and Cream stopped crying to listen to Sonic. "What do you mean Sonic?"

The blue hedgehog shook his head. "I couldn't tell Amy how I really felt. I couldn't risk Robotnik targeting her in his attempts to get me to surrender."

Cream spoke up now. "What are you saying Sonic?"

The bright emerald eyes meet Tails' ocean blue eyes, and then Cream's chocolate eyes. "It's about time I told Amy how I really felt."

Turning back to the pink hedgehog, still limp on her hospital bed, Sonic begins. "First Amy, I'm sorry I ran away from you for so long. I know it hurt you, but Robotnik would have made you a target to get me to surrender. I couldn't allow that to happen. But now, we don't have to worry about him anymore."

Tails frowned. "What happened to him Sonic?"

The blue hedgehog turns to the orange fox. "Watch the news later."

Turning back to Amy, Sonic continued. "Where was I? Oh yeah. I'm sorry I couldn't reach you in time to keep Sally from beating you with the pipe, or to keep Robotnik from grabbing you."

Here, Sonic took a breath. This next part would be hard. Sonic didn't know it, but Tails and Cream were listening to every word. Sonic began speaking again. "Also, I want to say I'm sorry for not telling you how I really feel. You've told me before that you love me. With Robotnik gone, I can finally be honest."

Here, Sonic takes his left hand and cups Amy's right cheek gently. Another breath, then Sonic says what no one expected he'd ever say. "I love you

Amy Rose."

After speaking, Sonic leaned forward and softly kissed Amy on the lips. Tails and Cream were stunned, and were even more stunned when Amy stirred once the kiss broke. They run out of the room to go get a doctor.

Amy's green eyes slowly opened, and though her vision was blurry she could make out a blue shape. "S-S-Sonic?"

The blue hedgehog smiled. "Yes Amy, I'm here."

The pink hedgehog smiled. She was so happy Sonic was there with her. "What happened?"

Sonic frowned. "Robotnik trapped me, then grabbed you and held you in place while Sally beat you with a pipe. After you fell unconscious, Sally was arrested, and I defeated Robotnik once and for all."

Amy nodded. "But what about all those times you ran away from me? Can you explain that?"

Sonic nods. "If Dr Robotnik found out how I felt about you, he'd use it against both of us to get me to surrender to him. That, and I was shy about admitting my feelings. That's why I ran away all those times. I'm sorry Ames."

The pink hedgehog smiled. "Apology accepted Sonikku. Thank you for being here with me."

Sonic chuckled. "You're welcome Amy."

The pink hedgehog looked at Sonic with bright green eyes. "Sonic?"

The emerald eyes of the cobalt speedster turn to Amy. "Yes?"

She pauses for a second. "I love you."

Sonic gave Amy a smile that made her melt inside. "I love you too Amy."

It felt so good for Sonic and Amy to say those words, and hear them said back. There was a short pause, and then Sonic felt himself leaning toward Amy again. This time, their lips met, and without interruption. The power of this kiss couldn't have been measured on any scale. Fireworks went off in the heads of the two hedgehogs as Amy slipped her tongue into Sonic's mouth.

The blue hedgehog obliged immediately, his own tongue meeting hers. Chills rocketed down Sonic's spine as Amy's heart soared. After about a minute of kissing, the hedgehogs broke the kiss, though neither of them wanted to.

Amy began crying, which made Sonic concerned. "You okay Amy?"

The pink hedgehog nods. "I-I'm just so happy Sonic. To hear you say you love me after all these years.... I don't know how I could feel any happier.... Unless..... Sonic? Does this mean we're going out?"

The blue blur chuckles. "On two conditions. One, I have to ask you, and two, you have to be absolutely sure about it."

Amy giggles. "I certainly am the second one."

Sonic smiled. "Amy Rose, will you go out with me?"

Amy nuzzled Sonic's muzzle, since she couldn't really hug him. "Yes. Of course I will, Sonic."

Just then Tails, Cream, and a doctor walked in. Tails made the apologies. "Sorry that took so long. We were waiting for the right moment."

The doctor looked over Amy's machines, and disconnected them. "Well, I honestly think you should stay here in the hospital Miss Rose, but given that Sonic has pretty much saved your life, I'll let you go. Sonic, you must promise me that she'll get as much rest as possible for the next week."

Sonic nodded. "Absolutely."

The doctor left, taking Tails and Cream with him. "I don't get it Tails. How did Sonic do it?"

The orange fox chuckled. "He kissed her."

The doctor froze. "That's it?"

Cream nodded. "We wouldn't lie, doctor."

The doctor smiles. "I know you wouldn't. It just doesn't seem possible though. It's never been done or heard of in medical history."

Tails chuckles. "Even the odds are defeated with the power of love."

With that, Tails takes Cream's hand and they exit the hospital. They're soon followed by a blue streak and a gust of wind. The doctor chuckled and then went back to work.

-Amy's House, midnight-

Sonic walks into Amy's house, carrying the pink hedgehog bridal style, much to her delight. The blue hedgehog kept the lights off, and Amy locked the door, still in Sonic's arms. She directed him to her room, and Sonic gently put Amy down. As Amy changed into her green pajamas with purple patterns, Sonic faced away from her.

This made Amy giggle. "Awww, such a gentleman."

Sonic remained facing away from Amy until he heard her crawling on her bed. "Ooohhh... Aahhh...."

After Amy got under the sheets, Sonic's emerald eyes are met by Amy's green eyes. "Sonikku? Would you stay the night with me please? It gets lonely living here by myself."

Sonic hesitated. "You sure Amy?"

The pink hedgehog then used the Puppy Face, making Sonic melt inside. "Pleeeeeease?"

Sonic laughs and shakes his head. 'Dammit! She knows the Puppy Face! Why did she have to be so cute? I like it, but that Puppy Face will get me every time.'

Turning off the bedroom light, Sonic climbed into bed beside Amy. She surprised him by laying her head on his well-muscled peach colored chest. Sonic then surprised Amy by cuddling her close to him.

This action made her sigh with happiness. "I love you Sonic the Hedgehog."

Sonic kissed Amy on the top of her head. "I love you too Amy Rose."

The hedgehog couple soon fell asleep, smiles on their faces.

Planning a special night

It had been about two weeks since Amy got out of the hospital. Granted, she left after being there about an hour, but Sonic had promised the doctor that Amy would get as much rest as possible. This translated into Amy Rose being bedridden for the better part of a week. Sonic was there every step of the way.

Also, the subject of Sonic learning to swim was brought up several times. The speedster refused at first, given his fear of water. Then Amy used the Puppy Face, which finally made Sonic agree to learn how to swim at the local pool. That discussion was a week ago, and now the day had come. Sonic waited on Amy's couch for his pink lover to finish changing. He didn't have to wait long.

Amy came down the hallway, stopping in front of Sonic and modeling for him. "What do you think Sonikku?"

The blue hedgehog couldn't find words. His girlfriend was in a red two-piece bikini. Amy giggled when she saw Sonic's face and wagged her tail in front of him. "I take that as you like it?"

There was only nodding, making the pink hedgehog laugh. Sonic was wearing blue swim shorts and couldn't help the obvious sign he liked her bikini.

Amy noticed this and whispered teasingly in his ear. "That'll be another day.... Maybe."

Sonic laughed, took Amy's hand, and they walked to the pool.

-20 minutes later-

Sonic stood on the stairs in the shallow end of the pool. Amy was already swimming and the blue hedgehog loved seeing his pink girlfriend so happy.

She turned to him, treading water. "Come on Sonic! It's not so bad!"

Sonic laughs. "Ames, I still don't know how to swim. You have to teach me, remember?"

Amy giggles. "Oh, silly me. Let me help you learn, and maybe you'll get a little surprise later."

Sonic smiled and let Amy lead him into the pool where she started teaching him how to swim. 30 minutes passes, and Sonic was now swimming as well as Amy could. In fact, Sonic was doing so well, the hedgehog couple decided that whoever was "Marco Polo" the most in a one hour period would pay for their dinner date tomorrow night.

At the moment, Sonic was "Marco Polo" and he was searching for Amy. "Marco."

The reply came from his left. "Polo."

Sonic dove toward his pink lover, but missed. "Marco."

This time, his right. "Polo."

Another dive, another miss. "Marco." This time, no reply. 'Hmmm..... Where could she be?'

Then Sonic grinned. "Fish out of water!"

Amy laughed. "Fine, you got me. But the hour is up, and you were Marco Polo the longest."

Sonic winked and swam over to her. "Good. I was hoping to pay for our dinner anyway."

The two hedgehogs kissed and after another few minutes of swimming they left the pool. On the way home, Sonic and Amy looked for a nice place to eat dinner tomorrow night. By the time they got back to Amy's house, not one place seemed to stand out.

Sonic did his best to look for restaurants, but it was hard, since Amy was in a bikini. Amy noticed him staring, and kissed him. "I'm thinking I'll need to

wear a bikini more often around you."

Sonic chuckles. "To be honest, you don't need to. You look good enough as it is."

Amy blushes. "Awww, you're such a softie."

Now, Sonic blushes. "You're such a cutie."

Another kiss, and after a few minutes, the hedgehog couple reached Amy's house. They hadn't found a place to eat, but Sonic had an idea. "I'll go ask Tails what he thinks. Maybe he's got an idea."

Amy nodded. "I'll call Cream and go shopping with her for a dress. Meet at your house in an hour Sonic?"

He nodded. "Sounds good. See you then."

Sonic kissed Amy on the cheek, and ran to Tails' workshop. Amy went into her house, changed, and called Cream.

-Tails' Workshop-

A blue streak arrives at the heavy door outside Tails' workshop. Three knocks, and the twin-tailed fox opened the door. "Sonic? What are you doing here?"

Sonic rubs the back of his head. "Well, Amy taught me how to swim earlier today."

Tails smiled. "Awesome! I'm happy to hear it. But that's not why you're here, is it?"

The blue hedgehog shook his head. "I need a place to take Amy for dinner tomorrow night, and I'm paying. Do you have any ideas?"

Tails nodded. "There is that new Olive Garden on the other side of town that just opened. While I'm on it, why are you paying?"

Sonic chuckled. "I was Marco Polo the most in a one hour period."

Tails laughed. "Okay, I see now. Well, that's where I'd go if I were you."

Sonic gave Tails a confused look. "How do you know about this place?"

The orange fox chuckled. "Cream and I were there last night for our 6 month anniversary. By the way, have you seen Cream?"

Sonic nodded. "I think she's with Amy shopping for a dress." Tails smiles. "Okay. Now go find yourself a nice suit."

Another nod from Sonic, and a blue streak was seen rocketing to a men's clothing store.

-With Amy and Cream-

Making their way into a store at the mall, Amy and Cream begin looking for a dress. Amy heads right to the red dresses, but Cream shook her head. "No no, Amy. You need to look special for this date."

Amy frowned, a little confused. "What should I wear then?"

Cream disappeared and then came back to Amy with a black dress. "This."

Amy shook her head. "Noooo.... That dress makes me look like a slut."

The rabbit glares at the hedgehog female. "Try it on. You won't know what you'll look like until you try it."

Sighing, Amy walked into the changing room with the black dress. A few minutes pass, and Amy reappears. "Well?"

Cream's jaw hit the floor. The black dress showed off all of Amy's curves, even though it was a knee-length dress. The pink hedgehog looked at the rabbit, smiling. "I'm guessing Sonic will like it?"

The guys who happened to be staring at Amy frowned, and went about their way. Cream slowly nodded. "Uh huh...."

Amy went back into the changing room, and came back out wearing the purple sundress and matching sandals she got from her house. "Okay Cream, let's get the heels, and I'll be set."

Cream finally regained herself and they went to the shoes. Amy tried three different pairs of heels, then three more, and repeated this process several times. Cream waited patiently, and soon Amy was satisfied with a pair of black three-inch heels. Paying for the outfit, Amy and Cream left the store, eventually going their separate ways. Cream went to Tails' workshop, and Amy went to Sonic's house.

-With Sonic-

Bolting into a men's store, Sonic approaches a store associate. "Excuse me. I need to get a suit for a date tomorrow at a very nice restaurant."

The store associate smiles and leads Sonic to the suits. Sonic nods and smiles at the associate. "Thank you."

It's not long before Sonic finds a dark blue suit with a black tie and black socks. Sonic took it down and entered a changing room. He puts the suit on, and looks himself over in the mirror. Satisfied with the look, Sonic changes back into the blue shirt, shoes, and green shorts he got from his house, and went to the shoes. It takes a few minutes, but Sonic finds a nice pair of dress shoes. Paying for the outfit, Sonic runs back to his house.

-Sonic's House-

Amy Rose was waiting on the porch when Sonic arrived back at his house. "How long have you been waiting, Ames?"

She smiled. "About 5 seconds."

Sonic laughs, unlocks the door, and lets Amy enter first. She puts her dress on a hanger in Sonic's closet, and he did the same. Neither hedgehog knew what the other's outfit looked like. They would find out tomorrow night.

After their clothes are hung, Sonic turned to Amy. "Are you spending the night Amy?"

Amy's green eyes meet Sonic's emerald eyes. "Pleeeeeeease Sonikku?"

Sonic blushes. 'Dammit! The Puppy Face again.' His blush made Amy blush. "It's fine with me Ames."

The pink hedgehog hugged the blue hedgehog in one of her trademark Death Hugs. Amy fully expected Sonic to try and pry her off of him, but he didn't. Amy's heart fluttered when she felt Sonic's strong arms wrap around her, hugging her back.

Finally, Amy asked Sonic the question he figured was coming at some point. "So, where are you taking me tomorrow night?"

Sonic's deep voice sent chills down Amy's spine as he softly answered her question. "You'll find out tomorrow night Amy Rose."

She uses the Puppy Face again, and it almost works, but Sonic manages to resist it. "Won't work this time Amy. Sorry babe."

Amy pouted, but nodded. "Well then, what do we do now?"

Sonic thought for a minute. "What did you and Cream talk about while you were shopping?"

The pink hedgehog giggled. "Everything from you and Tails to other girl stuff.... That includes sex."

Sonic sweat dropped. "I didn't know Cream was doing that with Tails."

Amy shrugged. "I didn't either until she told me."

The blue hedgehog smiles. "I'm assuming you're going to ask me what I think about it."

Amy nodded. "Tell me please."

Sonic smiles, pulling out of the hug. "Let's not force it. I think it should happen when we both feel the moment is right."

Amy nods, which made Sonic smile. "Now, how about a movie to pass the time until we go to bed?"

The pink hedgehog nodded vigorously. "Do you have Phantom Of The Opera?"

He nods. "It's one of my favorite movies."

Getting the movie and putting it in the DVD player, Sonic hopped on his king size bed, and patted the blue sheets, telling Amy to join him. She's beside him in a heartbeat, and the hedgehog couple snuggles together, happily watching the movie. It was tough at first, because every few minutes Sonic would catch Amy staring at him, and she'd catch him staring at her.

They sang along as the songs in the movie played, then "All I Ask Of You" began playing. Sonic sat up, and Amy did too. The blue blur cuddled his pink lover to him as he sang the male parts of the song, hitting every note and word perfectly. Amy did the same, holding Sonic close as she sang the female parts of the song, also hitting every note and word perfectly.

Once the song was over, Amy Rose nuzzled Sonic's chest, and then his chin. "I promise I'll never leave you Sonikku."

Sonic smiled. "I promise I'll never leave you either Ames. I love you."

Amy blushed. "I love you too."

Then the hedgehog couple met lips, and then tongues. Once again, Sonic and Amy felt chills rocket through their bodies and fuzzy fireworks go off in their heads. When the kiss broke, the hedgehogs smiled, and they both spoke at the same time. "I will never get tired of kissing you."

They snuggled together again, and once the movie ended, Sonic turned off the TV and DVD player. He went downstairs and locked the door, then

rejoined Amy in bed.

The pink hedgehog snuggles close to her blue boyfriend. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you."

Sonic wraps his arms around Amy. "Goodnight Amy. I love you too."

They kiss and fall asleep, smiles on their faces.

Dinner with a special dessert

Sonic is the first to wake up. His emerald green eyes look over the luscious body of one Amy Rose, sleeping close to him. He's very happy that he and Amy are together. It felt so good to be able to tell Amy that he loved her. She felt the same way, and never hesitated to show it. The pink hedgehog got so upset whenever Sonic ran away. Now, with Dr Robotnik gone, the blue hedgehog has no need to run away anymore.

Amy's green eyes slowly open, and they turn to meet Sonic's eyes. "Good morning my love."

Sonic and Amy kiss and it soon turns into a heavy French kissing session. Yet again, the fuzzy fireworks make themselves known. The hedgehog couple didn't want the kiss to end, but it did, though it wasn't for a few minutes.

Sonic smiles. "Remember what today is Ames?"

She nods. "You still haven't told me where we're going."

The blue hedgehog winked. "You'll see baby."

Amy's green eyes took on a sparkle and she once again tried to use the Puppy Face on Sonic. "Pleeeeeeease Sonikku?"

Sonic laughed. "I'll tell you this. You'll need that dress."

Amy frowned. "I know that already. Tell me something else."

He smiles. "Fine. It's a very nice place."

Amy giggles. "You know you want to tell me something else."

Sonic shook his head, the tousled quills moving freely. "If I did I'd spoil it."

The pink hedgehog smiled, moving her own tousled quills from her eyes. "Alright Sonic. I'll get a shower, and then we can go for a walk in the park. Okay?"

Sonic nodded. "I'll take one after you, and meet you on the porch, okay?"

Amy nods, kisses Sonic on the nose, and goes across the hallway to the bathroom. After she left, Sonic bolted downstairs to the phone, and dialed a number.

Waiting a few seconds, Sonic spoke. "Yes, I'd like to rent one tonight...."

-30 minutes later, in the park-

The two hedgehogs are seen walking hand-in-hand through the middle of the Station Square park. A few people took some pictures, going "Awwww" and wondering if the hedgehog couple saw them. It wouldn't have mattered. Sonic and Amy were so in love they didn't even need to look where they were going. It was like their love was guiding them around.

They didn't even know that a TV reporter had walked up to them, TV crew and all. "I'm out here asking couples if they have any plans later for their partner."

Turning to Sonic and Amy, who still hadn't noticed him, the reporter asks his question. "So Sonic, do you and your partner have any plans later?"

Sonic turned and nearly jumped when he saw the reporter and TV crew. With a confused look on his face Sonic asks his own question. "When did you get here?"

The reporter sweat dropped, then spoke again. "Sorry to surprise you. I asked if you two had any plans for later today."

The blue hedgehog smiled. "I can't say yet, because it's something very special."

The reporter chuckles. "Not even a hint?"

Sonic shakes his head, giving Amy a wink. "Only one other person knows where I'm going, and they'd probably deny knowing anyway."

This made the TV crew chuckle. Sonic wasn't giving any hints, and didn't look like he planned to. The reporter smiled. "Can you tell me who that person is?"

Again, Sonic shook his head, picking some lint off of his gray shirt and black shorts. "No. If they want to come out and say who they are, then they can. I'm not saying anything."

With that Sonic and Amy resume walking. The reporter turned to the TV crew. "I think we found the perfect couple, though Sonic didn't give up any information."

Shrugging, the group moves on to another couple. Sonic smiled at his pink lover, who was wearing a light pink shirt with a red skirt and red sandals.

She had stopped wearing headbands since Sonic loved the fact her quills moved in the breeze. "You look really cute in that outfit Ames."

Her pink fur turned a shade of reddish pink as Amy blushed. "You look cute in anything Sonikku."

With his fur turning purple, Sonic kissed Amy, and they continued their walk. Then, Sonic got a text message from Tails. It reads: 'I have nothing to say about the news article regarding Robotnik's death, Sonic.'

Chuckling, Sonic shows the message to Amy who frowns until Sonic explains how Robotnik died. As they walked, Sonic and Amy only stared at each other. Eventually they make it back to Sonic's house, where they watched movies on TV until it was time to get ready for their date.

-7:30 PM, Sonic's porch-

The royal blue hedgehog waited on his porch, quills slicked back and wearing his blue suit and black dress shoes. He was waiting for Amy to finish changing into her dress. Neither hedgehog knew what the other was

wearing, so it would be a surprise. Sonic's anticipation was mounting. He was nervous, but so was Amy. She nearly fell down the stairs in Sonic's house from being so anxious.

Walking out onto the porch, Amy locked the door, and turned to Sonic. "What do you think stud?"

Sonic nearly fainted when he saw his pink girlfriend. "Whoa..."

Amy giggles. "Same to you, baby. Now, how are we getting to our destination?"

Sonic smiles. "Your question will be answered in 3... 2... 1..."

Sonic pointed to the black limo that was rolling up the driveway to Sonic's house. There was a shocked silence as Amy tried to form words and failed. The blue blur picked the speechless Amy Rose up bridal style, and climbed into the black limo.

As it drove along, Sonic looked at Amy, who finally found words.... Well, one word. "How...?"

Sonic laughed. "I wanted this to be a night to remember Ames."

She nuzzles Sonic, who holds her close. "I love you Sonic. So much."

Sonic nuzzles back. "I love you too Amy Rose. More than you know."

After half an hour the limo rolled up in front of their destination. Sonic stepped out and helped Amy out of the limo.

She then realized why Sonic kept quiet about the place. "Oh Sonic..."

The hedgehog couple was standing outside the new Olive Garden that Tails had recommended they go to for their date.

Sonic turned to Amy. "You see why I had to keep quiet about it now?"

All the pink hedgehog could do was nod. The sturdy blue hedgehog took Amy's hand and led her inside the 5 star restaurant. The hostess asked how many people would be eating. "Two" was Sonic's answer. Getting two menus, the hostess leads Sonic and Amy to a booth and placed the menus on the table. "Your waitress will be here in a few minutes."

Nodding, Sonic and Amy look over the menus. Soon, they have what they want to eat in mind, and they put the menus back on the table. Sonic then saw Amy staring at him. "Amy? You alright?"

She snapped back to reality. "Huh? Oh, Sonic! Why did you have to interrupt my fantasy?"

Sonic laughed. "What was your fantasy about?"

Amy blushed and lowered her voice so she didn't draw attention to them. "Well... It was about you and me.... Doing 'it'...."

Sonic smiles. "If you want, we can make that happen later tonight."

The pink hedgehog's green eyes lit up. "Really Sonikku?"

The blue hero nods. "If we're both feeling up to it, sure."

Then the waitress came to the table. "Hi guys, and welcome to Olive Garden. I'm Rachel, and I'll be your waitress tonight. Are you ready to order?"

Sonic nodded. "You first Ames."

Amy smiled. "I'll have the fettucine alfredo and a sweet tea please."

Rachel nodded and turned to Sonic. He looks over the menu and then looks at Rachel. "I'll have the same please."

Rachel nodded and went to get their orders taking the menus with her.

-1 hour later-

Sonic and Amy had eaten, paid for the meal, left a nice tip for Rachel, and were now riding home in the limo. Once it arrived at Sonic's house, the hedgehog couple got out. Sonic tipped the limo driver, and then he carried Amy inside. Closing and locking the door, Sonic and Amy kissed, their tongues soon meeting and wrestling with each other.

But something was different about this kiss. There was more passion, more lust in this kiss. When the kiss broke, Sonic and Amy looked into each other's eyes. Sonic saw the want in Amy's green eyes, and she saw the love in his emerald eyes.

Whispering into Sonic's ears, Amy made tingles race down Sonic's spine. "Your room in 5 minutes. Be there. I'll be waiting."

Walking slowly up the stairs Amy gave Sonic a naughty wink and went into Sonic's room, closing the door. Sonic sat down on his couch, and waited for the 5 minutes to pass. When it did Sonic bolted to his room and knocked on the door.

"Come in Sonic." Doing as the sultry voice asked, the blue hedgehog opened the door to his room. There he saw candles lit, giving the room a secluded glow. The lights were off and Sonic shut the door behind him.

His eyes then fell on Amy, who was lying on his bed with only part of the bed sheets covering her now naked body. "Amy?"

The pink hedgehog smiled, looking at Sonic with lustful green eyes. "I've been waiting for you Sonic. Off with your clothes and don't make me wait."

Sonic was undressed in a flash, standing naked in Amy's view. "Much better" was her reply. Amy rolled off the bed, and walked to her blue lover. Amy's large breasts bounced with each step and her hips swayed with a sensual motion. Sonic was instantly turned on, his 8 inch member rising with each step Amy took.

As soon as Amy got to him Sonic crushed his lips against hers, his hands finding a place on her hips. Amy's hands entwined around Sonic's neck, gently pulling on his long quills. Sonic purred and deepened the kiss, his

hands gently rubbing Amy's back. She purred as well, her tongue tracing around his fangs, making her body heat up.

Sonic felt chills down his spine when Amy traced his fangs with her soft tongue. He lifted Amy back onto the bed and began trailing kisses down her incredible body. The sakura hedgehog moaned, her hormones going into overdrive. Her blue stud reached the large breasts, and Amy nodded to Sonic's gaze, giving him permission to proceed.

Nodding, Sonic leaned his head toward the left nipple which was a dark pink color and soft to the touch. Amy moaned as she felt his soft tongue gently sweep her nipple and she pulled Sonic's head to her peach colored breast. "More Sonic."

He smiles and gently begins to suckle, making Amy shudder with the pleasure it gave her. "Ohhh, Sonic..."

Teasing the nipple erect Sonic pinched it with his teeth and held on as he flicked it with his tongue. Again Amy shudders, moaning softly. "Oh yes."

The pink hedgehog then started grinding her hips on Sonic's thigh, telling him that she wanted Sonic inside her and now. The blue speedster chuckled. "Not quite yet."

Moving his head to the right nipple Sonic teased that one erect and repeated the same teeth pinching while rubbing the left nipple with his thumb. Beads of sweat began forming on Amy's forehead as she pressed her womanhood harder against Sonic's thigh.

Sonic moves away from Amy's breasts now, taking his gloves off and throwing them to the floor. Amy removes her gloves, moaning with every kiss Sonic put on her body. Hearing his pink girlfriend moan his name was driving Sonic crazy inside.

Finally reaching Amy's flower Sonic looks at Amy. "May I?"

Amy nods and Sonic lowers his face to Amy's core. His soft tongue began tracing a path around her opening, making wave after wave of tingling

pleasure roar through Amy's writhing body. The blue hedgehog then took hold of Amy's dark pink nipples and gently pinched them as he continued to sweep her lower region.

Amy's moans nearly deafened Sonic as they turned into really loud yells. "YES! SONIC, MORE! PLEASE!"

Sonic smiled. He liked hearing Amy scream for more. Using his teeth again, Sonic took a gentle hold of Amy's clitoris and flicked it with his tongue while pinching and twisting Amy's nipples.

Now Amy was screaming at full volume. "OH YES! KEEP GOING! PLEASE SONIKKU!"

Now the blue hero lets go of Amy's clitoris, burying his face as far as it could go into Amy's flower. His tongue snakes out again, searching for the elusive G Spot. Keeping his hands on Amy's nipples, Sonic searches and soon does find Amy's G Spot. The cobalt hedgehog's tongue massages the area, making the sakura hedgehog start bucking wildly in pleasure. No one had ever touched Amy like this, and she loved it. What made it better for Amy was the fact that it was Sonic doing this to her.

Another minute passes, and Amy grabs Sonic's long quills, holding tight as her orgasm erupts, screaming Sonic's name. "SONIC!"

The orgasm lasts about 8 seconds as Amy holds Sonic in place. The blue hedgehog took the time to clean up Amy's juices and then sat up, smiling at his pink lover.

Her quills were stuck to her forehead, and sweat was making her fur and skin glisten. "S-Sonic.... No one has ever touched me like that.... It felt so wonderful.... Give me a minute though, and I'll return the favor."

Sonic nods and waits for Amy to recover. Once she does Amy pushes Sonic onto his back, and kisses him. "My turn now."

Amy crawled down to Sonic's 8 inch member, which seemed to be waiting for her. Licking her lips Amy's shining green eyes looked into Sonic's

emerald eyes as she took hold of Sonic's manhood and began sucking on the tip, her right hand moving up and down. The blue blur shudders, his hands curling around some of the bed sheets.

Amy removed her hand and began bobbing her head up and down along Sonic's shaft. Sonic began moaning Amy's name and it was music to her ears.

Her next move surprised him as Amy took all 8 inches of Sonic's member into her mouth. "Ohh Amy, that feels good."

Amy put her right hand back on Sonic's shaft and put her left hand on his testicles, creating a three-front action. The right hand stroked Sonic's massive manhood, her mouth and tongue teased the tip, and her left hand rubbed his fuzzy testicles.

Sonic went crazy, moaning Amy's name loudly as shivers of pleasure tore through his muscular body. "Ohh Amy! I-I'm going to cum!"

The pink hedgehog moaned in anticipation. In a few moments, Sonic erupted in orgasm, large jets of his seed rocketing into Amy's mouth. She took every drop and swallowed the entire load after showing Sonic her mouthful of his seed.

Sonic managed three words. "Damn that's hot."

Amy now lay on her back, spreading her legs and revealing her drenched womanhood. "I'm ready for you Sonikku."

Sonic hesitated. "Is this your first time Amy?"

The pink hedgehog nodded. "It is, but I trust you to be gentle Sonic."

The royal blue hedgehog crawled over to his bedside table and checked his condom supply. "I have one condom left."

Amy grins. "You're using it tonight. But since you asked me if it was my first time, I think it's only fair that you tell me if this is your first time."

Sonic frowns. "Sadly it's not. My first time was with Sally when we were together, but I'm not worried about that. Right now I'm focused on you."

Amy grabs the blue hedgehog and gives him a very passionate kiss, her green eyes burning brightly. "Get the condom and get going."

Doing as he was bidden Sonic puts the condom on his member and crawls back on the bed. "Just letting you know, this will hurt babe."

She smiles. "I trust you Sonic. Make me yours."

Leaning down Sonic kisses Amy as his shaft slides into her drenched core. When he reaches Amy's virgin wall Sonic breaks the kiss and looks at Amy with concern in his emerald green eyes. Amy nods, her jade green eyes shining. The hedgehogs kissed again as Sonic pushed through Amy's wall. She gasps as the pain ripped through her body and grips Sonic's fur tightly. The blue hedgehog gently kisses Amy's tears away.

After a minute, Amy bumps her hips against Sonic's hips, telling him he can continue. Sonic began gently thrusting, nibbling on Amy's neck, shoulders, and ears.

Amy shivers as the tingles raced through her body. 'Wow... Sonic's so good at this... Even in my dreams I didn't think making love to Sonic would feel this good.'

Sonic gently begins tweaking Amy's large nipples as he once again locks lips and tongues with his pink lover. Amy moans loudly, the pleasure rippling through her body though her moans were muffled since she and Sonic were kissing. Breaking the kiss, the blue hero trails his lips to Amy's large nipples, removing his hands from them.

For a second or two Sonic just watched as Amy's large breasts bounced with each thrust he made, her moans music to his ears. "Oh Sonic.... This feels incredible.... More!"

Sonic obliges, tweaking one nipple and gently licking the other. Amy began screaming at full volume. "YES SONIKKU! JUST LIKE THAT! OHH!"

The blue hedgehog began alternating nipples, loving the sounds Amy was making with his actions. "Yes! YES! OH! AH! MF! MORE SONIC!"

This time Sonic begins to suckle on his pink girlfriend's nipples, which sends Amy over the edge. Her orgasm erupts and it was strong. So strong in fact, as Amy screamed Sonic's name in ecstasy, her body shook as the climax roared through her.

Sonic got a surprise as he felt Amy's juices hit his thighs and drip slowly down his legs. "Damn. Ames, I think you just..."

She nods. "I felt it. Give me a minute.... Or two.... I need to catch my breath."

Sonic chuckles. "So do I. Thanks."

A few minutes pass and then Amy mounts Sonic, keeping his member inside her drenched core. "My turn Sonikku."

Sonic nodded, then Amy begins riding Sonic's thick organ, moaning his name. Sonic held on to Amy's hips to help support her. 'For a first-timer, Amy's doing really well. I didn't expect her to be this good.'

Amy got a new feeling being on top of her blue boyfriend. She felt dominant over him, and this feeling made her body heat up again. Turning around, Amy wrapped her arms around Sonic's strong legs and used only her hips to ride Sonic's manhood.

Positioned this way Sonic's thick shaft stimulated Amy's back wall which made her begin yelling and almost screaming in pleasure. "Ah! Oh! Mmhh! Oohhh! This feels so good!"

Hearing this made Sonic shudder with pleasure. "Go faster Ames."

She obliges immediately, her grip around Sonic's legs tightening. "Oh! Oh! Sonic! I love you! AH!"

Sonic nods. "I love you too Amy!"

Sonic gently began thrusting up when Amy went down, giving him deeper penetration, which Amy enjoyed. "Deeper Sonic!"

Now Sonic rolls Amy onto her back and really begins to pound her womanhood, slamming all 8 inches of his manhood as deep as he could.

Amy wrapped her arms around Sonic's back, being careful about his quills and screaming as wave after wave of ecstasy rocketed through her stunning body. "YES! AH! OH! SONIC! YES! MORE! PLEASE!" Panting heavily Sonic railed her at full speed, and Amy screamed as loud as she could with each thrust. Soon, Sonic felt himself getting close to orgasm. "A-Amy! I'm going to c-cum!"

The sakura hedgehog shouted back. "AH! ME TOO! UH!"

Several thrusts later Sonic and Amy orgasm at the same time. Sonic holds tightly to Amy as he unloads his seed, though it was again caught by the condom. He also screamed her name as his orgasm ripped through his body. "AMY!"

As she climaxed Amy dug her claws into Sonic's back, drawing blood and shaking as the powerful orgasm tore through her. The pink hedgehog also screamed Sonic's name again. "SONIC!"

A few minutes later Sonic has discarded the used condom and rejoined Amy in bed. Both hedgehogs were out of energy, and Sonic was surprised he could even walk or stand after making love to Amy as hard as he did. Climbing under the sheets covering his huge bed, Sonic soon has Amy in his arms. They were out of breath and knew they would be sore for a few days.

The candles would burn out overnight, and their lavender scent mixed with the hedgehogs' pheromones. This made a very calming mix, and helped Sonic and Amy relax after their furious love-making. The sakura hedgehog was still shaking from her last climax, but she was too exhausted to care.

Curling up to her blue stud Amy puts her head on Sonic's strong chest, tracing small circles on it with a delicate finger. "That.... Was.....

Amazing."

Sonic smiles. Amy's quills were matted with sweat and tangled in several places. Sonic wasn't much better, since his quills were still slicked back but also tangled.

Amy yawned and closed her shining jade green eyes. "I love you Sonikku."

Sonic kissed Amy, and closed his emerald green eyes. "I love you too Ames."

They were asleep in minutes, tired but smiling contently.

Sally's trial, part 1

A few months pass, and we find Sonic at his living room table reading a letter from the Station Square Justice Department. He had to perform jury duty on a case. Amy joined him after showering, wearing a pink sundress and matching sandals. She had been chosen as a juror on this case as well, but because Sonic was also on the jury, Amy had been replaced, since it was possible she could sway Sonic's decision.

Leaning her head on Sonic's shoulder, Amy sighed. "What case is it?"

Sonic frowned. "The one you were removed from. It's Sally's trial."

Amy frowned. "Why this one?"

He shrugged. "I'm not any happier about it than you are, but I swore an oath that being your boyfriend wouldn't factor into my decision. It'll take me a few minutes to get to the courthouse, and you're welcome to come along. Just don't jump Sally when she comes in."

Amy giggles. "Let's go then."

The hedgehogs walk out to the porch and Sonic locks the door. Picking Amy up bridal style, Sonic bolts to the courthouse.

-Station Square Courthouse-

Sonic and Amy arrive at the courthouse, and the blue blur puts his pink lover down. Amy picks a seat far from where Sally would be entering and Sonic occupied the head juror's chair. 8 other jurors were there and Sonic would be the tiebreaker in case of a tie vote.

Sally entered wearing the bright orange prison jumpsuit. She'd somehow escaped from prison and taken down Mina Mongoose, another of Sonic's close female friends. Sally was planning another attack on Amy Rose but was captured and returned to jail before she got the chance. There Sally stayed until her trial date.

It was now July the 8th. The cold air in the courtroom contrasted sharply with the hot outside air. The judge appeared, and the trial began. For two hours both sides called witnesses for and against Sally Acorn. Then out of nowhere, Amy was called to the stand, much to her horror and Sonic's shock.

Slowly taking the stand, the pink hedgehog looked to her blue lover, who gave her a smile. This restored her confidence.

The lawyer for the victims approached Amy. "Miss Amy Rose, I understand you were attacked by Sally Acorn. Is that correct?"

Amy nodded. "Yes, I was."

The lawyer continues. "What did she use?"

Amy shuddered, thinking back to that night nearly four months ago. "She- She used a pipe.... Dr Robotnik trapped Sonic, and held me while Sally beat me senseless with a pipe.... I barely recall Sonic struggling to get to me, but he couldn't.... I blacked out and awoke in the hospital. I was sore, cut, and bruised. Sonic was there, and told me about everything that happened before and after I blacked out."

Amy turns her green eyes to the squirrel princess. "Why Sally?"

Here Amy began crying which was nearly more than Sonic could bear. The judge frowned and dismissed Amy from the stand. The pink hedgehog returned to her seat, the tears eventually stopping their flow from her eyes. A few testimonies later it was Sally's turn to testify.

The victim lawyer came to the stand. "Sally Acorn, why did you attack Amy Rose and Mina Mongoose?"

Sally smiled. "It all goes back to what we have in common. Amy Rose, Mina, and I all dated Sonic at one point. I want him back, and I decided to take out my competition any way I could. I didn't know Amy Rose had survived, and after I killed Mina I decided to get another crack at Amy once I found out she had."

The victim lawyer frowned, as did Sally's lawyer. The victim lawyer scratched his head. "Has Sonic expressed any interest in taking you back?"

Sally glares at Sonic, her blue eyes flashing. "No, which is why I had to take Mina and Amy out. I'd have no competition, and he'd have no choice."

The judge dismisses Sally from the stand and turns to the jury. "You may now go deliberate. Sally's being charged with aggravated murder, so keep that in mind."

The 9 jurors enter their chambers, located well away from the courtroom. They all knew it wouldn't take very long, and after 10 minutes of deliberation the jurors voted. 4 guilty, 4 not guilty. Four found Sally guilty because Sally pretty much confessed on the stand. Four found her not guilty because Sally was once a princess and may still hold a lot of power.

Much to his disappointment Sonic held the swing vote. One juror turns to him. "Well Sonic, it seems you'll be sealing Sally's fate. What's your decision?"

The blue hero sighs. "Sally was once my girlfriend. I left her because her mental state came into question. She may be a former princess, but even they have to face the justice system at some point. Go on out there, and I'll announce the verdict when I reach a solid decision."

-Back in the courtroom-

8 of the 9 jurors return to the courtroom and the judge gives them a look. "Where's Sonic?"

A female juror replies. "He'll be in soon to announce the verdict."

A few moments go by and the blue hedgehog comes back into the courtroom, his face like stone. The judge smiles and turns to Sally. "Sally Acorn, do you have anything to say before sentence is passed?"

The former princess stands. "I want to say I'm sorry for all the trouble I caused. Also, Sonic.... I love you."

The silence was so quiet you could hear a pin drop. Sonic's emerald green eyes flashed. The judge turned to Sonic. "Has the jury reached a verdict?"

Sonic nods, his deep voice echoing to every part of the courtroom. "We have Your Honor."

The judge gave a nod. "How do you find?"

Sonic took a breath, and turned his anger-laden emerald eyes to Sally, seeming to pierce right through her blue eyes. "On the charge of aggravated murder, we find Sally Acorn guilty."

Everyone in the courtroom was shocked, most of all, Sally herself. The judge picked up his wooden gavel. "Sally Acorn, you are hereby sentenced to 5 years in a maximum security prison without possibility of parole or good behavior."

The judge bangs the wooden gavel once and Sally was led out of the courtroom, tears streaming down her face. The judge adjourned the court session and Sonic put his head in his hands.

Amy Rose dashed over to him, concern in her jade green eyes. "Sonikku? Are you okay?"

The blue hedgehog shook his head. "Not at all. That was probably the hardest decision I've ever made. I didn't want to send Sally to jail, but she broke the law and she has to suffer the consequences."

The pink hedgehog nodded. "Want to go to the beach? Maybe find a secluded place..." Here Amy lowers her voice. "... Maybe make sweet love like we always do at your house and my house."

Sonic grins. "Let's go then Ames."

Sonic picks Amy up bridal style and the hedgehog couple rockets out of the courtroom.

-At the beach, 5 minutes later-

After stopping to get their bathing suits and Sonic's body board the two hedgehogs arrive at the beach. Sonic bolts to an empty spot, puts Amy down, and runs into the cool water. It's a huge contrast to the hot sand, and the blue waves were curling nicely. There were plenty of surfers around, but none where Sonic and Amy were located.

Sonic walks into the water about 30 feet and finds himself neck deep in the water. A few more steps finds Sonic only knee deep in water thanks to a sandbar. The blue hero didn't know it, but his pink girlfriend was taking pictures of him. Could you blame her? Sonic was in the water without fear now. Perhaps the pictures were for their friends. Maybe it was the start of a really kinky idea. It could even be the fact Amy thought a wet Sonic was really hot. Either way, Amy would get a lot of pictures while they were there.

A wave came toward Sonic that was over his head and he grins. "Sweet."

Paddling the board Sonic caught the wave and rode it in to shore with Amy taking pictures the whole time.

Sonic rode 20 more waves and then walked to Amy, who was still on the sand. "Ames, the point of going to the beach is to go swimming."

The sakura hedgehog giggles. "Only if you carry me out there."

Sonic laughs. "Why? You have two legs that aren't broken."

Amy uses the Puppy Face on her blue stud. "Pleeeeeease?"

How could Sonic resist the pouting look with the sparkling jade green eyes? He'd done it before, but this was one of the many times he couldn't resist that look. 'Dammit. The Puppy Face again.'

Sonic smiled, dropped the body board, and picked Amy up bridal style. He wasted no time in getting the laughing Amy to the sandbar, putting her down, and pulling her to him.

Amy wraps her arms around Sonic's neck, laying her head on his shoulder and sighing contently. "I love you Sonic."

He smiles. "I love you too Amy Rose."

The hedgehogs lock eyes, then lips and eventually tongues as the world seemed to vanish around them. Even after four months as a couple Sonic and Amy still felt the fireworks when they kissed. Slowly the kiss broke, leaving Sonic and Amy wanting more.

Amy spoke first. "Sonic? I think I want you."

The blue speedster nodded. "Same here, but I don't want to run home. Let's find a secluded place."

Looking around while walking to shore Sonic and Amy find a rental cottage. "Perfect" they said together. Picking up their things, the two hedgehogs entered the cottage property from the beach side. Sonic checked to make sure no one was home. Lucky for them, the cottage was empty.

Returning to his pink lover Sonic delivered the good news. "No one here but us Ames."

Tossing a condom to Sonic Amy presses her soft lips against his lips. "Then let's get started Sonikku."

Closing the door to the bathroom they were located in Sonic and Amy let their feelings take over.

-1 hour later-

Sonic is seen carrying a giggling Amy Rose full speed down the beach back toward Amy's house. The pink hedgehog was experiencing what drove Sonic to run all the time, and she loved it. Upon arriving at Amy's house, the couple took a minute to straighten their quills, and then went inside.

As Amy showered, Sonic turned on the TV, but his attention was focused on what the future held with Amy Rose. 'You know, she's not so bad. I don't know why I didn't tell her how I felt sooner. Then again, I couldn't since

Robotnik would have used my feelings against both of us. With him gone and Sally in jail, I think a happy future with Amy might be possible. I'll give it a few months, and see how things go.'

Meanwhile, Amy was thinking about the future as well. 'I wonder what the future holds for me and Sonikku. So far, things have been pretty good. I can't complain. Sonic's proving to be an excellent boyfriend. I really hope he asks me to marry him one day! Oh that would be so incredible! Does he want to have children? I'll have to ask him that at some point.'

Amy finishes her shower and decides on a red tank top and a pink skirt with red sandals. Sonic was about to go shower when Amy stopped him. "Sonic? Can we talk?"

The blue hedgehog looked confused but nodded. "Sure Amy. What's on your mind?"

Brushing her soft quills Amy joins Sonic on the couch. "Well, our future is on my mind. I've been doing some thinking, and I want to know where you see our relationship going."

Sonic smiled. "Well at the moment I'm just fine with things as they are. If we both feel ready, and if we're still together in a few months, I might just ask you to marry me. I'd also like to have kids someday, but that's still a long time from now. That's where I see our relationship going."

Amy hugs Sonic tightly, nuzzling him under his chin. "You had better be around. Remember, you promised you'd never leave me."

Sonic nodded. "Yes, and you promised that as well. Still, things may not work out, which is why I want to wait a bit before deciding on a possible marriage. I want to make sure we're both ready for that step."

Amy nods. "I understand. I love you Sonic."

Sonic kisses her. "I love you too."

Cuddling together the hedgehog couple watched various movies playing on TV. Before they knew it, midnight had come. Sonic carried the sleeping Amy to her room and placed her in bed. He then turned off all the lights, the TV, and locked the door.

Meanwhile, Amy had woken up and changed into red pajamas with pink patterns on them. When Sonic came back to Amy's room he climbed under the sheets and snuggled with Amy. "Goodnight Ames. I love you."

Amy sighed happily. "I love you too Sonikku. So much."

They share a kiss and fall asleep, dreaming about the future.

Birthday with lots of romance

August rolls around and Amy Rose's birthday was coming soon. In fact, it was one week away. The pink hedgehog was busy writing the party invites. Sonic, Tails, Knuckles, Tikal, Rouge, Cream, and Shadow were being invited. Well, Sonic was pretty much invited anyway, since he was Amy's boyfriend.

As the pink hedgehog put the invites in the mailbox, she began thinking. 'I hope they all show up. Sonic mentioned that he had a special present for me... I wonder what it could be.' She went back inside to finish planning the party.

-1 week later-

The day of the party had arrived. Amy Rose was beyond excited and could barely contain herself as she bought the last of the groceries for her party.

Sonic happened to see Amy and ran over to her. "Hey babe. How are you?"

Amy kissed her blue lover. "Hey sexy. I'm just getting the last of the decorations and groceries for my party. You're still coming right?"

Sonic smiled. "Of course Ames. I said I had a special present for you, and I won't let you down."

The jade eyes of the sakura hedgehog lit up. "Oh Sonikku! Thank you so much! I can't wait until tonight."

The cobalt speedster smiled. "Me either. Let's get this stuff to your house."

Amy took a bag, Sonic took a bag, and the two hedgehogs walked to Amy's house hand-in-hand.

-8 PM, Party Time-

The time for Amy's 20th birthday had arrived. Amy was excited, and the doorbell rang a few times. It was Cream and Tails, both carrying wrapped boxes. "Happy birthday Amy!"

The pink hedgehog hugs them both. "Thanks guys. Come on in."

The fox-rabbit couple entered the decorated living room and put their presents on the table. They entered the kitchen, and helped themselves to the drinks and food in the kitchen. There was no alcohol at the party even though Sonic, Knuckles, Shadow, Tikal, and Rouge were over 21.

The next two to arrive were Knuckles and Tikal, carrying a large box. "Happy 20th Amy."

Amy helped Tikal with the box and then she heard Knuckles from the kitchen. "What? No alcohol?"

The pink hedgehog laughed. "Not at this party Knuckles."

Shadow and Rouge appear in the living room thanks to Chaos Control. Rouge gives Amy a small box. "Happy birthday hon."

Amy hugged Rouge and put the box on the table with the other presents. Looking around Amy realizes one guest is missing. "Where's Sonic?"

Just then, a knock was heard. Amy opened her door and there stood Sonic. "Happy birthday baby."

Amy hugged him tightly. "YAY! You're here Sonikku!"

The blue hero smiled, hugging her back. "I told you I'd be here."

He walked inside, and Amy closed the door while giving him a frown. "Sonic, where's my present?"

Sonic gave her a wink. "You'll get it I promise. Now enjoy your party."

Knuckles kicked on the music and the partiers started dancing. Tikal was with Knuckles, Cream with Tails, Rouge with Shadow, and Amy, of course,

with Sonic. After about an hour it was time for the presents to be opened. Sonic, Tails, Knuckles, and Shadow snuck out of the house while Cream, Tikal, and Rouge watched Amy open her presents.

The one from Tails was a GPS unit specially made for Sonic tracking. Tails had left a note that said it would take about 10 hours for the tracker to lock on to Sonic's DNA, but once it did Sonic could be found anywhere.

Cream's present was a bottle of lavender perfume with a special ingredient that made Sonic go crazy for her when she wore it. The pink hedgehog smiled at the rabbit. "How did you know, Cream?"

The rabbit smiles. "I know you better than anyone here except Sonic."

Rouge's present was an amethyst bracelet to match Amy's pink and purple sundresses. The present from Knuckles and Tikal was a karaoke system since Amy had such a wonderful singing voice. Shadow, being who he is, hadn't gotten a present for Amy.

That was all the presents.... Well, all the presents that were in the house. Amy looked around, her eyes filling with concern. "The guys are gone!"

Rouge smiles. "Go outside."

Amy bolts into her front yard, which was brightly lit with lights powered by the house. In her yard, Amy saw Sonic, Tails, Knuckles, and Shadow with musical instruments, also powered by the house. Sonic and Tails had guitars, Shadow on the bass, and Knuckles on the drums.

The royal blue hedgehog spoke to Amy. "I told you I had a special present Amy. Here it is."

Sonic counted off the beat. "1, 2, 3, 4."

Amy's confusion turned to excitement as the song played because she recognized it. Sonic was singing "I Knew I Loved You" by Savage Garden, and as he sang Amy's jade green eyes filled with tears of happiness. Her

blue stud hit every note, word, and guitar chord perfectly. Tails, Knuckles, and Shadow didn't mess up either.

Once the song ended Amy Rose waited until Sonic put his guitar down and then ran to him, hugging him tightly and laying several kisses on his face. "Thank you thank you thank you thank you! No one's ever sung to me before! Oh Sonikku!"

Here Amy buries her face in Sonic's blue shirt, tears of happiness falling from her eyes. Sonic held Amy, gently rubbing her back and mouthing "Thank you" to Knuckles, Tails, and Shadow. They give him a thumbs up and then join their partners on the porch, watching Sonic and Amy. The blue hedgehog lifted his pink lover's head and gently kissed her. Amy wasted no time in deepening the kiss, her tongue meeting Sonic's tongue. The other couples gave a group "Awwww" as they watched.

Tails spoke for everyone. "If ever there was a perfect love, Sonic and Amy are sharing it."

Everyone agreed as they watched the hedgehog couple make out. Then something unexpected happens. The other three couples begin to get infected by Sonic and Amy's love bug. Tails takes Cream's hand, and they head to the guest bedroom. Knuckles and Tikal go in, and occupy the bathroom. Shadow and Rouge take the couch, and eventually Sonic and Amy come in, still kissing.

Somehow the hedgehog couple makes it to Amy's room. It's a good thing Amy lived a decent distance from anyone, because for the next three hours, loud moans and screams could be heard from Amy's house. Around midnight, the last sounds stop, and the last light goes out. It was from Amy's room, and once the light went out all was silent for the remainder of the night.

-The morning after, 9 AM-

The scene in Amy's house looked like this: Rouge was on her back and lying on Shadow's chest. They hadn't left the couch all night. Knuckles and Tikal were sprawled in Amy's bathtub. Cream was lying on Tails' chest in

the guest bedroom. Sonic and Amy were cuddled together in Amy's bedroom. Everyone had smiles on their faces, including Shadow.

Rouge wakes up and gently wakes the black hedgehog. After getting dressed they walk outside and use Chaos Control to leave the party, taking the musical stuff and lights with them. Knuckles and Tikal are next to wake up, and they write a thank you note before leaving. After them were Tails and Cream. They walk into the kitchen, and Tails began making pancakes.

Cream sat at the table, chuckling. "That was some night Tails."

The fox nodded. "I don't know what happened to cause the sex-fest last night. One of those moments I guess."

The pancakes wake Sonic and Amy up and they soon enter the kitchen. Amy speaks first. "Thanks Tails."

Sonic yawns. "Sorry. Yeah, this is much appreciated little bro."

The twin tailed fox chuckled. "It's no problem at all."

Soon, Tails had made enough pancakes for all four of them. While Sonic wasn't looking, Amy snuck the Sonic tracker into Sonic's pancakes. The blue hero didn't have a clue as he ate, and he smiled at Amy, who smiled back. After half an hour, everyone had eaten.

Sonic wiped the crumbs from his face. "Thanks Tails. Those were some good pancakes."

Tails and Cream helped clean up from the party and breakfast, then left. Sonic turned to Amy. "Well, what do we do now?"

Amy's jade green eyes meet Sonic's emerald green eyes. "Well, we need to shower, and then I think we should go shopping for some fall clothing."

Sonic agrees, and in half an hour, the hedgehog couple is seen walking toward the mall.

-Several hours later-

Sonic and Amy walk to Amy's house. Amy checks the mail and finds a letter from Sally Acorn. She reads it, and begins shaking. "SONIC!"

The blue hedgehog is beside her in a flash. "What is it?"

The shaking pink hedgehog gives Sonic the letter. Frowning, Sonic reads the letter. It says: 'I may be in jail, but that won't stop me from getting to you again. You'll never know when my attack will happen. All the better for me.'

Sonic folds up the letter, and puts it in a pocket in his blue shorts. Turning to Amy, Sonic motioned to the house. "Get enough clothes for a week and make it quick. Knowing Sally something could happen at any time."

Amy bolts into her house, and comes back out in 5 minutes. Sonic nods. "Well done. For now, you'll be staying at my house."

Taking her hand, Sonic and Amy walk back to his house.

-Sonic's house-

The hedgehog couple walks into Sonic's house and Amy put her things in Sonic's room. Sonic flops on the couch, head in his hands.

Amy joins him after a few minutes, wrapping her arms around his left arm. "What's wrong Sonikku?"

The blue hedgehog sighed. "It's Sally. She doesn't know when to stop, and doesn't take 'no' for an answer. It usually takes something drastic for her to get the message."

Amy turns Sonic's head to her and kisses him. "I know you'll be there to protect me Sonic."

His emerald eyes meet Amy's green eyes. "Forever and always Amy Rose."

Amy smiled. "Come on, it's bedtime."

Sonic got up and locked the door. Amy wagged her tail at Sonic, who wagged his tail back. Amy winked. "Come and get me Sonikku."

She bolted up the stairs with Sonic catching her halfway up the 10 stair staircase. Carrying Amy into his room, Sonic lays Amy on his bed, and tickles her, making tears fall from Amy's eyes. "HAHA! Stop-Hehe-Stop Sonic! Hahahahaha! P-Please! Haha!"

Sonic stops, then Amy begins tickling Sonic. "My turn!"

Sonic hits the bed, laughing and turning red in the face. "Haha! Okay-hahaha-Alright! Hehe-Amy! Hahahaha! Okay! I surrender!"

Amy relents, changes into her bedclothes, and climbs under the bed sheets. Sonic does the same. He joins her after turning off the lights. Wrapping Amy protectively in his arms, Sonic and Amy kiss. After their "I love you" to each other Sonic and Amy fall into a deep sleep.

Sally pushes Sonic to the limit

Note: About midway through the chapter, they spoof part of Queen's "Bohemian Rhapsody". Pay close attention and listen to the song on YouTube if you must.

Three days pass, and Sonic let Amy go to her house to get a jacket. Sonic was also looking over his probation notice from the Station Square Justice Department. He had been put on probation for one year because of his actions against Robotnik after the date with Amy at Twinkle Park.

However, Sonic was bothered by something else. Something felt wrong. Sonic had a bad feeling and tore out of his house toward Amy's house.

-Amy's house-

The sakura hedgehog walks out of her house with the jacket she needed. It was the jean jacket she was wearing the night Sally beat her with the pipe.

After getting off the porch Amy heard a loud voice, making her freeze in her tracks. It was Sally's voice. "I HAVE YOU AT LAST AMY ROSE!"

Amy tried to run, but then her house exploded. The force of the explosion knocked her unconscious and lifted her into the air.

Meanwhile, Sonic saw the huge mushroom cloud, and saw Amy flying through the air. "AMY!"

Sonic sped up to full speed, powering through the shockwave from the explosion. It slowed him down a little, but soon Sonic regained his full running speed. Covering the distance in the blink of an eye Sonic caught Amy just before she hit the ground.

Getting out his cell phone Sonic called 911. "Yes, I need an ambulance and firemen at Amy Rose's house. Please hurry."

Sonic hung up the phone and began CPR, tears coming to his eyes. "Come on Ames. Please start breathing."

It took a couple minutes, but Amy did begin breathing again, though it was slow and ragged. "Thank God."

Soon the ambulance and firemen arrive with a police officer behind them. The firemen get to work trying to put the fire out. The paramedics get Amy stabilized and take her to the hospital.

The policeman approaches Sonic. "Mr. Hedgehog I'm Commander Parkinson with the Station Square Police Department. Can you tell me what happened here?"

The blue hedgehog nodded. "Amy was just coming over to get a jacket and as I was running over I see Amy's house explode. She went flying through the air and I managed to catch her before she hit the ground. I performed CPR and Amy resumed breathing, but it was slow and ragged."

Commander Parkinson nodded. "Any idea who may have done it?"

Sonic took out the letter from Sally. He had been reading over it before running to Amy's house. "This letter was addressed to Amy Rose from Sally Acorn."

Commander Parkinson reads the letter and calls the jail Sally was located in. "Yes, this is Commander Parkinson with the Station Square Police. Get Sally Acorn ready for a visitor."

Giving the letter back to Sonic the officer climbed into his squad car. "Come on Sonic. Someone's expecting you."

Sonic climbs in and they drove to the maximum security prison.

-At the jail, 20 minutes later-

Commander Parkinson and Sonic enter the prison. They get their security passes and Sonic looks at Commander Parkinson. "You're going to need guards."

As they walked to where Sally was waiting, three prison guards join the policeman and Sonic.

When they reach Sally's waiting area, the squirrel's blue eyes light up. "Sonic! You came to see me!"

As soon as the door opens Sonic charges at Sally, eyes ablaze. It takes the guard in the room and the other three guards plus Commander Parkinson to stop Sonic from getting to the ground squirrel. Even with five people holding onto him, Sonic still manages to get within three feet of Sally Acorn.

Sonic was shaking with rage, and it was everything the four guards and Commander Parkinson could do to hold on to the enraged blue hedgehog. Sonic gave vent to his feelings. "YOU BITCH! WHAT THE HELL IS WRONG WITH YOU! THIS IS WHY I LEFT YOU IN THE FIRST PLACE!"

Sally's eyes filled with tears. "But Sonic, all I want is to be with you again."

Sonic lurched against his five restrainers. "WHAT THE FUCK DO YOU NOT UNDERSTAND ABOUT ME SAYING I DON'T WANT TO BE WITH YOU ANYMORE? When I left you I swore I'd never be with you again. That's never going to change, especially since you tried to kill Amy again!"

Now Sally got mad. "So what? That whore is nowhere near my level, and YOU KNOW IT!"

Sonic lurched again. "WRONG! You're just mad and jealous that she has me. When we were together, she was jealous of us because you had me. Now, she's got me, and you can't stand it. You can't take 'no' for an answer, and now I'm going to make sure you rot in jail for the rest of your miserable life!"

Sally began crying now. She spoke to Sonic between sobs. "Y-You really think I'm miserable Sonic?"

Sonic had finally calmed down enough for the guards to let go of him, but they kept their guard up. "I didn't before, but after two attempts on Amy's life my mind has been changed. See you in court Sally."

Sonic gave Sally the bird before leaving the cell followed by Commander Parkinson. Sally was shocked at Sonic's departing action but didn't blame him. She finally saw why he was mad at her. She was led back to her regular cell while Sonic and Commander Parkinson checked out of the jail.

When they left, Sonic sighed. "I'm really sorry about my behavior, Commander. It's not like me at all."

The policeman nodded. "It's okay Sonic. I understand that Sally really upset you. Right now, go see Amy. I'll inform the police department of this development."

Sonic shook Commander Parkinson's hand and bolted to the hospital while Parkinson drove to the police precinct.

-Station Square Hospital-

Sonic arrives at the hospital and walks to the desk. "Where's Amy Rose?"

The secretary tapped a few keys on her keyboard. "She's in Room 409."

Sonic nods, and walks to the room. The sign outside the door said "Amy Rose".

Gently knocking on the door, the blue hedgehog walked into Amy's room. "Amy?"

He finds his pink lover hooked up to various machines again, but she was awake, kind of. Her eyes were closed, but she heard the door open and smiled as she recognized the voice. "Sonic... What took you so long?"

Sonic got a chair, and sat by Amy's bedside. "Sorry it took that long. I went to see Sally."

Amy took Sonic's hand, entwining her fingers in his. Her green sundress with the red bloodstains brought tears to Sonic's eyes. "I'm sorry I didn't save you from the explosion."

Amy gave his hand a gentle squeeze. "I'll be fine Sonic. How did Sally's visit go?"

The cobalt hedgehog wiped a few tears on his blue shirt, some of the tears escaping to the dark green shorts he wore. "I-I yelled at her, Amy. I swore I'd make sure she rotted in jail for the rest of her life."

Amy giggled a little. "I'd kiss you right now, but the doctor has asked me to move as little as possible. They're going to keep me overnight to make sure I'm recovering well."

Sonic turned the TV up, giving Amy a gentle kiss on the cheek. There was a news article on about Amy's house.

Sonic leaned the bed up. "You need to see this Ames."

The sakura hedgehog opened her jade green eyes and gasped when she saw what was her house. The anchorwoman was describing the details as she knew them. "From what we've gathered, this pile of ashes is what once was the house of Amy Rose. The firemen here have determined that a bomb was the source of the house's destruction. There is no trace of Amy Rose, though it's believed she survived and is recovering at the Station Square Hospital. We'll share the details as they come along."

Amy looked at Sonic, who leaned over and held her as she cried. "Oh Sonic.... E-Everything's gone...." She broke off and just let her tears flow, her body heaving with her sobs.

Sonic gently rubbed her back. "Shh... Your house may be gone, but at least you're alive, and I'm still here with you."

Amy nodded, still crying. "T-Thank you S-Sonikku. I-I love you so much."

Sonic kissed Amy's cheek gently. "You're welcome, and I love you too. Try to calm down though. You have my house, the clothes you bought earlier this week, and another chance to see Sally Acorn humiliated in court. Not all is lost."

A doctor comes in at this point. "Glad to see you're here Sonic. Amy was asking for you for quite some time."

Sonic frowns. "If it's alright I'd like to stay with Amy overnight."

The doctor smiles. "Of course. There will be times when the nurses will need to check her vitals and all that, so just keep that in mind okay?"

Sonic nodded and the doctor left. Sonic turned off the TV and reclined the bed so that Amy was lying down again. Climbing into the hospital bed Sonic cuddled Amy to him and she sighed with happiness.

Throughout the day nurses came in at four hour intervals to check on the rose-pink hedgehog. Each time Amy was doing fine. Eventually Sonic turned off the lights and the hedgehog couple fell asleep.

The night passes peacefully. The next morning the doctor came in and gave Amy's charts one last looking over. "Alright, you're free to leave. Just take things easy for the next week, okay?"

Amy thanked the doctor, Sonic signed them out of the hospital, and he carries Amy to his house at full speed.

-Sonic's house-

Sonic entered his house carrying a sleeping Amy Rose in his arms. Kicking the door shut Sonic carries Amy upstairs and tucks her into his bed. Closing the door Sonic walks back downstairs and turns on the TV.

The news was on and the anchorman was updating everyone on Amy's status. "Earlier today we received word that Amy Rose checked out of Station Square Hospital early this morning. According to our sources, Sally

Acorn was once again behind the attack on Amy Rose that left her house destroyed."

The anchorman is given a sheet of paper. "This just in. Sally Acorn's trial date is set for November 23rd. We will keep you updated as we receive details."

Sonic's cell phone goes off. Tails has sent him a text message. It reads: 'Sonic, help me! The media's outside my house. I'm trying to get to Cream, since we have a date today, but they won't let me go!'

Sonic grins, getting an idea. He texts back: 'They will not let you go?'

Tails catches on quickly. His next message: 'They will not let me go!'

Sonic laughs, texting: 'Never, never, never let you goooooo!'

Tails replies: 'No! No! No! No! No! No! No!'

Sonic is in too deep now, and texts back: 'Mama mia! Mama mia! Mama mia let you go!'

Tails sends back: 'The media is trying to get a scoop from me, from me, from MEEEEEEEEEEEEEE!'

Sonic hits the floor and after a few minutes of belly-busting laughter he replies: 'Send them to my house. I'll take care of them.'

Tails' reply is this: 'Thanks older brother!'

Sonic smiles and texts back: 'You're welcome little brother.'

In a few minutes, Sonic hears a knock on his door. The blue hero opens the door and finds a wall of reporters. 'Damn... Tails didn't say he had this much media attention.'

Shutting the door Sonic calms them down. "One at a time, please."

One reporter asks: "Mr. Hedgehog, have you seen Amy Rose today?"

Sonic nodded. "Yes, she's asleep in my room."

Another reporter: "How is she feeling?"

Sonic chuckles. "She's doing better. She spent the night at the hospital after Sally Acorn tried to kill her again."

A female now: "Mr. Hedgehog, are the rumors that you and Miss Rose are a couple true?"

Here, Sonic hesitates. 'If I say no, eventually Amy will hear about it, and probably kill me. If I say yes, then the media will never leave us alone. To be honest, I don't want to face a broken-hearted Amy. I love her too much.'

The woman asks again. "Mr. Hedgehog?"

Sonic takes a breath. "Yes, we're a couple. Have been for five months now."

A stunned silence, then another woman asks: "Are there any plans for marriage?"

Sonic growls. "Let's not get carried away."

Just then Amy walks outside and presses up against Sonic. "Sonikku? Why is the media here?"

Before Sonic can answer camera flashes erupt, taking several pictures of the hedgehog couple. After they stop Sonic answers Amy's question. "Ames, Tails couldn't leave his place to get Cream for their date so I had him send the media over here."

Amy's jade green eyes meet Sonic's emerald green eyes. "Did you tell them we were a couple?"

The blue blur puts his arms around Amy's waist, making the pink hedgehog sigh with happiness. "I sure did, and once you walked out here the camera flashes erupted."

Amy giggles. "Good. It's about time they knew anyway."

Sonic nodded. "Yes, but you do know that we'll be facing increased media attention, right?"

Amy frowned, then shrugged, standing on her tiptoes and kissing Sonic, making more camera flashes go off. "Oh well."

Sonic turned to the wall of reporters. "Any more questions?"

One more reporter asks: "Are you going to Sally Acorn's trial?"

The two hedgehogs looked at each other and then Sonic answered. "We'll both be there. Now go home."

The hedgehog couple walks back into the house as the media left to report the story. Amy smiled at Sonic. "What do we do now?"

He grins. "Sleep the rest of the day off and start planning our 6 month anniversary celebration."

Amy giggled as Sonic picked her up bridal style and carried her back to bed.

After locking the front door, Sonic climbed into the sheets and cuddling Amy to him. They slept peacefully for the rest of the day, and the night passed uneventfully. Sonic and Amy woke up the next day and began planning their 6 month anniversary celebration.

Sally's trial, part 2

November 23rd rolls around and it's about 5 PM. It's the date of Sally Acorn's second trial. Since she was found guilty of aggravated murder in her last trial, she was safe from that accusation. However, this was for attempted murder, and Sally was free game.

The trial was about a week after Sonic and Amy's 7 month anniversary. The two hedgehogs were seen rocketing to the Station Square Courthouse once again, both of them hoping that Sally Acorn would finally be put away for good. The same judge would be there as well, so things would be interesting. Also, this trial would be televised to the residents of Station Square without commercial interruption so they could watch as well.

Once everyone had arrived, the trial began. It was warm in the courtroom, contrasting with the cool November air. It was a sunny day outside, but the mood was much more serious in the courtroom. Once again a lawyer for the victims and Sally Acorn's lawyer presented evidence and testimonies for both sides.

For a second time, Amy Rose was called to the stand. The victim lawyer approached her again. "Miss Rose, how many times has Sally attacked you?"

Amy frowned. "Twice now."

The lawyer nodded. "Can you tell us what happened the second time around?"

Amy shuddered. "I had gone to my house to get a jacket for the fall season."

She points to the jean jacket on the evidence table. "That one there. I think it's cursed. Every time I wear it, something Sally related happens to me. The second time though, I heard a loud voice. It was Sally's voice, and it said 'I have you at last Amy Rose!' Then my house explodes, and when I wake up I'm in the hospital again."

The victim lawyer went back to his seat and Sally's lawyer approaches Amy. "Miss Rose, how do you know it was Sally's voice you heard?"

The pink hedgehog frowns. "Her voice is unmistakable, and no one hates me like Sally does."

Sally's lawyer continued. "Are you sure my client planted that bomb at your house?"

Amy shrugged. "I'm fairly positive, since I received a letter from Sally. The letter said: 'I may be in jail, but that doesn't mean I can't still get you. You'll never know when my attack will happen. All the better for me.' That would pretty much point to Sally."

Sally's lawyer went back to his seat and Amy went back to hers, getting a comforting hug from Sonic. Sonic is called to the stand next, and the victim lawyer walked to him. "Mr. Hedgehog, what happened on the day in question?"

Sonic's deep voice answered, a trace of anger in it. "As Amy said, she had gone to her house to get the jean jacket. I had her stay at my house because of the letter Sally sent her. Something told me Amy was in trouble, so I ran to her house. From half a mile away, I saw a mushroom cloud where Amy's house once stood. I also saw Amy flying through the air, and I barely caught her before she hit the ground. She wasn't breathing, so I performed CPR until the firemen, paramedics, and Commander Parkinson showed up. It took about three minutes for them to show, and also for Amy to start breathing again. Anyway, that's what happened on that day."

The judge dismissed Sonic and Commander Parkinson was next on the stand. He confirmed Sonic's story and went into detail about the bomb planted at Amy's house. "It was a very advanced bomb, and whether or not Miss Rose was at her house, the bomb would have gone off. There was no way to defuse it."

The victim lawyer nodded. "Did you find anything else there?"

Commander Parkinson nodded. "We recovered several orange hairs from the scene, and they all had white tips."

The shock roared through those watching. Sonic and Amy felt their jaws drop. Commander Parkinson was dismissed, and the next person was called.

The lawyer for Sally Acorn called them to the stand. "Defense calls Tails Prower to the stand."

Cream, who was crying on Tails' shoulder, felt him silently slip away, and walk to the stand. Sally's lawyer nodded. "Mr. Prower, where were you on the day Amy's house was destroyed?"

The orange fox nodded his head. "I was in my workshop when I heard the news bulletin on the radio."

Sally's lawyer continued. "Commander Parkinson says it was a very advanced bomb. You are well-known for advanced weaponry. DNA was done on the hairs found at the scene, and it was found to be your DNA, Tails. Can you explain why you betrayed Miss Rose like this?"

Tears began to fall down Tails' face, even though he wasn't crying. "I don't know how they found any of my hairs if the bomb was destroyed."

The lawyer frowned. "The core survived."

More tears began falling as Tails replied. "When Sally broke out of prison, she sought me out and asked me to build a bomb that would be destroyed, except for the core. The core had a shell that would also survive the explosion. I refused, and that's when Sally put a gun to my head and forced me to build the bomb. The bomb needed some of my hair for it to function properly, and I can only assume that's how the hairs survived the explosion. Sally forced me to set the bomb to go off in three weeks' time. She also made sure I hadn't made a way to defuse the bomb. Once it was done, Sally again put the gun to my head and forced me to plant the bomb behind Amy's house. Sally didn't seem to care if Amy was at home when the bomb went off, but preferred if she was. After she left, I called the police and told them Sally had escaped but said nothing about the bomb."

Sally's lawyer frowned. "Why didn't you say anything? Afraid you'd get in trouble for being an accomplice to attempted murder?"

Tails growled. "I was ashamed of what I did jackass. I still am."

Tails looked at Sonic and Amy, who shook their heads. "I can only hope Sonic and Amy can forgive me."

Sonic frowned. "We'll talk about that later Miles."

The twin-tailed fox hung his head, walked off the stand, and out the door. Cream could hear him sobbing as he walked by and she chased after him.

The judge turned to the victim lawyer. "I hope you didn't have any questions."

The victim lawyer shook his head. "None at all."

The judge turns to the jury. "You may now go deliberate."

The 9 jurors take their leave. Sally didn't testify since she was relying on her lawyer to make Tails look like he did this on his own. But then the fox turned her strategy back on her and she was worried that her lawyer had once again failed.

Sonic and Amy find Tails and Cream on one of the benches outside the courtroom. Cream was holding Tails who was sobbing uncontrollably.

Sonic sits on the bench beside Tails and puts a hand on his shoulder. "Tails, stop crying. I'm not mad, but I'm disappointed you didn't fight back."

Tails shook his head. "You know I don't hit females, even if that female is a demented squirrel princess. That, and you called me Miles. It hurt me to hear you say that, Sonic."

Sonic sighed. "I'm sorry I called you Miles. I let my disappointment get the better of me. As for fighting back, I don't hit females either, but I still would have tried to get the gun from her."

The orange fox nodded, wiping his eyes. "I'm sorry Amy and Sonic. I didn't want to, but I had no choice."

Amy gives Tails a hug. "We forgive you, Tails. Now come on, the jury should be back soon with Sally's fate."

Cream took Tails' hand once he stood, and gave him a sweet kiss. Sonic and Amy joined hands and the four walked back into the courtroom. The jury came in a few minutes later.

The judge turned to them. "Before you read Sally's verdict, have you anything to say to Mr. Prower?"

The head juror, a female, nodded. "He is acquitted of whatever charges he's facing, in this case, being an accomplice to an attempted murder."

Tails felt Cream hug him tightly, and he hugged back. The judge nodded. "Have you reached a verdict?"

The woman nods. "We find Sally Acorn guilty on the charge of attempted murder."

Sally's blue eyes filled with tears. Her plan had once again backfired. Picking up his wooden gavel, the judge turned to the squirrel. "Sally Acorn, you were given a light sentence last time. I was hoping five years would have taught you to straighten out your life, but this second conviction will get you no such leniency from me. You are hereby sentenced to spend the rest of your life in prison. No good behavior and no parole. Get out."

Banging the wooden gavel once, court was adjourned and Sally was taken to another maximum security prison with a cell specially made for her. Sonic, Amy, Tails, and Cream hugged and went their separate ways. Sonic took Amy's hand, and the hedgehog couple walked back to Sonic's house as Tails and Cream went to Cream's house.

Once they arrived, Sonic and Amy changed from their formal wear into bedclothes, and relaxed on the couch. *Moulin Rouge!* was playing on the TV, and Sonic sang to Amy again. The pink hedgehog blushed as her blue

stud hit each note of "Your Song" and "Come What May" perfectly. Amy joined in on "Come What May", making Sonic smile, and seeing him smile made her melt inside.

Once the movie was over Sonic and Amy went to bed. Sonic locked the front door, then climbed into bed. Amy turned off the lights, then snuggled with Sonic under the bed sheets. The two hedgehogs talked about the trial and how Sally was never going to try and attack them again. Sonic nodded, saying it was about time someone put a stop to Sally's craziness. Soon, the hedgehog couple was asleep, snuggled close together, and smiles on their faces.

Sonic's big decision

It was now December. Six inches of snow had fallen on the ground, and more was falling. We find the hedgehog couple of Sonic and Amy walking down the street, eyes locked, and hands entwined. Sonic's 23rd birthday was coming up soon. Amy was passing the time writing the party invites.

Today, Amy was wearing a red coat with matching gloves. She was also wearing pink sweatpants and matching boots with a pink toboggan. Amy had also decided to let her quills grow out, and even in their current wavy style, they reached a little past her shoulders.

Sonic was wearing a blue toboggan and matching boots with green sweatpants and matching jacket. He had no gloves on since he was warm enough with what he had on. Eventually, the hedgehogs arrived at Sonic's house, where Sonic told Amy he had to go get her Christmas present.

Amy giggled. "What are you getting me, my love?"

Sonic shook his head. "I'd spoil it if I even gave you a hint."

The pink hedgehog pressed her luscious body against Sonic's ripped frame. "Don't fight it, Sonikku."

The cobalt speedster shook his head again. "As much as I want to, it's too special to tell you."

Now, Amy uses the Puppy Face. "Pleeeeeease?"

The Puppy Face made Sonic melt, but he resisted the temptation to tell his girlfriend the gift he had in mind. "You'll see why I can't tell you what it is."

Amy gave the "humph" sound, turning her head away from Sonic. "Fine. Then your birthday present will be a surprise as well."

Sonic chuckled. "Good. I rather like your surprises."

Amy turned back to Sonic, and kissed him softly. "Then you'll love what I have in mind."

Now, Sonic's deep voice tickled Amy's ears, and she felt his strong arms wrap around her. "You know you want to tell me."

That voice sent chills down Amy's spine and she felt her body heat up. "Mmmmm....." she purred, much to Sonic's delight. "Well?"

Amy nodded, panting a little. "I'm going to-" Amy snapped back to reality and turned to her blue lover. "Oh no you don't, mister. Not until your birthday."

Sonic chuckled. "Fine. But you do know how close you came, right?"

The sakura hedgehog nodded. "Yes, but it won't work again. Now, go do your errands. I'll finish the party invites."

Sonic kisses Amy and runs off to do his errands. Well, he would be running, if he could get traction. However, the snow on the ground kept him from doing so. Basically, Sonic was going nowhere fast.

Suddenly, Sonic fell to the ground, with Amy trying not to laugh. "You okay, Sonic?"

He nodded, blushing. "Don't rub it in, please Ames?"

She smiled. "I won't. Now take your time. The invites will take a little while." Amy helped Sonic up, and kissed him again. After Sonic left, Amy went into his house to finish the invites.

-25 minutes later-

Sonic entered the Lammers Diamond Store, and was met by the owner, Mark. "Well, Mr. Hedgehog. I wasn't expecting to see you in here. To what do I owe the pleasure of this visit?"

The royal blue hedgehog rubbed the back of his head. "I need a ring for an engagement."

Mark smiled. "Is it for a present, or are you proposing?"

Sonic sweat dropped, hesitating a little. "Um... Proposing."

Mark nodded, and led Sonic to the diamond display case. The blue blur looked over the selection, and Mark described each ring Sonic asked about. After about 20 minutes, Sonic's emerald eyes locked on to a ring, and his heart told him it was the right ring. Mark described the ring as Sonic looked at it.

The ring was a 14 karat white gold band with five diamonds on it. The two outermost diamonds were the smallest, at $\frac{1}{4}$ karat each. The next two diamonds were $\frac{1}{2}$ karat each. The largest diamond, in the center, was 1 karat. In total, 2.5 karats of diamonds on a 14 karat white gold ring.

Mark smiled at Sonic's reaction to the ring. "I think that whoever you're getting it for is going to love it Sonic."

He nodded. "I hope so, because that's the one I'm getting."

Mark nodded, and took the ring out. Sonic got half off for a pretty picture discount, which was good, because that ring still cost him over \$1500. Paying for the ring, Sonic walked back home, hiding the ring in his pants so Amy didn't get suspicious.

-Sonic's house, Amy's POV-

I'm sitting on Sonic's couch writing the invites to the party guests. So far I have Tails, Shadow, Cream, and Rouge. I'm working on the ones for Knuckles and Tikal when Sonic walks in the door. He's empty-handed, but something tells me he's got something planned again.

Putting down the pen I walk over to him and kiss the velvety lips, wrapping my arms around his strong shoulders. "I missed you Sonikku."

My eyes close as I feel his muscular arms wrap around my lower back. I press against him, feeling his strong chest and abs through his light blue

shirt. He didn't even know I had unzipped his jacket. Even if he did, he probably wouldn't have cared.

His deep voice makes my heart flutter in my chest. "I missed you too babe. How are the invites coming along?"

I smile, my shining jade eyes meeting his bright emerald eyes. "I'm almost done. I just have Knuckles and Tikal left."

He nods, making me drool over his quills moving so freely. Sonic notices and smiles, making me melt inside. His tail starts wagging, which makes my tail start wagging. sigh 'What a stud I'm dating.' I think to myself. 'Those eyes, that smile, the quills, his abs... I love everything about him.' We kiss and I go back to writing the invites.

-Sonic's POV-

After I enter my house Amy walks over to me and unzips my jacket, wrapping her arms around my shoulders. We kiss, then she presses against me, which I love. After a short discussion about the invites, Amy kisses me again, and goes back to the invites.

I go to my room and hide the ring in my dresser, then send a text message to Tails. 'I think I'm finally ready to ask Amy to marry me. After 8 months, I think we're both ready for being engaged.'

30 seconds goes by, then I get a reply. 'Good luck Sonic.'

I smile, and text back. 'Tell Cream, Rouge, Shadow, Knuckles, and Tikal, but swear them to secrecy, okay?'

Tails replies: 'You got it. See you soon, Sonic.'

I chuckle, and reply: 'Later Tails.'

Walking back downstairs, I find Amy watching TV. I join her on the couch, and cuddle her in my arms.

-Normal POV-

Amy smiles. "Well, I got the invites done, Sonic."

The emerald eyes of the cobalt hedgehog meet the jade green eyes of the rose-pink hedgehog. "Glad to hear it."

Their lips meet in a kiss, then Amy smiles at Sonic. "Let's finish planning the party Sonikku."

Sonic agrees, and the hedgehog couple goes back to planning the party, still two weeks away.

-Party day-

The day of the party had arrived, December 25th. It was the Christmas party, but also Sonic's birthday party. His birthday was the next day, but Amy had decided to get both knocked out in one shot. It was 7 PM, and Sonic's house was alive with partygoers. Snow was falling softly to the ground, making Sonic and Amy happy that they had hot chocolate to drink.

Everyone who was invited to the party was there: Rouge, Shadow, Tails, Cream, Knuckles, and Tikal. There was a lot of bump and grind dancing, but they were all adults, so it wasn't a big deal.

Around 8 PM, it was present time. Sonic got some cologne from Amy that made her wilder for him. From Tails Sonic got some black speed shoes for the dates he and Amy went on. Rouge gave Sonic a blue Chaos Emerald and Shadow's half of the gift was to teach Sonic how to use Chaos Control.

Sonic was confused. "I thought I already had the blue Chaos Emerald."

Shadow laughed. "You don't, faker. The blue emerald you have is a fake. The one Rouge just gave you is the real one. I'll start teaching you to use Chaos Control without being in your super form a few days from now."

Sonic nodded and pocketed the emerald. Cream made him a flower bracelet with honeysuckle flowers on it.

Sonic smiles. "Thank you, Cream. It's beautiful."

Soon all the presents had been given out, except the one from Sonic to Amy. The blue hedgehog was in his room with Tails. "I can't do it, Tails. I'm too nervous."

The orange fox shook his head. "Then why did you buy the ring?"

Sonic sighs. "My heart told me I was ready."

Tails smiled. "You didn't know this until now, but other than having your babies, Amy's begging inside for you to marry her."

Sonic frowned. "How do you know that?"

Tails chuckled. "I asked her. I'll give you a few minutes, then you come down. Listen to your heart, Sonic."

With this, Tails left Sonic's room.

-Downstairs-

Tails rejoins the party. "Everyone! Listen up! Clear the area around Amy please. Sonic's coming with his present!"

The partygoers do as Tails asks, and soon Sonic comes downstairs. Amy was confused. "Sonic? What's going on?"

Sonic takes a breath. "Amy, I've known you for years now. From day one, I always thought you were pretty cute. But with Dr Robotnik around, I couldn't risk you being targeted in his crazy attempts to make me surrender."

Sonic pauses. "That was for the rest of you since Amy's already heard that. Now Amy, this is for you."

The lights are dimmed, with two lights pointed at Sonic and Amy. "Over the years Amy, I've watched you grow from a fan girl to a very attractive young woman. To be honest, I was surprised you were single when I asked you out 8 months ago."

Amy giggles. "I'd have waited forever for you to ask me out Sonic. Now, I want us to have a family. I want to be with you forever Sonic."

He smiled. "I'm glad to hear you say that Amy. Now for your present."

Everyone watched with their breath held. Would Sonic actually ask Amy to marry him? Amy's jade green eyes watched the blue hedgehog carefully.

Sonic looked at his friends. Cream smiled, holding Tails' hand. Rouge leaned against Shadow, giving Sonic a motion with her head as if saying "Go ahead. You can do this." Knuckles and Tikal were just staring at him. Tails nodded, and Shadow looked as if he wanted to say "GET ON WITH IT YOU FAKER!"

Sonic finally turned to face Amy, and pulled the ring from his pocket. "S-S-Sonic?" was all Amy could manage.

Sonic locked his emerald green eyes with Amy's jade green eyes, and knelt on one knee. "Miss Amy Rose, will you marry me?"

All eyes turned to the pink hedgehog. Amy's eyes filled with tears, and she fell to her knees, hugging Sonic in a tight hug. Her voice was broken by her sobbing. "D-Do you have a-any idea how l-long I've been hoping you w-would ask me that? Of c-course I'll m-marry you S-Sonic."

Sonic helped Amy off the floor and gently put the ring on her finger. Amy looked at the ring. "It's beautiful Sonikku."

He smiled, putting his arms around Amy's waist. "Nowhere close to as beautiful as you are Amy Rose."

Amy's soft lips met Sonic's lips and the cheers arose as the newly engaged couple deepened the kiss. After the kiss broke, the girls admired the ring as the guys congratulated Sonic for finally growing a pair. The party resumed a few minutes later with more bump and grind dancing. Around midnight the party ended and after more congratulations only Sonic and Amy remained.

Sonic cleaned the house up in a few seconds and rejoined his fiancée at the door. "Bedtime Ames."

Amy locked the door and cut off the lights. Sonic went upstairs to his room, changed into his blue boxers, and waited for Amy. She comes into his room a few seconds after he does, and changes into her pink pajamas. After a few minutes, Amy joins her fiancé in bed. However, she doesn't climb beside him. Instead, she climbs on top of Sonic, laying her head on his strong chest. "It's been a long time since we slept like this Sonikku."

The blue hedgehog kissed the pink hedgehog's head and begins gently rubbing her back, smiling as she begins purring. "I'm glad you decided to sleep there Ames. I missed it."

Amy smiled, giving her fiancé a kiss. "Just wait until you get your birthday present from me tomorrow, Sonic. Goodnight, and I love you very much."

Sonic kissed back. "I love you too very much, Amy Rose, and goodnight."

In a few minutes, Sonic and Amy were asleep, dreaming of what life would be like as a married couple.

A very special birthday present

Sonic wakes up on December 26th, his birthday. It's about 10 AM. Sonic finds Amy gone, but has left a note: 'Dear Sonikku, I've gone shopping with Cream for your birthday present. You'll get it tonight. I love you. Amy Rose'

The emerald green eyes of the royal blue hedgehog shine. 'I wonder what she's getting me' he thought to himself. After 5 minutes of thinking, Sonic got nothing. Climbing out of bed, Sonic went to his bathroom, and took a quick shower. Once he got out, Sonic changed into a blue muscle shirt and blue jeans. He and Amy had stopped wearing gloves because they found them unnecessary.

Walking to his kitchen, Sonic made some toast, and walked into his living room. Sitting on the couch, Sonic turns on the TV, and finds a news article on. It was a story about Amy Rose possibly being engaged. Sonic chuckled as he ate, a smile on his face.

The anchorman was going through the details the network knew about. "So far, all we know is that Amy Rose was seen earlier today wearing a ring with five diamonds on it. The ring was on her left hand. We tried to get a word with Miss Rose, but she refused to speak to us. We'll keep you updated as we get new details."

The emerald eyes of the royal blue speedster sparkled with amusement. Putting his plate away, Sonic went for a run, and came back in an hour. Around noon, Amy returned from shopping, carrying a black bag. She put it upstairs in Sonic's room, then joined him on the couch.

Sonic rolled onto his back, and Amy climbed on top of him, her head on his chest. "I missed you Sonikku."

Sonic smiled, giving his pink fiancée a kiss. "I missed you too, my love. How was shopping?"

Amy frowned. "I was confronted by some media person asking if I was engaged. I refused to speak with them, though."

Sonic chuckled. "I saw that on the news earlier today."

Amy nodded. "Don't ask me what I got you though, because I won't tell you."

Sonic smiles. "I didn't plan to. I'll let you give me the present when you're ready."

The pink hedgehog giggles. "I will say it'll be around 9 PM, okay?"

He nods. "That's fine with me."

Amy nuzzled the strong chest, and after about an hour of watching movies on TV, the hedgehog couple falls asleep. Around 8:30 PM, Amy wakes up, and gently climbs off of the still sleeping Sonic.

Looking at the time, Amy giggles. "How convenient."

Taking another look at Sonic, Amy feels her heart flutter. 'Even asleep, Sonic's the hottest thing alive.' Amy then crept quietly up the stairs to Sonic's room to get ready.

At 9 PM, Sonic's eyes open, and he finds himself alone. "Amy?"

The reply comes from his room. "I'm in your room, Sonic. You can come get your present now."

Sonic gets off the couch, stretches, and walks to his room.

-Sonic's room-

Sonic opens the door, goes into his room, and shuts the door. He gets a little confused by what he sees. There are candles lit, and the lights are off. There's also a video camera pointed at the bed.

The next thing he hears is Amy's sultry voice. "Hello, my love."

Amy was in the shadows where Sonic couldn't see her. Sonic turns to where he thinks the voice is coming from. "Amy? Where's my present?"

The sakura hedgehog replied. "Sit on the bed and I'll show you Sonic."

The blue hero did as she asked, and Amy steps from the shadows, wearing black see-through lingerie. Sonic's eyes widened when he sees Amy, and he manages one word. "Damn."

Amy smiled as she walked to her blue lover. Her hips swayed with each step and her large breasts bounced freely. "You know, there's only one thing to do with lingerie like this my love."

Sonic grinned. "Give me a strip dance?"

Amy giggles. "One of your fantasies?"

Sonic nods, making Amy's green eyes light up. "On one condition, Sonikku. One of my fantasies has been to make a sex tape with you. So, if I give you the strip dance, you have to agree to the sex tape."

Sonic thought for a few seconds and then nodded. "That's fine. I agree to the terms."

Amy smiles, giving Sonic a naughty wink. "Then sit back and enjoy the show my love."

Sonic reclined on the bed and Amy pushed a button on the wall. She'd secretly asked Tails to make her a device that would let her use a stripper pole, and he did so provided it was only to be used for Sonic. The pole descended and Amy put on some slow music. Sonic pushed the "record" button on the video camera, and Amy began dancing.

Sonic smiled. He didn't know Amy could dance at all. Amy later informed him that she'd been given lessons by Cream, who'd been dancing for Tails for several months now. Sonic's green eyes watched his pink fiancée carefully, and her green eyes remained locked into his eyes. The music continued to play as Amy danced, her gaze never leaving her blue fiancé.

After a few minutes of dancing, Amy began taking off the lingerie, starting with the top. Removing the straps from her shoulders, Amy's lustful green eyes watched Sonic as the top slipped off, revealing her gorgeous breasts. Sonic's only reaction was a smile, since all he was allowed to do was watch for now. Amy began rubbing her luscious body, moaning as she rubbed her way down to her flower, then back up to her breasts.

She was always watching Sonic, who kept the smile on his face, occasionally telling Amy she was doing a good job, she looked really hot, etc. Her toned body became completely visible to Sonic as she slowly worked the lingerie bottoms off. The music continued to play as Amy worked her way over to Sonic, teasingly putting her breasts and flower close enough for him to touch if he so wanted.

Sonic did reach out once, but Amy backed away, giggling. "Nuh uh, Sonic. Not yet."

Sonic gave a playful frown and resumed watching his pink lover dance. After more sensual rubbing of her body, Amy walked back to Sonic, and began teasing him out of his clothes. Now both hedgehogs are naked, and then the music ends a few seconds later.

Sonic smiles. "That was hot."

Amy giggles. "Just you wait."

Amy crawls on top of Sonic and begins kissing her way down his body to his member. Sonic actually shivered from the kisses since Amy's strip dance had heightened his arousal. As she kissed her way down Sonic's 8 inch organ began hardening, which Amy wanted to have happen.

The pink hedgehog reaches the large appendage and smiles. "Now, for the fun part. Is the camera recording Sonikku?"

The royal blue hero nodded. "It has been since you started your strip dance."

Amy nodded and then began sucking on the tip of Sonic's member, making him moan. "Ohhh Amy...."

Taking her right hand Amy begins stroking Sonic's thick shaft as her sucking gets slightly harder. Sonic reaches down and begins gently rubbing Amy's large peach-colored breasts. This gets a moan from her and her pace speeds up, making Sonic moan even louder.

Amy stops for a second. "Sonic, I didn't know you were a screamer."

He chuckles. "If you keep going it'll get louder."

Amy nods and resumes her teasing of Sonic's meaty member. Sonic shivers and moans loudly when Amy takes in all 8 inches of his huge organ. His moans were driving Amy wild, and she bobbed her head faster. Her soft tongue traced various paths along Sonic's member which made Sonic moan even more. Amy's left hand began teasing Sonic's testicles as her right hand began stroking his member again.

It's not long before Sonic is close to an orgasm. "A-Amy... I'm-I'm going to cum."

The pink hedgehog moans in anticipation and increases her pace. Soon Sonic moans loudly as he orgasms into Amy's mouth. "OHHH AMY..."

Amy smiles as her blue lover's seed rockets into her mouth. She looks right into Sonic's eyes as she swallows the whole load. Crawling forward, Amy kisses Sonic. "You taste really good... Your seed is really thick and I love it."

Sonic's eyes light up as Amy crawls back to his member and wraps it in her large mounds. "Whoa Ames... Leave some for later."

She chuckles. "Knowing you like I do, you'll be just fine."

Further discussion is cut off as Amy begins massaging Sonic's member with her large breasts, making Sonic moan again. Amy also licks the tip of his organ as it becomes visible from between her huge mounds. Sonic's hands

curl around some loose bed sheets as Amy speeds up. Sweat begins forming on Sonic's forehead as Amy's breasts massage his manhood. Five minutes pass and Sonic erupts in another orgasm, his seed spraying all over Amy's face and breasts.

The lustful green eyes of the rose-pink hedgehog meet the shining emerald eyes of the royal blue hedgehog. "See? I told you."

Sonic smiles. "That looks really hot Amy."

She smiles back at him and licks his seed from her breasts, then looks at Sonic once she's done. "Bet you didn't know I was such a freak for you, did you my love?"

Sonic shook his head. "You're right, and I'm glad it's only for me too."

Amy nodded. "You and you alone."

Sonic then rolls Amy onto her back and spreads her legs. "Now it's my turn."

Amy nods and Sonic presses his lips against Amy's lips. Immediately their tongues meet, and moaning ensues. Sonic's hands find their way to Amy's large breasts and gently begin rubbing them. Amy's hands wrap around Sonic's back, taking a firm grip on his fur.

Sonic feels Amy's hips begin rubbing against his thigh, and he breaks the kiss. "Not quite yet my love."

Amy pouts and then feels Sonic's soft tongue sweep her large dark pink nipples. Amy moans and pulls Sonic's head to her breast. "Oh Sonic..."

The blue hedgehog likes her sounds and his right hand begins teasing her left nipple as his tongue licks her right nipple. Amy begins writhing in pleasure, grinding her hips against Sonic again. "Sonic that feels so good. More!"

Sonic's deep voice makes Amy shiver. "I like hearing you beg Ames."

He switches nipples, his mouth working on her left nipple now, and his left hand working on her right nipple. Amy feels Sonic's right hand begin rubbing her clitoris and she shudders, moaning loudly. "Oh yes! More my love. MORE!"

Sonic smiles and speeds up his rubbing. In a few minutes Amy's grip on Sonic's fur tightens as she orgasms, moaning his name and nearly deafening Sonic. "Ohhh yes Sonic! That feels good!"

The blue hedgehog begins kissing his way down the pink hedgehog's body. "I'm not done yet sexy."

Amy nods, panting a little. Sweat begins forming on her forehead as her body heats up with each kiss Sonic puts on her. Working his way past her flat stomach, Sonic reaches Amy's drenched flower and looks at his pink fiancée. Amy nods to her lover's look and Sonic lowers his face to Amy's core. The sakura hedgehog feels Sonic's soft tongue gently lick her clitoris and she pulls his head to her womanhood, moaning loudly.

Amy had been highly aroused since her strip dance and Sonic was just making her more aroused. Sonic, being the pro that he is, uses his teeth now, gently biting down on Amy's clit and flicking it with his teeth. His hands went to Amy's nipples and gently pinched them at the same time. The result was Amy having another orgasm in a matter of seconds. Screaming her blue stud's name, Amy asked for a minute to catch her breath, and Sonic nodded. This resulted in him having some time to get the lube and lube up his member.

He gets an idea and smiles. "Ames, do you have any handcuffs?"

The rose-pink hedgehog nodded. "They're in my dresser."

Sonic got them out and put Amy on her hands and knees. Taking the handcuffs Sonic put them around Amy's wrists and then handcuffed her to the footboard of the bed.

Amy looked back at him. "Sonic? Please tell me you're about to pound my rear."

He nods. "Yes Amy, I am."

Amy shudders. "Good. I've been wanting to feel it there for a while now."

The royal blue hedgehog chuckled. "Well, here we go then."

Lubing Amy's anus up Sonic positioned himself, gently grabbed Amy's hips, and slowly entered her anus. Amy moaned loudly as he entered, chills shooting down her spine. "Ohhhh Sonic..."

Once she was ready Sonic began thrusting, all 8 inches of his huge manhood sliding in and out of Amy's ample rear. Each thrust made Amy scream in pleasure. "Yes! Yes! Oh! Oh! More! Ah! Mh! Sonic! Yes!"

Leaning forward Sonic grabbed Amy's nipples and gently pinched them as he thrust. Amy pulled his head forward and kissed him as they continued their love-making. The two hedgehogs' moans were muffled because of their kissing, but this only served to arouse them more.

The kiss broke and Amy began screaming with the waves of pleasure Sonic was giving her. "YES! YES! MORE! SONIC! PLEASE! MORE! OH YES!"

Amy's breasts slid along the blue silk sheets once Sonic let go of them, giving her even more pleasure. The pink hedgehog got a surprise when she felt Sonic rubbing her clit as he pounded her rear. Amy visibly shuddered as the waves of ecstasy roared through her sultry body.

Another minute passes, and Amy looks back to Sonic. "Sonikku! I'm-I'm going to cum! AH!"

Sonic smiled and gave Amy's ample rear a few spanks to help her along. In a few seconds, Amy screamed Sonic's name as she had another orgasm.

This one was strong and her body shook as the climax tore through her. "SONIC!"

Something hit Sonic's legs and dripped down to the sheets. Giving a deep chuckle Sonic smiled. "Amy, you did it again."

She nodded. "I know. It's a good thing, so don't worry."

Sonic kisses Amy's lower back. "Well, I haven't cum yet, so I'm wondering what to do back here."

Amy winks at her blue fiancé. "You keep pounding my rear until you do cum Sonikku."

Sonic nods and begins thrusting inside his pink fiancée again, still inside her ample rear. Amy screamed with each thrust he made, and it was music to his ears. Both hedgehogs were panting heavily and sweat was dripping down their bodies, but they didn't care. All Sonic and Amy could focus on was pleasing each other.

After a few minutes Sonic feels himself getting close to orgasm. "Amy! I'm going to cum again!"

She shouted back. "Me too! Harder Sonic! Cum inside me! PLEASE!"

Sonic nods and his grip on Amy's hips tightens as he gives one more thrust. His claws gently sink into Amy's hips as his seed roars into Amy's tight anus.

Sonic actually screams Amy's name as his seed fills his pink lover. "AMY!"

She screams his name loudly as she feels his seed fill her. "SONIC!"

Sonic slowly pulls out of Amy's rear and unhandcuffs Amy from the footboard. He lays down on the bed and Amy crawls on top of him, panting heavily. The hedgehog couple inhales the other's scent, purring loudly. Amy loved Sonic's strong odor, and Sonic reveled in Amy's musky pheromones.

A couple of minutes pass and then Amy gives Sonic a passionate kiss. "Ready for the last part Sonikku?"

He nods, and Amy sits up, still on top of Sonic. Positioning herself Amy puts Sonic's manhood inside her, moaning all the way. Sonic put his hands on Amy's hips and she began riding him. The cobalt speedster begins

moaning, making Amy moan even more. Their scents mix into an erotic potion of lust and passion, their moans getting louder and more frequent.

Amy's the first to erupt in orgasm, screaming Sonic's name. Her hands tighten around Sonic's shoulders and he feels her vaginal walls tighten as the powerful climax races through her body. "SOONNIIC! Oh! Ah! Uh! Uh. Oh. Wow that was amazing."

Sonic smiles. "I haven't cum yet my love."

Amy pouts. "You suck. Are you even close yet?"

The blue hedgehog laughs. "I'll let you know. I can't help the fact I can go for a long time."

The pink hedgehog giggles. "Believe me, I love that fact. Now, are you ready to continue?"

For an answer Sonic rolls Amy onto her back and whispers into her ear. "How hard do you want it?"

Amy's sultry whisper is one Sonic almost expected. "I want it as hard as you can give it to me."

Sonic nodded and then began slamming all 8 inches of his manhood into Amy's core. Her hands and legs wrap around Sonic's back and hips and she holds on tight. Amy's thoughts were racing, but they didn't remain thoughts for long. 'Wow. This feels incredible. I'm so lucky to have Sonic as my fiancé.'

Here, Amy's thoughts became words. "So hard! So thick! It's going so deep! More Sonic! Please! Pound me as hard as you can and as fast as you can!"

Sonic obliges immediately and Amy's screams get even louder as Sonic's member slams her core at full speed and power. His hands begin pinching and squeezing Amy's large dark pink nipples.

This action sends Amy over the edge again. "SONIC! UH! UH! OH WOW! OH! UH!"

Sonic smiles as that same something hit his legs and drips down to the sheets. The pink hedgehog's bright jade green eyes look into the shining emerald eyes of her blue stud. "Almost there?"

Sonic nods. "Can you handle another pounding like that one?"

Amy giggles, panting and sweating heavily. "For you, of course."

Sonic was also sweating and panting heavily, but he knew he had enough energy for one last round. Kissing Amy, Sonic begins thrusting at full speed and power again, his grip on her nipples never faltering. Amy could barely hold on because she had very little energy left.

Lucky for her it was only about 5 minutes before Sonic made his announcement. "AMY! I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Amy screamed back. "ME-ME TOO! CUM INSIDE ME AGAIN SONIC! PLEASE!"

Another minute passes and Sonic erupts in his final orgasm, his seed roaring into Amy's core. He screams her name again with what breath he can catch. "AMY!"

At the same time Amy's last orgasm tore through her body. She shook as her powerful climax sent tingles through her body and that same something hit Sonic in the legs again. Tightening her grip on Sonic's fur Amy screamed her blue stud's pet name. "SONIKKU! UH! UH! OH! AH! YES! OH! UH! UH!"

Sonic managed to roll over so that Amy was on top of him but he didn't have the energy to pull out of his pink fiancée. Amy collapsed onto Sonic's chest and abs. She had no energy to pull Sonic out of her flower, but she didn't want him to pull out anyway. The candles would slowly burn out overnight. Panting heavily and sweating profusely, Sonic and Amy manage to pull the soaked sheets over them, and then start to catch their breath.

Amy smiles at Sonic. "That (panting) was (panting) so amazing Sonikku. Wow."

Sonic nods. "You (panting) are so much better (panting) than you realize, Ames. That was (panting) incredible."

The hedgehogs kiss and close their eyes. Amy nuzzles Sonic's chest. "Goodnight Sonic, and happy 23rd birthday. I love you."

Sonic smiles. "Thank you, my love. Goodnight, and I love you too."

Sonic and Amy are asleep in less than 5 minutes. After they're asleep, the DVD in the video camera stops recording because there was no more space on the disc. Sonic and Amy slept peacefully through the night, smiles on their faces, and their bodies glowing with the love they shared with each other.

Big news for the hedgehogs

January comes around, and since New Year's Day Sonic had been working with Shadow several times a day learning Chaos Control. It wasn't easy and tested Shadow's patience to the limit. Finally, around the 8th of January, Sonic finally managed to induce Chaos Control. He and Shadow had gotten to the point that Sonic could teleport himself, but that's it.

During this time, Amy had been hanging out with Cream shopping for various things. However, no one knew what was happening with the pink hedgehog when Sonic was out in the morning sessions learning Chaos Control. It would wind up being life changing news.

Sonic walked into his house after a 2 AM training session, and hears a sound coming from his bathroom upstairs. Bolting to the bathroom door, Sonic hears violent vomiting. Slowly pushing the door open, the royal blue hedgehog sees Amy bent over the toilet, emptying the contents of her stomach. She flushes the toilet, and pulls her knees to her chest, shaking and whimpering quietly.

Sonic kneels next to his pink fiancée, gently wrapping her in his strong arms. "You okay Amy?"

Amy buries her face in Sonic's chest. His green shirt soaked up her tears. "I-I don't know Sonikku. I've been here for the last 20 minutes just vomiting. Oh, Sonic."

Here, Amy begins crying. Sonic holds Amy, gently rubbing her back. "Shhh.... I'm right here Amy. I have you."

In a few minutes Amy's breathing slows, her crying stops, and she goes silent. Sonic checks on her, and finds Amy's in a peaceful sleep. Picking her up, Sonic turns off the bathroom light, and carries Amy to bed, gently laying her in bed. Changing into green boxers, Sonic joins Amy and cuddles her to him. Though she's asleep, Amy nuzzles Sonic, who nuzzles back.

A smile comes to Amy's face, and Sonic gently kisses her forehead. Closing his eyes, Sonic falls asleep. Shadow had given him the next day off, so the free time would be spent with Amy. The rest of the night passes uneventfully, though it wouldn't last for long.

-The next day, 8 AM-

Six hours pass, and Sonic wakes up around 8 AM. He's alone in his bed, and hears Amy in his bathroom again. She's vomiting for the second time that morning. Climbing out of bed, Sonic goes to the kitchen and gets some Ginger Ale out of the refrigerator. Pouring a cup, Sonic goes into the bathroom and places the cup on the sink.

Amy flushes the horrible-smelling stuff away, and takes the cup, slowly drinking the cool contents. Throwing the cup into the trash can, Amy walks to Sonic, pressing against him. "Oh, Sonic. Please help me. It hurts so much."

The cobalt hedgehog holds his sakura fiancée as she softly cries. "I'll do everything I can, Ames. To be honest, I think you may be coming down with something."

Amy's tear-filled jade green eyes meet Sonic's concerned emerald green eyes. "What do you think it could be, Sonikku?"

He frowned. "I wish I could tell you. But right now, go back to bed. I'll see if I can schedule a doctor's appointment for later today."

Amy smiled and kissed Sonic. "You going to join me when you get done?"

Sonic nodded. "Of course. Go keep the bed warm for me babe. I'll be there in a few minutes."

The pink hedgehog walks out of the bathroom, giving Sonic a wink. The blue hedgehog walks to the living room, picks up the phone, and calls the care center. "Yes, I need to schedule an appointment please..."

-3 PM, Station Square Care Center-

We find the hedgehog couple nervously awaiting the doctor. Eventually, he calls for Sonic and Amy to come into his office. Holding hands, they walk in and the doctor closes the door.

"Hi there. I'm Doctor Alnilam. What brings you to the Care Center today?" Amy goes to answer, but winds up whimpering on Sonic's shoulder. Dr Alnilam gives Sonic a confused look.

Sonic chuckles. "Sorry about that. Amy's been up at early hours of the morning, vomiting violently. She's done so twice today, and she also has a bit of a fever."

The doctor nodded. "I see. Well, here's what I'm going to do. I need to take some blood samples and I'll also need a urine sample from Amy. First I need to know something. How long has this been going on?"

Amy had stopped crying, and answered Dr Alnilam. "It's been going on for about 10 days."

Dr Alnilam nodded, getting a small cup from his desk. "Miss Rose, I'll need a urine sample from you, please. The bathroom is around the corner."

Amy takes the cup and goes to the bathroom. A few minutes later she comes back into the office. Dr Alnilam nodded and produces the necessary implements for taking a blood sample. Amy gives Sonic a worried look.

The blue hedgehog takes his pink lover's hand. "He's just going to take a blood sample, Ames. It won't take long, and I'll be right here."

Amy nods, and the doctor prepares Amy's left arm for a blood sample. Dr Alnilam inserts the needle into a vein in Amy's arm, which makes Amy wince and whimper a little bit. However, Sonic was right. It wasn't long before the needle was removed.

Amy is given a bandage and Dr Alnilam nods. "Come back in three days. The results of the tests will be waiting for you."

Sonic takes Amy's hand, and they leave the Care Center. On the way back to Sonic's house, the two hedgehogs talk about what the test results will show.

-Three days later-

Sonic wakes up around 9 AM, and hears Amy vomiting in his bathroom again. Shaking his head, Sonic walks in and waits for Amy to finish throwing up before gently picking her up and holding her.

Amy's green eyes are flowing with tears and she's sobbing heavily. "Sonic, it hurts so much!"

Sonic nods. "We'll take a warm shower and head back to the doctor's office. Okay?"

Amy nods and allows Sonic to undress her, since she can barely stand up. Sonic undresses and helps Amy into the shower. It's a nice long shower that both hedgehogs felt they needed. Once finished, Amy and Sonic dry off and get dressed.

Sonic chooses a blue muscle shirt, dark green pants, and a blue jacket. He also puts on his blue speed shoes. Amy goes with a pink long-sleeved shirt, matching jeans, and pink boots. Amy's quills now reached a few inches past her shoulders, and Sonic loved it. He'd recently gotten his quills trimmed, but they were still as long as Amy's quills were now. Amy takes Sonic's hand, and the hedgehog couple walk to the Care Center.

-45 minutes later-

The hedgehog couple sits in the lobby of the Station Square Care Center. It took a little longer to get there because Amy had to throw up again.

Dr Alnilam appears and smiles. "Thanks for coming back. Come with me please." The doctor leads Sonic and Amy to his office, and shuts the door after they enter.

Sitting at his desk, Dr Alnilam faces the nervous hedgehogs. "Here are the results of the tests." He opens the folder, and reads the results. "Well, the urine test showed nothing. However, the blood test showed a variant hormone called hCG."

Sonic frowns. "What does that mean, doctor?"

Dr Alnilam smiles. "Amy's pregnant is what it means."

Sonic's jaw drops and Amy's eyes widen. "I'm- I'm pregnant?"

The doctor nods. "The hCG hormone only shows in pregnancy, Miss Rose. Congratulations you two."

Amy goes to hug Sonic, but finds he's not there. Her eyes fill with concern. "Sonic?" She thanks Doctor Alnilam, and runs out of the office.

-Tails' Workshop-

Amy Rose runs up to Tails' workshop door and bangs on it. "Tails! Open up! Please hurry!"

A few seconds pass, and the orange fox opens the door. "Amy? What's going on?"

Amy falls against Tails, crying. "It's Sonic. He's gone!"

Tails held Amy as she cried. "What would make him run away?"

Amy pulls out of Tails' grasp. "I-I'm pregnant with his child."

Tails' eyes widen, and immediately he goes to the Sonic tracking device. "Okay. Time to use the Sonic tracker."

He turns the device on, and it locks on to Sonic, but the news isn't good. "Amy, he's running away from Station Square." The device shutters, and then turns off. Tails curses, then goes to work fixing the device. "Amy, the best thing you can do is go to Sonic's house and wait. He'll be back. I only wish I knew how soon."

Amy leaves the workshop, still crying. Tails shakes his head. "If Sonic ever comes back, I'm going to kick him around for leaving Amy when she's pregnant."

-One week later-

A very depressed Amy Rose is seen walking down the streets of Station Square. No one had seen or heard anything from Sonic since he vanished. It was a cloudy day, and there was a cold wind blowing. It was the kind of wind that would chill anyone to the bone. However, Sonic took Amy's warmth when he left one week ago.

As she walked along, Amy entered an intersection, not even bothering to look where she was going. The sakura hedgehog was talking to herself. "I miss Sonic so much, but I guess he wasn't ready to be a father... What's the point of raising a family if Sonikku isn't going to be part of it?"

A loud horn breaks Amy's concentration. Turning to her right, Amy finds herself staring at the grille of a giant 18-ton semi truck. Unable to move, and not really wanting to, Amy closes her eyes, and waits for impact. The truck got closer and closer. Amy heard a deep voice over the sound of the truck's horn. "NOOO!" Something hits her, and the truck barely misses Amy.

The jade green eyes open, and the first thing they see is a pair of emerald green eyes. The pink hedgehog feels her heart start pounding. "S-Sonic? Is that you?"

The answer is a tight hug. "Amy. I'm so sorry I ran away."

The two hedgehogs stood up, then Amy slapped Sonic really hard. "What the hell did you run off for? Do you have ANY idea how worried I've been?"

Sonic hangs his head, his left cheek stinging from Amy slapping him so hard. "I just needed some time. I'm not ready to be a father yet, but I'm not about to let you get turned into road kill because of something stupid."

Amy's green eyes started filling with tears again. "So why did you come back?"

Sonic didn't look at Amy, but answered her question. "As I said, I just needed some time to let the news sink in. I shouldn't have run, and all I can do is say I'm sorry and ask for forgiveness."

Amy gently lifts Sonic's head, and finds a few tears falling down his face onto his tattered blue shirt and torn green pants. "Sonikku, please stop crying."

Sonic shook his head. "I can't. Not after how I treated you. How can you still love me when I've been gone for a week and not tell you?"

Amy's answer is gentle. "Sonic, my love for you has burned strong for you for the last 10 years. Yes, you left, but what matters most is that you came back. You're forgiven, and your apology is accepted."

Leaning forward, Amy kisses Sonic, her hands taking handfuls of Sonic's long quills. Sonic wraps his arms around Amy's waist and holds her close as the kiss deepens. A few minutes pass, and the kiss breaks.

The hedgehog couple stares into each other's eyes, and Amy puts her head on Sonic's shoulder. "Thank you for coming back."

Sonic nodded. "I would have come back eventually anyway, Amy. I have a child on the way."

Tails shows up a few minutes later, carrying the Sonic tracker. He sees the blue hedgehog, and frowns.

Amy turns, and smiles. "Did you fix the Sonic tracker?"

Tails gives her the device while walking to Sonic. "Yeah, hold this for a second."

Tails rears back and belts Sonic in the jaw with a hard right hook. Sonic hits the ground, and doesn't even fight back as Tails yells at him. "You IDIOT!"

Do you have any idea what you put Amy through? She's pregnant with your child Sonic! What the hell is wrong with you?!"

Amy steps between Sonic and Tails, frowning. "Tails, enough. Sonic and I have already discussed his leaving. I know you want to beat his face in, but you've made your point. Thank you for helping me with this situation, but your work is done."

Tails frowns, and flies off using his two tails.

Amy turns back to Sonic, who's still on the ground. "Sonic? Are you okay?"

The cobalt speedster nods. "Yeah, I'm fine. I still feel bad about leaving you like I did though."

The pink hedgehog giggles. "So you should. Now, let's go to your house. You must be starving."

Sonic gets up, and hugs Amy again. "Don't expect me to stop apologizing for a few hours."

Amy nods. "Okay, Sonic."

The hedgehog couple begins walking to Sonic's house, hand-in-hand and talking about the coming baby.

-Sonic's House-

Sonic and Amy enter the house, and Amy goes to the kitchen to make dinner. She got the necessary ingredients for some spaghetti, and put a pot of water on the stove. As the water heated, Amy joined Sonic on the couch, and nuzzled him. "Sonikku? Where did you go?"

Sonic sighed. "I didn't really have a set place in mind. I spent some of the last week alone in some woods several hundred miles from here. I came back to Station Square and stayed with Shadow and Rouge for a few days. Today, I finally worked up the stones to find you, and I'm glad I did, otherwise you'd have been flattened like a pancake."

Amy smiled. "Did you miss me at all?"

He nodded. "Of course, but I was scared that you wouldn't take me back after I left."

Amy turned his face to her. "Why would you think that? We're engaged, Sonic. Besides, every relationship has bumps in the road."

Sonic nodded again. "Thank you for giving me another chance Ames. You have no idea how much I appreciate it."

Amy nuzzles her blue stud again. "Why didn't you call me?"

Sonic shrugged. "I didn't take my phone with me, and I needed to be alone for a while. I probably should have taken it with me, but it would have died anyway."

The rose-pink hedgehog sighed. "I see. Well, I'm happy you're back, Sonic. I missed you."

Sonic nodded. "I missed you too. Now, what can I do to make this up to you?"

Amy smiled. "You can make dinner. I'm in the mood for spaghetti, and everything is ready. All you have to do is make it. After dinner, you can give me a back massage. After that, we cuddle, since we've not done so in a week."

Sonic nods, and goes into the kitchen to make dinner. An hour later, Sonic and Amy are in his bed, cuddling together and watching TV. The front door is locked, and the two hedgehogs are watching various baby shows as they come on.

Amy turns her green eyes to her blue lover. "Sonic? You owe me a massage."

Sonic nods. "Alright then. A massage it is."

Sonic pulls the straps to Amy's purple sundress down and gently placed his hands on Amy's delicate shoulders. The strong grip slowly started working the tension out of Amy's body.

She smiled at Sonic's touch. "Ooohhh that feels nice, Sonic."

Sonic smiled, and gently rubbed Amy's tensed back and shoulders. "Ames, you need to relax a little."

Amy frowns. "I would be more relaxed if you'd been here for the last week."

Sonic frowns now, but keeps massaging. Amy begins purring as she feels the tension melt away under her lover's touch. Sonic chuckles, and moves lower on Amy's back.

Amy begins moaning as Sonic begins to massage the middle of her back. "Oohhhh, that feels good."

Now Sonic moves to Amy's lower back. The pink hedgehog gasps at the touch working the tension out of that area. The purring resumes as Sonic works.

The blue hedgehog smiles. "I missed feeling you purring, babe."

Amy nodded. "I missed you period, my love. This massage feels great, by the way."

Sonic chuckles. "Do you want the full body massage, or just your back tonight?"

Amy smiles. "Just my back this time. The full body massage will come later in the pregnancy."

Sonic nods. "I look forward to it."

The rose-pink hedgehog smiles and purrs as her blue stud continues massaging her back. It lasts for another 15 minutes. By the time Sonic gets

done, Amy is more relaxed than she ever remembers being. She snuggles up to Sonic, and smiles when she feels his arms wrap around her.

Amy turns her green eyes to Sonic after a few minutes. "Sonic? We need to start planning the wedding."

Sonic nods. "We'll get on that tomorrow. Right now, I just want to snuggle with my fiancée."

Amy sighs contently. "It's so nice to be held in your arms again, Sonikku."

The royal blue hero chuckles. "Believe me, I missed it while I was gone Ames."

Amy kisses Sonic, and goes back to watching TV. Midnight comes around, and Sonic turns off the TV. After he turns off the lights, Sonic once again cuddles Amy to him. "Goodnight Amy, and thank you."

Amy lays her head on his chest. "You're welcome. I love you Sonic." Sonic smiled. "I love you too Amy. So much." They share a kiss, then fall asleep.

The wedding planning begins

Amy Rose wakes up and finds herself alone in Sonic's room. Rolling over, she finds a note from Sonic. It reads:

'Dear Amy. I went out early with Shadow, Tails, and Knuckles to try and find a location for our wedding. In a few hours, I'll show it to you, so get ready. I'll be home soon.'

I love you,

Sonic.'

Amy smiled. 'That's my Sonikku. I'm so happy I'm engaged to him and carrying his child.' Amy showers and dresses in a red shirt, pink jeans, and red fuzzy boots.

Walking downstairs, Amy calls Cream on her cell phone. "Hey Cream? It's Amy.... I'm doing fine. I was wondering if you wanted to go do some shopping today.... I'm thinking about getting some maternity clothes.... I know I won't need them for several months, but I want to have them already when the time comes.... Okay, I'll see you there." Amy eats some toast with strawberry jam, locks the front door, and meets up with Cream at the mall.

-With Sonic-

Sonic met up with Tails, Shadow, and Knuckles in the park. They congratulated the blue hedgehog on Amy's pregnancy, and then the four of them began looking for a spot that Sonic and Amy could get married. They were all dressed in light winter wear: Long sleeved shirts, jeans, and shoes. Their shirts matched their fur and so did their shoes. The jeans were all blue jeans.

The guys found a spot for a reception in the park, but no spot for the wedding. The area for the reception was a sheltered area with a bunch of picnic tables under the roof. Continuing their walk, the four males entered the city. Conversation ranged from Sonic and Amy's wedding, their coming

baby, and various other things. Tails mentioned he was planning to ask Cream to marry him soon. Shadow admitted he wasn't sure when or even if he planned on asking for Rouge's hand in marriage. Knuckles said he was in the same boat with Shadow, but had mentioned marriage to Tikal. She said she was interested in marrying Knuckles, but said they should wait a little longer to get engaged, just to make sure they were both ready.

The four males now reached the beach area of Station Square, having found nothing in the city. About a minute's walk down the beach, Sonic thinks he sees a sandbar about 50 feet from shore. Patting his pockets to make sure he has his blue emerald, Sonic turns to the other three. "Meet me at that sandbar." Sonic then turns back to the sandbar. "Chaos Control." He vanishes in a flash of blue light and reappears on the sandbar.

Knuckles and Tails are shocked. Knuckles speaks first. "Shadow? How did Sonic do that? I thought you were the only one who could use Chaos Control." The black hedgehog gives a deep chuckle.

"I've been teaching the faker how to use Chaos Control as my Christmas present to him. Rouge gave him the emerald. It's not been easy, but he's getting the hang of it now."

Knuckles nods. "So, can you teach me and Tails to use Chaos Control?"

Shadow growls. "Let's not get carried away." Tails laughs, but this makes Shadow whirl on him. "That means you too, Tails." Shadow grabs Knuckles and Tails, and teleports all three of them to the sandbar in a flash of green light. Sonic's already done exploring the area. When at high tide, $\frac{1}{4}$ of an inch of water flows gently over the sandbar. At low tide, it's completely dry.

Sonic nods to Shadow, Knuckles, and Tails as they arrive. "I like this spot. It's relatively far from shore, and there's enough space for a decent amount of people."

Shadow nods. "I like it too. By the way, who's invited to the wedding?"

Sonic chuckled. "All three of you are. Tails, since I know you best, would you like to be the Best Man?" Tails was shocked, but nodded.

"Sure, but what about Cream?"

The royal blue hedgehog smiles. "I have a feeling Amy will ask Cream to be the Maid Of Honor."

Tails nodded. "Since she's out with Amy, I have a feeling it'll come up."

Sonic looked over the sandbar one last time. "This is it. This area is the place I want to marry Amy." Pulling out the blue Chaos Emerald, Sonic held it up to the clear blue sky. "I like how this matches. Anyway, even though I invited you in person, you'll all still get invites. Wedding tradition, you know?" Shadow, Knuckles, and Tails nodded. Sonic smiled. "See you at the bachelor party, and thanks for helping me." Using Chaos Control, Sonic is seen back on shore, then bolting away.

Knuckles smiles. "Nothing to do now but wait for the invites."

Tails nodded and then turned to Shadow. "Let's go home." Shadow teleported the three of them back to shore, and they go their separate ways.

-With Amy, Cream, Rouge, and Tikal-

Amy and Cream were in the maternity section of the clothing store when Rouge and Tikal saw them. Walking over, the white bat and pinkish echidna asked Amy why she was in the maternity section. The sakura hedgehog giggled, her green eyes sparkling. "It's because I'm pregnant with Sonic's child." Rouge and Tikal froze. Cream waved her hand in their faces. "Hello? You two there?"

Rouge spoke first. "You're pregnant?" Amy nodded.

Tikal asked the next question. "When did you find out?"

The pink hedgehog smiled. "Last week. I'm doing my maternity shopping ahead of time. I want to already have the clothes when the time comes, you know?"

Rouge nods. "Good thinking, hon. By the way, have you started planning the wedding yet?" Another nod from Amy.

"I'm working on the invites, and Sonikku went to find a spot to get married."

Tikal smiles. "Who's invited?"

Amy laughed. "You had to ask? All three of you are. Cream, since I have a feeling Sonic will have Tails be the Best Man, would you like to be the Maid Of Honor?"

The chocolate eyes of the rabbit grew wide, and then she began jumping up and down with excitement. "Yes. Yes, of course Amy! I'd love to!"

Rouge's aquamarine eyes and Tikal's sapphire eyes flash with jealousy, but they smiled, kind of. The white bat turned to the rose-pink hedgehog. "When can we expect the invites?"

Amy thought for a few seconds. "You should get them in the next few days."

Tikal nodded. "We'll see you soon, Amy." Rouge and Tikal walk away, leaving Amy and Cream to resume their shopping.

-Sonic's house-

Sonic is making grilled cheese sandwiches when Amy walks in. "Sonikku! I'm home!"

Sonic laughs. "I'm in the kitchen Ames!"

Putting her things in Sonic's room, Amy walked into the kitchen and kissed Sonic. "Hello my love. What are you making?"

Sonic returned the kiss and put a grilled cheese sandwich on a nearby plate. "I'm making grilled cheese sandwiches. Here's yours."

Amy giggled. "Thank you, my sweet Sonic."

Sonic nuzzled Amy under the chin, making her blush deeply. "You're welcome, my darling Amy Rose." She skipped into the living room where

the blank wedding invites sat. Sonic soon joined Amy, who nuzzled him, making him blush.

Turning to the invites, Sonic looked at Amy. "Well, what colors did you want?"

Amy thought hard for a minute. "I think we'll go with the traditional black and white, but I want the wedding to be in a unique place."

Sonic smiled. "I think I have just the place in mind. I'll show you after we get the invites done."

The pink hedgehog nodded. "Okay. Is Tails going to be the Best Man?" The speedy hedgehog nodded.

"He agreed to it. I'm assuming Cream is to be the Maid Of Honor?"

Amy nods again. "She was really excited about it."

Sonic smiled. "Good. Now, month and time?"

This time, Amy frowns. "I have no clue." Sonic laughed, and Amy punched his arm playfully. "Do you have any ideas?"

He nodded. "With the location, I think we should go for late spring or early summer, so sometime in June would be good."

Amy agreed. "How does the 16th of June sound? That would be our 15 month anniversary, and it'll be easy for you to remember."

Sonic laughed and tickled Amy. "I've done just fine remembering our anniversaries, thank you."

After a short tickle fight, the hedgehog couple cleans up from their lunch and go back to the invites. Amy looked at her fiancé. "So Sonic, how do we describe the location?"

Sonic grins. He takes the invites, and writes on Tails' invite: 'Tails, we'll need the Blue Typhoon.' On the rest, he writes: 'Tails will provide the

transportation.' Amy gave her blue stud a confused look. Sonic giggled at his pink lover's face. "Shadow, Knuckles, and Tails already know where I plan to go. Soon, you will too." They finish the invites, and walk out the door. Sonic locks it while Amy puts the invites in his mailbox. Sonic joins Amy and takes her hand. "Ready?" Amy nods. "Let's go." The two hedgehogs kiss, and they walk to the spot.

-At the beach, 10 minutes later-

Sonic and Amy reach the shore where Sonic had seen the sandbar. Sonic pulls Amy close. "Hold on tight Ames." Amy wraps her arms around his neck. "Chaos Control." The two hedgehogs vanish in a flash of blue light, then reappear on the sandbar. Sonic smiles at Amy. "Take a look around, and tell me what you think."

Amy takes a few minutes to explore the area, which was now starting to get covered with water. Amy runs back to Sonic and hugs him tightly. "Oh Sonikku! I love it! Let's get married here!" Sonic nods, chuckling. "

"Then we'll get married here." The hedgehog couple kisses, then Sonic teleports them back to shore. Taking Amy's hand, Sonic begins walking down the shore. "We still have to take care of the reverend to perform the wedding and also catering."

Amy smiles. "Any ideas?"

Sonic nods. "Let's head to the church to see if there's anyone that can perform a wedding." The pink hedgehog agrees with her blue stud, and they walk to the church to find a reverend.

-Station Square Church-

Sonic and Amy walk into the massive brick building holding hands. A reverend comes to meet them. "Hello there. I'm Reverend Spolowicz. What can I do for you?"

Sonic shakes the reverend's hand. "I'm Sonic and this is my fiancée, Amy Rose. We're getting married on June 16th around 2 PM, and we need

someone to perform the wedding."

Reverend Spolowicz nods. "I see. Well, if you like, I'd be willing to perform the wedding. It's been a while since I've done one." Amy looked up at Sonic, who nodded. "We both would like you to perform the wedding, Reverend."

He smiles. "Thank you. Where are you getting married?"

Amy smiles. "We're getting married on the sandbar offshore near the condos."

Reverend Spolowicz chuckles. "How are we getting there?"

Sonic smiles. "Tails Prower will provide the transportation. The reception will be held in the park."

The reverend nodded. "Who do you have catering to the event?"

Sonic frowned. "We haven't decided yet."

Reverend Spolowicz nodded. "I have a catering company, and we'd be more than willing to cater the event."

Amy nodded, and looked to Sonic. "Well Sonikku?" The blue hedgehog winks at his pink fiancée.

"Reverend, you have a deal."

Reverend Spolowicz smiles. "Good. I'll call you in a few months and we can go over the details, okay?"

Sonic nods, shaking the reverend's hand again. "Sounds good. Talk to you soon." The reverend goes about his business, and Sonic and Amy exit the church. Sonic picks Amy up bridal style, and rockets back to his house.

-5 minutes later-

Sonic and Amy walk in the door, and find a message from Doctor Alnilam.

"Sonic and Amy, this is Doctor Alnilam. I'm calling to schedule your first sonogram appointment. Please call me when you get this message. Thank you."

Amy picks up the phone, and calls the doctor. After a 10 minute conversation, Amy hangs up the phone. "Sonic, the first sonogram is scheduled for May the 17th."

Sonic nodded, writing the event on the wall calendar. "What time?"

Amy sighs. "10 AM. Always with the early times."

Sonic finishes writing the event on the calendar and joins Amy on the couch. He lies down on his back, and Amy crawls on top of him, laying her head on his chest. It was around 3 PM and there was a babies-related marathon on TV. Sonic and Amy watch the marathon, learning all they can about babies.

10 PM comes around and the hedgehog couple can barely stay awake. Amy climbs off of Sonic and locks the front door. Sonic turns off the TV and the lights, and carries Amy to his room. Amy climbs into bed naked. Sonic also climbs in naked, and cuddles Amy to him, smiling at her sighs of content.

Five minutes passes, and Sonic and Amy are in a deep sleep.

The first sonogram

As the months pass Sonic and Amy get more wedding details done. Reverend Spolowicz worked out the catering details, and Amy made sure the wedding guests had received the invites. After a full hour of calls and decision making, Sonic and Amy flopped on the couch.

Sonic took in a breath. "Wow Amy.... Planning a wedding is hard."

Amy nodded and gently placed a hand on her enlarged belly. "I know, but it'll all be worth it in the end, Sonikku."

Sonic smiles, entwining his hand with Amy's hand, which was still on her stomach. "I can't wait for the child to arrive, Amy."

Amy nuzzled Sonic's chin, sighing with content. "Me either, Sonic. My dreams are coming true. All I need is the wedding and our child, and my dreams will be complete."

The cobalt speedster blushed. "I'm glad I could make those dreams come true."

The sakura hedgehog blushed now. "I wasn't about to let someone else make them come true, Sonic. Only you would have, and now that we're engaged, I wouldn't change anything."

Sonic winked at Amy. "I wouldn't change anything either, my love."

Being careful of her belly, Sonic's emerald green eyes met Amy's jade green eyes, and the hedgehog couple kissed. They would look back on this kiss and say it was one of the best kisses they'd ever shared.

Just after the kiss broke, the phone rang. Sonic answered it. "Hello?"

The caller was the doctor. "Sonic, it's Doctor Alnilam."

The blue hedgehog nodded. "Hey doctor. What's going on?"

The doctor chuckles. "I'm just reminding you about your sonogram for next week."

Sonic nods again. "We haven't forgotten, and we're really looking forward to it."

Dr Alnilam nodded. "Good. I'll see you on the 17th. The sonogram is in the Care Center at 10 AM."

Another nod from Sonic. "Okay. Thank you Doctor Alnilam."

Sonic hung up the phone and turned to Amy. "It was Doctor Alnilam reminding us about our sonogram for appointment next week."

She smiled and cuddled up to Sonic. "I can't wait Sonikku."

Sonic wrapped his arms around Amy's shoulders. "Me either Ames. I love you."

Amy gave a content sigh. "I love you too."

After some cuddling, the hedgehog couple goes back to planning the wedding.

-May 17th, 9:30 AM-

The day of the sonogram arrives, and we find Sonic and Amy sitting in the waiting room of the Station Square Care Center. There's no one else in the room. The hedgehog couple is sharing the couch, Sonic sitting with Amy's head on his lap. As usual, Sonic is wearing a blue muscle shirt with his blue speed shoes and dark green shorts. Amy had gone with a light green tank top, pink skirt, and green sandals.

As they waited, Sonic had a handful of Amy's soft quills and was gently massaging her head. Amy had a content smile on her face. Her green eyes were closed, and she was purring. Sonic loved it when he heard and felt Amy purr. 10 AM comes around, and the door to the exam rooms opens.

Doctor Alnilam walks out and sees the hedgehog couple. "Glad you could make it. We'll be in Exam Room 10 today, so please come with me."

Sonic nods, and gently tells Amy it was time to go to the exam rooms. The sakura hedgehog stretched, opened her jade green eyes, and stood up. Sonic stood as well, took Amy's hand, and walked with her to Exam Room 10. Upon entering the room, the green eyes of the hedgehog couple see a strange machine with various attachments and a screen.

Amy gives Dr Alnilam a confused look. "What kind of machine is that?"

The doctor chuckled. "This is the sonogram machine, also called the ultrasound machine. Along with a special jelly, we will use it to get the first look of the growing baby."

Sonic was impressed. "I have to ask how long it will take. I'm not thinking it'll be too long, given the impressive machinery, but curiosity got to me."

Doctor Alnilam smiled. "No, it's not going to take very long to get the image. The image can be viewed as long as the device is touching some area over the baby."

The cobalt speedster turns to his pink fiancée. "Alright Ames. Up on the bed."

It takes a minute, but Amy does manage to get on the bed. Leaning back, Amy feels her back muscles relax. "Oooohhhh.... I needed that."

Sonic chuckled and stood beside Amy, holding her left hand, toying with her engagement ring. "You haven't taken this ring off once, have you?"

Amy blushed, smiling at him. "Don't expect me to, because it won't happen."

Sonic smiled, and gently kissed Amy. He feels Amy's right hand on his left cheek, gently holding his head as the kiss deepens.

Doctor Alnilam watches this, and smiles. "When you two are done, we can begin."

Sonic gives the 'Give us a minute' motion to the doctor, and puts his attention back on the kiss. After a couple of minutes the kiss is broken by Sonic.

Amy pouts. "Why did you stop?"

Sonic chuckles. "I want to see our child."

Amy nods. "Fine, but you owe me when we get home."

Sonic grinned, and nodded to Doctor Alnilam, who got a tube of the special jelly. "Okay Miss Rose, I need you to lift your shirt and lower your skirt so that your belly is fully exposed."

The jade green eyes of the pink hedgehog look to the emerald green eyes of the blue hedgehog. Sonic nods. "I'll be right here Amy." She nods, and does as the doctor had asked. Nodding, Dr Alnilam begins layering the special jelly on Amy's stomach.

Once done, he fires up the sonogram machine. "Okay Miss Rose, I'll need you to put on the blood pressure cuff and push the green button."

Amy puts on the cuff, pushes the green button, and the doctor links it to the ultrasound machine. Sonic watches all this, curious and a little nervous.

Doctor Alnilam takes an attachment and makes a few passes on Amy's belly. "Any minute now.... There."

The hedgehog couple looks in amazement and joy at the image. There on the screen is the tiny hedgehog baby. Amy squeezes Sonic's hand, tears in her eyes. Sonic smiled, too excited to do anything but stare.

Giving the attachment to Sonic, Dr Alnilam takes out a pen and points out the various features. "You can see the hands here, the feet here, these are the eyes. The ears are right here. This thin line is the umbilical cord. That's how the fetus gets its nutrients."

Sonic is the first to find his voice. "Can you tell if it'll be a male or female child?"

The doctor nodded. "Look right here. It's tough to pick out, but can you see this little stub right here?" The hedgehogs nod, and the doctor continues. "This is a male child."

Amy sniffles and Sonic wipes her tears away. "Oh Sonic, I want to hold him so much."

Sonic nods. "That makes two of us, but you still have a little under four months to go."

The doctor smiled. "That reminds me. When are you two getting married?"

Amy fixes her clothing and sits up, straightening out her quills. "A little over a month from now."

Dr Alnilam nodded. "I can only assume you'll celebrate by performing the mating ritual on the honeymoon. If you do, keep this in mind: Until the baby is born, your honeymoon will be the last time you two can safely have intercourse. Anything sexual done during the third trimester could be fairly dangerous to the baby, so make it last."

Sonic and Amy nodded. "We'll make it last."

The doctor washes his hands and turns off the machine. "Okay, you two are free to go. However, you'll need to come back two months from now for another sonogram."

Sonic shakes the doctor's hand. "See you on July 10th."

He helps Amy from the bed and the hedgehog couple walks home. On the way they talk about their child. What color will the fur be? What to name it? Sonic chuckled, saying all questions would be answered in a few short months. Amy giggled, and leaned against Sonic as they walked.

-Sonic's house, 11 AM-

The hedgehog couple walks into Sonic's house. Amy sat heavily on the couch. Sonic grabbed the other invites on the table and bolted to the

mailbox. Putting up the flag, Sonic ran back inside the house, and closes the door.

Amy's not on the couch when Sonic gets back. "Amy?"

The reply comes from Sonic's room. "In your room Sonikku."

He walks up and finds Amy under the bed sheets, wearing nothing at all. "I told you that you owed me for stopping the kiss." The pink hedgehog rolls over, her back facing the blue hedgehog. "You owe me a massage."

Sonic frowns a bit, but takes off his shoes and climbs in behind Amy. "Alright Ames. I want you to relax. I'll help you feel better."

Amy feels Sonic's strong hands on her head and neck, gently rubbing her neck muscles and various points on her head. "Ohhh, Sonic...."

After spending a few minutes there, Sonic moves to Amy's delicate shoulders, slowly working out the tension.

"Mmmmmmm...." is all Amy can say.

Sonic spends 5 minutes on Amy's shoulders, then moves to her back. "Sonic, that feels incredible...."

The royal blue hedgehog smiled, his deep voice sending shivers through Amy's body. "Good. I'm glad it's helping you relax."

The rose-pink hedgehog nodded, then Sonic moves to her legs, feet, and ankles. Amy says nothing. Sonic feels the sheets vibrating a little, then he chuckles. Amy's green eyes are closed, and she's purring. Sonic finishes the massage and pulls the sheets over himself and Amy. Removing his clothing, Sonic wraps the purring Amy in his arms.

She rolls over to face him and snuggles as close as she can to him. The hedgehog couple shares a sweet kiss then Amy speaks, her eyes closed the whole time. "Thank you Sonic. I feel much better."

Sonic smiles. "You're welcome. Rest now Amy."

Amy nods, yawns, and resumes purring. Sonic closed his eyes and purred as well. Throughout the day, Sonic and Amy get up, eat, and climb back in bed. The hedgehog couple also talks about their coming child and the coming wedding. Dinner time came around, and Sonic went downstairs.

He made fettucine alfredo for himself, and a salad for Amy. Walking back upstairs, Sonic and Amy eat dinner, watching some baby shows on TV. After dinner, Sonic cleans up and rejoins Amy in bed, wrapping her in his arms.

Turning off the TV, Amy closes her green eyes. "I love you Sonic. So much."

Sonic kisses her. "I love you very much too, Amy."

In a few minutes, Amy purrs herself to sleep. Sonic turns off the lamp on his bedside table, and soon he's asleep as well.

The bachelor and bachelorette parties

It's now June. Amy Rose has her dress, Sonic has his tuxedo, and the wedding has been finalized. It's the night before the wedding and the hedgehogs are nowhere near each other, as wedding superstition dictates.

Sonic and Amy are having their bachelor and bachelorette parties. Amy was at Cream's house, since her house was destroyed by Sally Acorn over a year ago. Sonic was at his house, and things were really going off over there. Let's take a journey to both parties....

-Sonic's house-

We find Sonic, Tails, Knuckles, and Shadow on the living room couch. There's some type of club music playing and two females are gyrating to the beat.

However, Sonic and Tails are none of their concern. The two strippers are focused on Knuckles and Shadow, since Knuckles was on rocky terms with Tikal, and Shadow had recently broken up with Rouge. Tails and Cream had been engaged nearly 8 months, and Tails had somehow convinced Sonic that there should be strippers at this party. Sonic had no interest in the two women, since his heart solely belonged to Amy. The night started off like any other, with a few drinking games and dares. Then the strippers showed up, and they took over.

As the music ended, one stripper took Shadow to the bathroom, and soon Sonic heard loud noises. Knuckles was led to the guest room. Once they left, Sonic smiled an evil smile, and got out two video cameras. Tossing one to Tails, Sonic chuckled. "I don't know about you, but I'm filming this." Sonic follows Knuckles and Tails goes to the bathroom, an evil smile on his face.

-Cream's house-

Vector and Vanilla were off on their honeymoon, but were returning tomorrow for Sonic and Amy's wedding. Amy, Cream, Rouge, and Tikal were in the house unsupervised. There were also two male strippers there. Amy had no interest, and neither did Cream.

However, Rouge and Tikal were arguing about who was better in bed. The white bat and pinkish echidna argued back and forth until Rouge had enough. "That's it! I guess I'll have to show you that I'm better!"

Tikal grinned, her eyes lighting up. "Bring it on Rouge!"

The two male strippers were dragged out of the room, making Cream and Amy giggle. The rabbit turned to the hedgehog. "How is it so far?"

Amy frowned. "I miss my Sonikku."

Cream smiled. "Don't you worry, Amy. Tomorrow, everything will be just fine." Amy nodded.

"Still, I want to talk to him."

Cream frowned. "And curse your marriage? Yes, Sonic has strippers at his house, but we have some here, too. If I know Sonic, he'll be more concerned about staying faithful. I know you'll be faithful to him, Amy, and you have to trust he'll be faithful to you. If you want, I'll check on him for you." Amy gives Cream her cell phone, and the rabbit calls Sonic.

-With Sonic-

The cobalt speedster is filming Knuckles when his phone rings. Looking at the caller I.D., Sonic sees it's Amy. 'What's Ames calling for?' Curious, he answers the phone. "Hello?"

Cream's voice responds. "Hey Sonic, it's Cream."

Sonic chuckles. "What's going on, Cream?"

The rabbit sighs. "Amy's concerned about you and she was going to call you, but wedding superstition dictates that no contact should be made

between the bride and groom on the night before the wedding."

Sonic shrugs. "If she's curious, I'm not cheating on her."

Cream hesitates. "Then why am I hearing loud moaning?"

Sonic giggles. "I'm filming Knuckles and one of the strippers."

Cream gasps, then laughs. "Really? He's letting you?"

Sonic chuckles. "He's drunk, so he won't care. Anyway, how's Amy doing?"

A pause. "She's fine. She's sitting here beside me. Rouge and Tikal dragged the male strippers to the guest room to settle their "Who's better in bed" argument."

Now the blue hedgehog laughs. "Now that's funny." Cream gets a little concerned now.

"Where's Miles?"

Sonic giggled again. "He's filming Shadow and the other stripper." The rabbit sweat drops.

"I see. Have him call me please."

Sonic nods. "Will do, and I'll see you at the wedding tomorrow."

Cream nods. "Bye Sonic." The phone call ends, and Sonic resumes filming.

- Cream's house-

Cream ends the call, and gives the phone back to Amy. "Sonic's filming Knuckles getting his freak on with one of the strippers."

Amy laughed. "What about Tails?"

Cream nodded. "He's filming Shadow with the other stripper." Cream and Amy turned to see the male strippers slowly make their way out of the

house.

Rogue and Tikal appeared behind them, grinning. Amy looked at them. "So, who's better?"

Tikal frowned. "Rouge is."

The white bat nodded. "I tried to tell you. Don't worry though, you went beyond my expectations."

Cream walked to her mother's secret alcohol stash in the refrigerator. "Time for the drinks!" Since Amy was pregnant, she didn't drink anything but water. Rouge and Tikal, both 24, greedily chugged their drinks. Cream sipped her drink slowly.

As the night went on, Rouge and Tikal eventually passed out from their drinks. Cream carried them to the guest room, and then climbed into her bed. Amy turned off the lights, locked the door, and took the other guest bedroom. Soon Amy's asleep, dreaming of her wedding tomorrow.

-Sonic's house-

Knuckles and Shadow finished with the strippers, and the women left. Putting the cameras away, Sonic joined Shadow, Knuckles, and Tails in the living room. Tails had set up a poker table, and the guys played as they drank more beer. Knuckles just accepted more beers, since he was already drunk. Sonic and Tails were the only two completely sober. Shadow was buzzed.

As the night went on, Knuckles wound up passed out on the floor. Shadow ended up on the sleeper sofa. Tails took the guest bedroom. Sonic turned off the lights, locked the door, and went to bed.

Climbing under the bed sheets, Sonic frowned. He had gotten used to having Amy in his arms, but for the first time in a very long time, Amy wasn't there. Sonic didn't worry though. He would have her back soon enough. Closing his eyes, Sonic falls asleep, and dreams of the wedding and his child.

The wedding

The day of the wedding had arrived. The picnic area in the park was decorated with balloons, ribbons, and pictures of Sonic and Amy through the years. The wedding cake was being kept in a refrigeration truck until it was needed.

It was a warm, sunny day and various news reporters stood on the shore, trying to get pictures. They didn't get the chance, because the guests were taken to the sandbar by Tails. The Blue Typhoon sat just off the sandbar, a huge speaker on the side of it. Vanilla, Vector, Charmy, Espio, Chris, Uncle Chuck, Rachel, Mark, even Doctor Alnilam was there.

Sonic stood with Reverend Spolowicz on the sandbar, nervously awaiting the arrival of Amy Rose. The sandbar had no decorations, since the flowing water would just wash them away. Behind Sonic, Tails, Knuckles, and Shadow stood, all wearing their tuxedos. Rouge, Tikal, and Cream showed no trace of a hangover, and they were all in their bridesmaid dresses as well. Everyone was barefoot because of the ¼ inch of water gently flowing over the sandbar.

2 PM comes, and Reverend Spolowicz gives Tails a nod. Tails pushes a button on his wrist, and the Pachelbel Canon began playing from the speaker in the side of the Blue Typhoon. A ramp extends from the side of the giant ship, and a door opens.

Slowly Amy Rose appears and begins walking down the ramp to the sandbar. Sonic nearly faints, and Tails has to help him stay on his feet. "Easy buddy. We don't want Amy freaking out now do we?"

Sonic steadies himself, and looks back to his fiancée. 'DAMN she's hot.' was all the blue hedgehog could think to himself.

The dress was a brilliant white color and stopped three inches below Amy's knees. She's also barefoot because of the water over the sandbar. The dress has been custom fitted to make room for Amy's expanded belly. The cut in

the front of the dress showed off Amy's cleavage very well, and her white veil swirled gently in the breeze. The edges of Amy's soft pink quills could be seen draped over her shoulders. The pink hedgehog's green eyes sparkled with a brilliance only Sonic had ever seen. As Amy reached her blue stud, the music stopped playing.

Reverend Spolowicz began the wedding. "Ladies and gentlemen, we are gathered today in the sight of God to join Sonic the Hedgehog and Amy Rose in holy matrimony. If anyone has any reason why these two should not be wed, speak now or forever hold your peace."

Silence greets the reverend, and he turns to Sonic. "Mr. Hedgehog, do you have anything to say to Miss Rose?"

Sonic nodded, and turned to Amy. "Amy, from day one, when I saved you from Mecha Sonic on Little Planet, I always thought you were cute. I'm sorry I ran away from you so much. I was shy about admitting my feelings to you, and it took until the night Sally Acorn beat you for me to finally admit to myself that I loved you. I couldn't risk Doctor Robotnik making you a target in his attempts to capture me. But once he was gone, and I saw you in the hospital, I realized that I needed you in my life. I need you beside me, and always have needed you beside me. I promise you that I will always be by your side to protect you and our child, and that I'll love you and only you throughout our entire marriage." Amy wiped a few tears from her eyes.

Reverend Spolowicz smiles and turns to Amy. "Miss Rose, do you have anything to say to Sonic?"

She nodded and took a breath, trying to keep from crying tears of joy. "From that first day on Little Planet, when you saved me from Mecha Sonic, I've loved you. For 10 years I held out for you and you alone. All my life I've wanted to be your wife and have your children. I was actually jealous of your relationship with Sally Acorn, but when you asked me to be your girlfriend, all that went away. I promise you that I will never leave your side, and that I'll love only you throughout our entire marriage." Sonic wiped a tear from his eyes.

Reverend Spolowicz turned to Sonic again. "Mr. Hedgehog, take Amy's hands, and repeat after me."

The blue hedgehog took his pink lover's hands, and repeated the words the reverend spoke. "I, Sonic the Hedgehog, take thee Amy Rose, to have and to hold, in sickness and in health, for richer or poorer, as long as we both shall live."

Reverend Spolowicz turned to Amy now. "Miss Rose, repeat after me please."

Amy's jade green eyes sparkled from behind her white veil as she looked into Sonic's emerald green eyes as she repeated the words the reverend spoke to her. "I, Amy Rose, take thee Sonic, to have and to hold, in sickness and in health, for richer or poorer, as long as we both shall live."

The reverend nodded. "May I have the rings please?" Tails and Cream stepped forward and gave the rings to the reverend.

Giving Amy's ring to Sonic, Reverend Spolowicz has Sonic put it on Amy's hand. "Sonic, do you take Amy Rose to be your lawfully wedded wife?"

The blue hedgehog smiles. "I do."

The pink hedgehog sniffled. The reverend has Amy put Sonic's ring on his hand. "Amy Rose, do you take Sonic to be your lawfully wedded husband?"

Amy nods. "I do."

Reverend Spolowicz smiles. "By the power vested in me, I now pronounce you husband and wife. Sonic, you may kiss the bride."

Sonic lifts Amy's veil and gently cups her face, softly kissing her. Amy immediately deepens the kiss, her tongue meeting his and her hands taking handfuls of Sonic's long quills. Cheers erupted from the crowd, and the reporters on the shore did their best to take pictures. No one at the wedding knows if they succeeded. Once the kiss breaks, Sonic and Amy share a hug,

tears falling from their eyes. Everyone then piled into the Blue Typhoon and Tails flew them to the reception.

-The reception, Station Square park-

Reverend Spolowicz' catering company had all the food ready when the wedding party arrived. It wasn't long before they did either. On several tables, there was spaghetti, seafood, salad, and the Olive Garden breadsticks were there in abundance, thanks to Rachel. Hamburgers, steak, chicken, turkey, all kinds of meat and everything in between was also there.

At one end of the table farthest to the left, the wedding cake was brought out. It was a huge four-tier cake. The first tier was chocolate cake, the second tier was vanilla cake, the third tier was strawberry cake, and the fourth tier was lemon cake. On the fourth tier stood miniature versions of Sonic and Amy in their wedding outfits.

The Blue Typhoon arrives, and the door opens. Sonic, Amy, and the rest of the wedding party piled out of the giant ship, Sonic and Amy being the last to exit. Everyone cycles through the lines, piling the food on their plates and getting beverages. The drinks ranged from tea to various sodas, and there were also some alcoholic drinks, just in case.

About half an hour goes by, then Tails stands up to make a speech, because he's the Best Man. "May I have your attention please?"

Everyone quiets down, all eyes on the twin-tailed fox. "Thank you. As the Best Man, I have to give some kind of speech, so here we go."

Tails takes a breath, and begins his speech. "I've known Sonic for 15 years now. We met when I was four years old. Sonic helped me out, in a way. I was being made fun of because of my two tails. I wound up asking Sonic if I could have him as my older brother. He said yes, and then offered to have me along as his sidekick. I agreed, since I thought Sonic was the coolest guy around. I still think he is, even though we're grown up now. Sonic's always the first person to help someone, mainly because he's so damn fast."

This last statement gets a few laughs, then Tails continued. "I'd always had a feeling Sonic liked Amy, but it never showed until the night Amy was beaten by Sally Acorn. I don't know if Amy remembers, but here's what Sonic told her. He said: 'I'm sorry I ran away from you for so long. I know it hurt you, but I couldn't let Robotnik target you in his quest to capture me. I'm also sorry I couldn't reach you in time to keep Sally Acorn from beating you with the pipe, or to keep Robotnik from grabbing you.'"

Tails pauses, then continues again. "Sonic also said he was sorry for not telling Amy how he felt sooner, and then he kissed her. Cream can back that up. I don't know what was in that kiss Sonic gave Amy, but it was enough that Amy was able to leave the hospital that same night." Tails looked to Sonic. "The point of my speech is this: On the outside, Sonic may not show his emotions, but he's one of the most caring people I know."

After a toast to the newlyweds and a few more speeches, Sonic stands. "While we're on the subject of mushy stuff, I need Shadow, Knuckles, Tails, and Chris to join me. Ames, you stand in the middle of this open space here."

Everyone gets into position and Sonic turns to face his wife. "Amy, this is a song I've wanted to sing to you for a long time now." Sonic counts off the beat, and the song begins.

Amy gasps in delight. The song the five guys were singing is called "Forever" by the Beach Boys, and it was one of Amy's all-time favorite songs. What made it better was the fact that Sonic, Tails, Knuckles, Chris, and Shadow were singing it acapella, without musical instruments. Each note, word, and harmony was hit perfectly.

When the song ended the pink hedgehog grabbed her blue hedgehog husband and kissed him passionately. There was a group "Awwwww" as the kiss deepened.

When the kiss broke, Sonic's emerald eyes looked straight into Amy's jade green eyes. "I love you so much Amy Rose."

Amy smiled. "I love you too, Sonic."

Knuckles made himself known at this point. "Cut the cake already!"

Sonic laughed and led Amy to the four-tier cake. Amy picks up the knife and Sonic stands behind Amy, putting his hand on top of hers. Camera lights flash as the newlywed hedgehogs cut the cake, gently pushing the knife into the chocolate layer of the cake.

Amy takes some of the frosting and playfully puts some on Sonic's nose. The pink hedgehog then proceeded to lick it off, making the cobalt speedster blush. Sonic put some frosting on Amy's left ear, and gently nibbled it off. Amy felt her body heat up as Sonic nibbled the frosting off of her ear.

Holding Sonic in place, she whispered to her husband. "Just you wait until the honeymoon."

Sonic pulled away, and winked. "I'm looking forward to it, my love."

A few hours later only Sonic, Tails, Amy, and Cream remained at the reception site. Tails had caught the bouquet of flowers, and given it to Cream. She responded by kissing him, and nearly making him faint from the passion in that kiss.

Tails smiles at the newlyweds. "Congratulations you two."

Sonic hugs his little brother. "Thanks Tails."

Cream hugs Amy. "I'm so happy for you Amy. I can't wait to get married now."

Amy laughs. "Believe me, it's worth the wait."

After the gifts are loaded into the Blue Typhoon, Tails takes Sonic and Amy back to Sonic's house.

-Sonic's house-

The Blue Typhoon lands in Sonic's back yard. Sonic and Tails get all the wedding gifts into the house, then Tails and Cream fly off. Sonic helps Amy

into the house and once inside, Amy works her way out of the dress.

Pointing to her right leg, Amy smiles at her husband. "Sonikku?"

The royal blue hedgehog turns to the sakura hedgehog. "Yes, my love?"

Amy gives Sonic a wink. "You missed something during the reception."

Sonic grinned. "Well, so I have. Let me fix that."

Sonic bends down to Amy's leg and gently begins to work the garter off of his wife. Amy begins moaning as she feels Sonic's teeth gently nibbling the garter off of her leg. "Ooohhh, Sonic."

After Sonic works the garter off he puts it on his head, making Amy laugh. "You're such a dork."

Sonic chuckled. "Just remember that you said yes."

Amy smiled. "I wouldn't have it any other way, Sonikku."

Sonic kissed Amy. "Me either, babe. Now, let's pack for our honeymoon."

Amy nods and in about half an hour, Sonic and Amy are packed. The newlywed hedgehogs now lay in Sonic's bed talking about their honeymoon destination. Amy was trying to get Sonic to tell her where they were going.

"So Sonic, where are we going for our honeymoon?"

Sonic shook his head. "I can't tell you."

Amy uses the Puppy Face on her husband. "Please Sonikku? Pleeeeease?"

Sonic feels himself melt inside, but manages to resist the Puppy Face. "No no, I can't say just yet."

Amy pouts, but nods. "Okay Sonikku. Now, I need some rest. I'm pretty sure I'll need it tomorrow night."

Sonic nods, and pulls the sheets over them. Soon, they're asleep. In a few hours Sonic and Amy get up and eat some of the leftover food from the wedding. After they eat, which is dinner at this point, since it's about 9 PM, Sonic turns off the lights, and locks the door. Joining Amy in bed again, Sonic snuggles Amy to him.

Amy sighs, and kisses Sonic. "Goodnight my darling Sonic. I love you."

Sonic smiles. "Goodnight my lovely Amy Rose. I love you too."

Another kiss, and the hedgehogs fall into a deep, peaceful sleep.

A wild honeymoon

Sonic wakes up around 9 AM on June 17th, the day after the wedding. Looking down at his still-sleeping wife, Sonic feels a chill go down his spine. It felt so good to finally call Amy his wife.

Gently rolling away from Amy, Sonic sits up, and goes to get a shower, but then he hears Amy's sleepy voice. "Don't go."

Sonic turns around to see a pair of green eyes and a pouting look on Amy's face. The blue blur laughs and climbs back into bed, his emerald green eyes looking at his rose-pink wife. "Well, we can spend a few more minutes here, but we need to get going if we're going to make it on time."

Amy's eyes widen as the realization hit her. "Of course! Our honeymoon!"

Sonic laughs. "Come on, let's shower and head to the shipyard."

He helps Amy out of bed and to the bathroom. 30 minutes later the new married couple is ready to go to the shipyard. Amy takes Sonic's hand, smiling and holding her suitcase. Sonic picks his suitcase up and smiles at Amy. "Chaos Control." The two hedgehogs vanish from the room and get to the shipyard in a few seconds.

-Station Square Shipyard-

Sonic and Amy appear at the ramp of a giant cruise ship. Amy gasps. "A cruise, Sonic?"

He nods, giving the tickets to the attendant. "I've had this planned for a while now."

-Flashback-

We see Sonic picking up the phone while Amy rested in his room. It's May the 8th, two days before the first sonogram. The cruise liner agent answers. "Hello. What can I help you with?"

Sonic nods. "Yes, I'd like to book a cruise please."

The agent taps a few keys on her keyboard. "Well, our next opening isn't until June 17th, since all of our May cruises are booked."

Sonic nodded. "That's perfect. My fiancée and I are getting married the day before that, and we need a place for a honeymoon."

The agent smiled on her end of the call. "Congratulations. We have a wedding special that includes a one week stay in a 5 star hotel."

Sonic thought for a few seconds. "Sounds good. What time does the ship leave, and how long is the cruise?" As the conversation continues, Sonic begins to think of what he'll need to pack, and also mentions that Amy would be about 6 months pregnant by the time the cruise date arrives.

The rest of the details get worked out, and the woman tells Sonic the tickets will be there in a few days. Sonic thanks the woman, hangs up the phone, and runs upstairs to check on Amy.

-End flashback-

Sonic and Amy walk up the boat ramp and to the Honeymoon Cabin. Opening the door, Sonic carries Amy into the room bridal style, and gently puts Amy down. Getting their bags, Sonic rejoins his wife, who's staring around the room. "So, what do you think my love?"

Amy rubs noses with Sonic. "It's beautiful."

Sonic winks. "It's ours for the next three days. At that time, we'll leave this cruise for a one week stay in a 5 star hotel."

The pink hedgehog giggles. "Sonic, you spoil me."

He nods. "I know, but when the baby comes we won't be able to get out as often."

Amy kisses her cobalt husband. "I'm sure we'll be just fine." Sonic smiles and the hedgehog newlyweds begin planning their week at the hotel and

surrounding area.

-Three days later-

The giant cruise liner comes into port at the Los Angeles Dockyard. There are no other ships near it, since it's such a large ship as it is. The ramp lowers, and the hedgehog couple walks down, Sonic carrying both suitcases.

The 5 star hotel was a massive building, 50 stories high. It stood on the edge of the Pacific Ocean and provided the guests with incredible sunsets. The sun was still high in the sky though. The air was warm, but comfortable. The hedgehogs walked into the lobby of the hotel, their green eyes registering the shock and awe of the area.

Sonic and Amy walked to the front desk. The hotel reservationist smiled at them. "Hello. You must be Sonic and Amy. Your room is on the 37th floor, and it's the Honeymoon Suite. Congratulations, and enjoy your stay."

Sonic thanked him, took the room key, and escorted Amy to the elevator. The hedgehogs smiled as the elevator carried them up, watching floor after floor pass by the glass part of the elevator. After a few minutes the elevator stopped and the heavy steel doors slid open to reveal the 37th floor. Sonic picks up the suitcases and leads Amy down the hallway to the Honeymoon Suite.

"Here it is." Sonic puts the suitcases down, slides the keycard, and opens the door. Sonic puts the suitcases in the room, then carries Amy in bridal style. The mid-afternoon sunlight was shining into the massive room. Sonic and Amy froze as they looked around the room. The four poster bed was twice the size of Sonic's bed, which was huge already. Black lace curtains were draped over the massive bed, giving it a secluded look. The bed sheets, pillows, and pillow cases were all black Persian silk, matching the curtains. The white carpet was imported from France, and the walls were Italian marble.

On the far side of the room was a kitchen, fully stocked with all kinds of food items. There was also a stove, refrigerator, dishwasher, and a sink. On

the left side of the bed stood two doors, also made off the Italian marble. Sonic heaved them open to reveal the bathroom. The tile floor was also Italian, but the shower drew the attention of the hedgehogs. The frame was gold, and it had no doors. The showerhead itself was a foot across and hung down from the ceiling.

Amy gave Sonic a naughty nuzzle. "Sonikku? I'm getting some ideas involving this shower." The cobalt speedster smiled, pulling his pink wife to him.

"We have a week, so we will certainly explore your ideas. Right now we need to go get some dinner." The hedgehogs kiss and go change. Amy changes from her pink maternity dress to a black loose-fitting dress with black sandals. Sonic changed from his blue Hawaiian shirt and green shorts into a black suit with a blue tie. He takes Amy's hand, gets the room key, and escorts Amy to the dining area of the hotel.

-Dining area, second floor-

The steel elevator doors open, revealing the newlywed hedgehogs. Walking into the dining area, the other people there turn and yell "**CONGRATULATIONS!**" to the now blushing hedgehog couple. Sonic turns to Amy and plants a passionate kiss on her silky lips. Cheers erupt and a few camera lights flash. The kiss breaks and Sonic leads Amy to an empty booth.

The waiter comes and both hedgehogs get a sweet tea to drink. For food Amy gets a Caesar Salad, and Sonic gets the Shrimp Scampi. The waiter nods and heads to the kitchen. After 20 minutes, the food and beverages arrive. Sonic thanks the waiter and begins to eat. Amy winks at Sonic, who winks back, and then Amy begins eating her salad.

Half an hour passes, and the honeymooning hedgehogs are just about to finish their dinner. After Amy gets done, Sonic helps her up, leaves a nice tip, and pays for the meal. The applause comes once again as Sonic and Amy leave the dining area and walk back into the elevator. Sonic smiles at Amy and holds her close as the elevator doors close.

-The Honeymoon Suite-

The massive doors to the Honeymoon Suite swing open, revealing Sonic and Amy. The hedgehogs enter the room, and Sonic shuts the doors while Amy goes to the bathroom. Sonic undresses to his boxers and pulls back the lace curtains so he and Amy can get on the bed.

However, that would have to wait. Sonic hears a sultry voice come from the bathroom. "Oh Sonic...." Turning, the blue hedgehog sees his pink wife not wearing anything.

"Yes, my love?" Amy walks to him, hips swaying, and her tail wagging slowly. "I have a desire for you to make me scream for you."

Sonic grins and whispers deeply into Amy's ears. "Allow me to fix that problem, my incredibly sexy wife."

Amy feels chills go down her spine and drags Sonic into the bathroom, her lustful green eyes meeting Sonic's emerald eyes. "If you do, I suggest you do it here."

Sonic nods, and turns on the water for the shower. Amy joins him, and presses against him as the warm water begins falling from the showerhead. Sonic lifts Amy's head, and the two hedgehogs meet lips, then tongues. Their hands began rubbing all over each other, their arousal rising as their fur got wetter.

Amy feels Sonic's member pressing against her flower, and gave him a naughty look. "Well, someone's excited. Let's see if I can help."

Amy trails kisses down Sonic's ripped frame, stopping at his nipples and teasing them like he would do to her. Sonic's hands press Amy's head gently against his chest, loving the feeling of her soft tongue teasing his nipples. "Oh, Amy... That feels good."

After her teasing of Sonic's nipples, Amy kisses each of Sonic's abs on her way down to his member. "Sonikku? What do you want me to do with your little friend here?"

Sonic smiled. "I want you to do what you do best, my love."

Amy nods, and takes a gentle hold of Sonic's organ. The pink hedgehog uses the warm shower water to help her hand slide along as her mouth begins teasing the tip of Sonic's manhood. Sonic moans Amy's name, which makes Amy's hormones go into overdrive. Removing her hand, Amy bobs her hand along Sonic's shaft, her soft tongue twirling along every inch of the huge appendage. Each time made Sonic moan, and Amy loved it. She reached up and began pinching Sonic's nipples as she continued to suck on Sonic's member, which made Sonic's moans get louder.

Sonic reaches down and begins pinching Amy's nipples, being gentle with them. Since Amy was going to be a mother soon, her breasts and nipples had grown in size, preparing for the production of breast milk. Amy moaned loudly as Sonic pinched her sensitive nipples, and bobbed her head faster along Sonic's manhood.

Sonic felt his organ pulse, and looked down at Amy. "Ames, I'm going to come."

Amy smiled, and resumed stroking and sucking Sonic's shaft. It's not too much longer before Sonic reaches orgasm, moaning Amy's name. "Oh, Amy..."

His seed shoots onto Amy's face and breasts. The pink hedgehog moans as Sonic's load sprays onto her, and licks it off. "Mmm... So thick... Tastes so good... I must have more." Sonic nods, and Amy smiles. "You know Sonikku, you should get wet more often."

Sonic chuckles. "We need to do this in the shower more often."

Amy giggled, and turned her attention back to Sonic's member. Sonic's eyes sparkle a bit as Amy takes her swollen breasts and begins massaging Sonic's manhood. More moaning from Sonic prompts Amy to start licking the tip when it becomes visible.

The cobalt speedster can barely stand on his feet and is using the walls to help support him. "Ohh Amy... You have no idea how hot that is to me."

The sakura hedgehog smiles, her sparkling jade green eyes meeting Sonic's emerald green eyes. "I'll do this more often if you want."

Sonic nodded. "You better believe I want you to do this more often."

Amy giggles and keeps massaging Sonic's member with her massive mounds. A few minutes pass, then Sonic makes his announcement. "Amy, I'm going to come again."

She nods, and soon Sonic has another orgasm, again moaning Amy's name. His seed rockets onto Amy's breasts and face again. Amy moans and purrs as it happens.

Looking down, Sonic smiles. "That also looks really hot."

Amy giggles. "I'm glad you think so, Sonikku. Now it's your turn."

Amy leans against one wall of the shower, spreading her legs. Sonic stands over her, his emerald eyes looking over Amy with a hunger only she saw. "You know Sonic, you look really hot. Well, you're really hot anyway, but seeing you wet is making me go crazy."

The blue speedster kneels down to his sakura wife. "The same goes for you, baby. Now, relax and let me go to work."

Amy nodded, and Sonic leaned down to kiss her. Amy holds Sonic close as they kissed, their tongues meeting and wrestling with each other. Sonic broke the kiss and began nibbling on Amy's ears.

She moaned and took handfuls of Sonic's quills. "Oh, Sonic... That feels good."

Sonic works his way down to her neck and shoulders, getting moans all the way. Sonic opens his mouth, and gently bites down on Amy's left shoulder using his fangs. Amy gasps at the new feeling, but her green eyes remain closed in ecstasy. Sonic repeats the motion on Amy's right shoulder, and Amy moans. "Ooohhh, Sonic.... You need to use your fangs more often. That feeling is incredible."

Sonic chuckles. "I will, now that I know you like it." The blue hedgehog trails his kisses down his rose-pink wife's body down to her peach-colored breasts. The purple nipples are soft, and Sonic grins.

"Well, it seems your nipples are soft, my love. Let me fix that."

Amy's eyes light up. "You can fix that? How?" Amy knew the answer, but wanted to hear Sonic say it.

He winks. "How, you ask? Like this." Leaning his head down, Sonic's tongue gently sweeps the left nipple as his hand pinches the right nipple. Amy moans loudly as Sonic teases her nipples.

"Oh, Sonic! More!" Sonic begins to suckle on Amy's left nipple as his right hand keeps pinching her right nipple. This makes Amy start panting. Sonic switches nipples, and begins to suckle on the right nipple, his left hand pinching Amy's right nipple.

Amy moans, then screams as Sonic's right hand begins rubbing her swollen clitoris. "OH YES! OH SONIC!" It's not long before Amy has an orgasm, screaming Sonic's name and holding his head to her breasts. "SONIC!"

The blue hedgehog smiles. "I love it when you scream my name, Ames."

She smiles, panting a little. "I love when you moan mine, Sonikku."

Sonic now gets on his stomach, his head dangerously close to Amy's flower. Amy nods. "Please, Sonic. Hurry."

Sonic chuckles. "What's the rush?"

Amy growls. "Either you start or I'll make you start."

Sonic smiles. "Yes ma'am."

Leaning forward, the royal blue hedgehog begins gently licking Amy's clitoris, making the sakura hedgehog moan loudly. "Ohhh Sonic... Yes...."

Her hands reach out and hold Sonic's head in place as he works on her core. Sonic's hands reach out and take hold of Amy's sensitive nipples, and Sonic begins pinching them as his tongue sweeps his wife's flower.

Amy begins writhing in pleasure, her moans becoming screams as Sonic continues to work. He now begins to gently suck on Amy's sensitive clitoris as his hands continue to pinch her swollen nipples. She erupts in orgasm in a few seconds, thanks to the sensitivity of her flower and nipples.

Taking a minute to check the water, Sonic frowns. "The water's going cold Ames. I think we need to move to the bed."

Amy nods, and Sonic helps her up. Amy turns off the water, then the two hedgehogs dry off. Sonic helps Amy onto the bed, then presses his lips against hers. Amy slips her tongue into Sonic's mouth, tracing along his fangs and moaning. The moans are muffled, but the action is heating up again.

Amy gets on her hands and knees, tail in the air. "Sonikku? I need you inside me."

Sonic gets the lube, and positions himself behind Amy. "Which area, my love?"

Amy frowns, her voice starting to sound desperate. "I need you in my rear, Sonic. Please, hurry."

Sonic smiles. "I love hearing you beg, Amy." Lubing up his manhood and Amy's anus, Sonic puts his hands on Amy's hips, and smiles. "Ready?"

The pink hedgehog nods, and the cerulean speedster gently pushes his member into Amy's tight anus. She moans as all 8 inches slide into her. "Ohhhh yeesssss....."

Sonic begins thrusting into Amy's ample rear, her loud moans making Sonic's hormones go into overdrive. His pace speeds up, and his thrusts get deeper.

Sonic's huge manhood makes Amy's moans become screams with each thrust. "YES! YES! DEEPER! UH! UH! MORE! YES! SONIC! UH!"

Sonic reaches forward and takes a gentle hold on Amy's swollen nipples, making her scream even louder.

After a few more thrusts, Amy has another orgasm, her body shaking as the climax roars through her. Sonic feels something hit his legs and drip down to the sheets. "Awesome."

Amy's panting and sweating a little, but she turns to Sonic, her green eyes sparkling. "More, Sonic. Please!"

The cobalt speedster smiles at his sakura lover. "Alright. How do you want it, babe?"

Amy shudders. "As deep as you can, as hard as you can, as fast as you can."

Sonic nods, and takes a grip on Amy's hips. "Get ready, because here we go."

Amy's hands curl over some loose bed sheets from the first thrust, and she screams as loud as she can. Sonic's pounding her rear at full speed. Each thrust has Sonic penetrating all 8 inches of his member into her ample rear.

Sonic adds a few spanks into the thrusting, and Amy screams. "YES! MORE, MY LOVE! OH! YES!" Sonic tells Amy that he's about to come, and Amy screams that she is too.

A few more thrusts, and Sonic's seed shoots into Amy's tight anus, and he moans Amy's name. "Ohhhh Amy."

However, when Amy orgasms, she screams Sonic's name. "SOOOONNNIIIIIC!" The powerful climax nearly makes Amy collapse on the bed, but Sonic's hands keep her from doing so. After their simultaneous orgasm passes, Sonic gently pulls out of Amy's rear, and cuddles her to him, panting and sweating a little.

Amy can barely breathe because of how much energy she's using. "Sonic, (panting) I need a minute (panting) please." Her blue stud nods, and the pink hedgehog begins trying to slow her breathing. Three minutes pass, and Amy speaks again. "Okay Sonic, I'm ready, but this will have to be it."

Sonic nods, and gently helps his pink wife off the bed. Walking over to the wall, Sonic picks Amy up, her extra pregnancy weight seeming nonexistent, and wraps her legs around his hips.

Amy giggles a little. "My, Sonic. I would think that my pregnancy weight would have made you have some kind of problem picking me up."

Sonic shook his head. "Not at all, my love. Now, are you ready?" Amy reaches down, and strokes Sonic's member until he's erect again. "Now I am."

Sonic nods, and gently inserts his manhood into Amy's flower. This new position makes Amy shudder visibly, and Sonic stops. "You okay, Amy?"

She nods. "It's a new feeling is all. You can continue, Sonic."

He nods, and begins thrusting upward into Amy's womanhood. Amy couldn't move much because of her expanded belly, but at the moment, she didn't want to. Sonic's thrusts made tingles race up Amy's spine to her head. Her moans made Sonic smile, and his speed increases.

The result is Amy's moans getting louder. "Oh yes. Sonic, more. Please. More."

Sonic nods, and puts Amy's shoulders against the wall, letting it support her upper body. Sonic begins pinching Amy's swollen nipples as he thrusts harder and deeper into Amy's core.

Amy's hands wrap around Sonic's shoulders and hold tight as her moans become screams, Sonic's name coming out every other second. "UH! UH! SONIC! UH! YES! AH! SONIC! OH! YES! SONIC! MORE!"

A few thrusts later, Sonic's emerald eyes look into Amy's eyes. "Ames, I'm going to come."

She nods. "ME TOO! I'M SO CLOSE!"

Sonic puts his hands on Amy's hips and carries her to the bed, laying her on her back. Once they're both ready, Sonic begins pounding Amy's womanhood at full speed, his 8 inch member filling her completely.

Amy's screams are so loud that Sonic thinks about getting soundproof glass for their house. "SO HARD! SO THICK! I LOVE YOU, SONIC!"

Sonic grunts a reply, nearing his end. "So moist! So tight! I love you too, Amy! Here it comes!" As soon as Sonic finishes, his seed roars into Amy's core, and he actually shouts Amy's name. "AMY!"

At the same time, Amy's strongest orgasm tears through her, and her nails draw blood from Sonic's shoulders as she screams his pet name. "SONIKKU!"

Sonic waits until their orgasms pass, then he pulls out of Amy, and turns off the lights. Pulling the sheets over their sweaty bodies, Sonic cuddles Amy to him, panting a bit. "Ames, you're shaking. (panting) Did we go too hard?"

Amy shook her head, panting heavily. "No (panting). My last orgasm (panting) was a multiple. (panting)"

Sonic was confused. "A multiple? What's that?"

Amy rolls over, and nuzzles Sonic's chest, still panting. "It's when a woman (panting) has more than one orgasm (panting) at one time. For example (panting) my last orgasm was (panting) three in a row."

Sonic was shocked. "Whoa.... "

Amy giggled, finally with a little control over her breathing. "Yeah... I loved it, and I'll be okay, my love. I promise." Sonic nuzzled Amy, and the

two hedgehogs snuggle together. In less than 5 minutes, they're asleep, inhaling each other's pheromones.

This process is repeated every day of their honeymoon until the last day. Around 11 AM on June 27th, a week after they arrived, Sonic and Amy check out of the hotel, and walk outside.

Taking Amy's hand, Sonic uses Chaos Control to teleport them back to his house in Station Square. Upon arriving, Sonic and Amy unpack and begin planning the baby shower for their coming child.

The second sonogram

July the 10th comes around. Sonic is the first to wake up, and he smiles at his wife, Amy Rose. As usual she's sleeping next to him. The two hedgehogs had returned from their honeymoon two weeks ago, and had spent the last several days looking at baby clothes, cribs, and other baby needs.

Today, however, they had an appointment with Doctor Alnilam in just a few hours. Slowly Amy opens the green eyes that Sonic loved, and she smiled at her husband. "Good morning Sonikku."

Sonic smiled. "Good morning Ames. Did you sleep well?"

The pink hedgehog giggled. "I've been sleeping well since the day you asked me out 16 months ago."

Sonic gave Amy a kiss, which she happily returned. "I'd love to just lay here with you Ames, but we have an appointment soon."

Amy chuckled. "We do, don't we?"

The cobalt speedster nodded. "Yes, we do. It's the second sonogram for our baby."

Amy nodded. "Well, let's go get ready."

Sonic climbs out of bed, helps Amy out, and the two hedgehogs spend the next half hour in the shower. After drying each other off, Sonic and Amy dress and eat some breakfast. Sonic chose a green shirt, blue shorts, and his blue speed shoes. Amy picked a green maternity shirt, matching sandals, and a pink skirt. As the hedgehog newlyweds ate their cereal, the news came on with a breaking story.

The anchorwoman was relaying the details about the newly married hedgehogs. "We've just learned that world hero Sonic the Hedgehog and his

partner Amy Rose are now married. These pictures surfaced a few days ago."

The anchorwoman continued speaking as the pictures were shown. "There's also speculation that Amy Rose may also be carrying Sonic's child. We'll keep you updated with more details as we get them."

Sonic puts the dishes away, then gives Amy a smile. "Ready for the sonogram, my love?"

Amy giggled. "Yes, sexy. Let's go."

They walk outside, and Sonic locks the door. Turning around, the hedgehog couple comes face to face with a wall of reporters. Sonic whispers one word. "Shit."

Amy gives him a look. "Watch your language please."

The blue blur chuckles. "Sorry. I'm just getting a little irritated with these idiots."

Amy gave him a smile. "Answer some questions, and then use that Chaos Control trick Shadow taught you."

Sonic nods and faces the reporters. "What is it now?"

A man speaks up. "Are you two married and happy about it?"

Sonic frowns. "You're an idiot. Of course we're happy. Next?"

A woman now: "Mrs. Hedgehog, how far into your pregnancy are you?"

The pink hedgehog smiled. "I just started the third trimester, so I'm seven months in."

Another woman. "Mr. Hedgehog, do you know if Amy is carrying your child?"

Sonic shook his head and looked at Amy. "Told you they were idiots."

Amy nodded. "Time to go."

Sonic took Amy's hand. "Chaos Control."

The two hedgehogs vanish in a flash of blue light, leaving the reporters shocked.

-Station Square Care Center-

Sonic and Amy appear in the care center, and not a moment too soon.

Doctor Alnilam walks out of the exam area. "I was watching the news. You're right, Sonic. They are idiots."

Sonic chuckled. "We'd have been here sooner but the reporters slowed us down."

The doctor nodded. "I'm glad you two made it. Exam Room 3 is ready when you are."

Amy wrapped an arm around Sonic's waist, and he did the same, then the hedgehog couple followed Doctor Alnilam into the room. Closing the door, the doctor began getting the machine ready. With her blue stud's help, the sakura hedgehog climbs onto the bed and exposed her ever-growing belly.

Sonic takes her left hand, entwining their fingers. Dr Alnilam gets the jelly and layers it on Amy's stomach. Putting the blood pressure cuff on Amy's right arm, the doctor links it to the sonogram machine and pushes the green button. Sonic gives Amy's hand a squeeze as Dr Alnilam runs the attachment over Amy's swollen belly.

After a few minutes an image appears on the screen of the ultrasound machine. Sonic takes over with the attachment as Doctor Alnilam goes to the screen. "Well, I have to ask before I begin. When did you get back from your honeymoon, and have you had intercourse since then?"

Sonic and Amy blushed. "We got back from our honeymoon almost three weeks ago, and no, we haven't had intercourse since then. It's been very hard not to, but we've resisted."

The doctor chuckles. "Don't worry. After the child is born, wait a few days, and then you can resume intimate activity."

The hedgehog couple nods, then Doctor Alnilam returns to the sonogram screen. "Alright. Things are progressing very well. The baby is developing normally. You can clearly see the nose, eyes, ears, hands, feet, fingers, toes, and even the tail. Here, you have the placenta, and it's where it should be. The umbilical cord is certainly fine, seeing as the fetus is growing as expected."

Turning off the machine, Doctor Alnilam relieves Sonic of the attachment. Amy fixes her clothes, and climbs off the bed with Sonic's help.

The doctor washes his hands and turns to the two hedgehogs. "The next time you see me will be for the childbirth."

Amy gives Dr Alnilam a smile. "I'm really looking forward to it." Sonic agrees, and the doctor escorts them out of the exam area, talking about the rest of Amy's pregnancy.

"It'll be about two months, but Amy's on a normal pregnancy path, so I'd expect to be in the hospital somewhere around the 10th to 15th of September."

The blue hedgehog shakes the doctor's hand. "We'll be there around that time, unless the child has other plans."

Dr. Alnilam laughed. "See you two soon."

Sonic takes Amy's hand, and they leave the Care Center.

-Downtown Station Square-

Sonic and Amy are seen walking back to their house. The pink hedgehog looks around and finds a hair salon. "I'm getting my quills trimmed. You don't have to, but I am."

They walk inside and are greeted by two female stylists. Sonic and Amy get their quills trimmed, and Amy gets pampered since she's pregnant. Half an

hour later, the hedgehog couple is seen walking to their house. It's Sonic's house of course, but they were married now, so it's technically "their" house.

Both hedgehogs wound up getting six inches of their quills cut, and they were happy about it. Amy's soft pink quills were just above her shoulders, essentially her normal look. Sonic's quills were just past his shoulders, but his quills were longer anyway.

Amy then saw a wall of reporters coming toward them. "Sonic, we have reporters."

The blue hedgehog gave his sakura wife a wink. "I wonder if they'll ask why I think they're idiots."

Amy laughed, then took Sonic's hand. "I have my hammer if you need it."

Sonic nods, then focuses on the reporters. "Yes?"

A woman speaks first. "How did you vanish earlier today?"

Sonic frowns. "Next question."

Another woman. "Mrs. Hedgehog, how is your child coming along?"

Amy smiled. "The baby is developing normally. Our doctor has given us a good prognosis for both visits."

Sonic looks to his left and sees a burglar running from police. "Ames, give me your hammer."

Nodding, Amy summons her trademark red and yellow Piko Piko Hammer and gives it to her blue stud.

Sonic studies the criminal, then says two words. "Batter up."

Sonic bolts to the burglar, and baseball swings the hammer. The swing connects with the criminal's stomach and sends him flying. The criminal

lands in front of the police that are chasing him. The police chief walks to Sonic, getting out a large amount of money.

To Sonic's surprise, it's Commander Parkinson. "Well, nice to see you Commander."

The officer chuckles. "Well, it's Chief now Sonic, but it's nice to see you too. How's Amy?"

As if on cue, the rose-pink hedgehog joins her royal blue husband. "Sonikku? Did you hit the criminal too hard?"

Sonic laughs. "No. Ames, this is Chief Parkinson, the man who took me to see Sally the day your house was destroyed."

Amy smiles. "It's nice to meet you."

Chief Parkinson smiles back. "Same here. Rumor has it that you and Sonic are married and also expecting a child."

Amy nods. "Those rumors are true. Sonic and I are married. We're also expecting a child in about two months."

The officer nods. "Congratulations you two. As for the criminal, various police forces have been trying to catch him for years now. He's wanted in 23 states, and thanks to Amy's hammer, Sonic, we finally have him."

Sonic gave Amy's hammer back to her, and chuckled. "Glad I could help you."

Chief Parkinson gave Sonic the reward money and shook his hand. "Thanks for your help, and see you soon."

Sonic and Amy watched the police take the burglar to jail, and then turned to the gathered reporters. "Any more questions?"

The reporters shook their heads. Sonic smiled. "Good. Now go home and leave me and Amy alone."

The reporters leave and the hedgehog couple resume their walk to their house.

-Sonic and Amy's house-

The two hedgehogs enter the house, and then Sonic's cell phone goes off. Tails has sent him a text message.

It reads: 'Good job catching the criminal Sonic.'

Sonic smiles and replies: 'Thanks Tails. Everything is good with the child, and we should have him in about two months.'

Tails replies: 'See you soon.'

Amy presses herself against Sonic after shutting the door. "Who was that, my love?"

The cerulean speedster held his pink wife. "It was Tails. We were just updating each other."

Amy pulled Sonic with her to the couch. "Let's snuggle and watch baby shows."

Sonic nods. "Fine with me."

Turning on the TV, Sonic cuddles Amy to him, making her sigh with happiness. They spend the entire day there, Sonic occasionally getting kicked by the growing child. Some kicks were stronger than other, but nothing unusual. Soon midnight came, and Sonic turned off the lights. Amy locks the door, and rejoins Sonic. Helping Amy up the stairs, the royal blue hero helps Amy get ready for bed when they reach their room. Climbing under the blue silk sheets, the hedgehog couple snuggles together.

Amy turns to Sonic. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you."

Sonic and Amy share a passionate kiss. "Goodnight Amy. I love you too."

Soon, the blue and pink hedgehogs are asleep, dreaming about finally being parents.

A bundle of joy for the hedgehogs

The rest of July and August come and go, and September rolls around. It was September 9th, and Amy was having her baby shower. Rouge, Cream, Tikal, Knuckles, Shadow, and Tails are there.

Of course, Sonic is there too. He's currently rubbing Amy's sore ankles. Tails had hand built a crib for the child. Cream had gotten the diapers for when the baby was old enough. Shadow had gone with Rouge and gotten the clothes and some little shoes. Knuckles had hacked off a piece of the Master Emerald and put it in a protective case. There it would stay until the child was old enough to know its power. Tikal had prepared various herbs to help with the child as it grew, in case it got sick, headaches, and various other ailments. Then the inevitable question came from Rouge.

"Have you decided on a name yet?"

Sonic and Amy froze, then Amy shook her head. "Not yet, Rouge. It's been tough to come up with a name."

The white bat nodded. "You'll come up with one in time."

Sonic smiled. "Besides, there's still a little over a week until you're due, Ames. Focus on the name later."

The sakura hedgehog smiled. "I'd kiss you Sonic, but I'm a little too round to move easily."

The blue hero chuckled and moved in front of Amy. "Let me fix that."

Amy giggled, and Sonic pressed his lips to Amy's lips. There was a group "Awww" as the two hedgehogs kissed passionately.

Once the kiss broke, Sonic and Amy looked into each other's green eyes for a bit, then Amy spoke. "I hate being pregnant right now."

Sonic chuckles. "Why, my love?"

Amy's eyes turned a bright green with lust. "I want you so bad it's not funny."

Sonic smiled. "In less than two weeks, you can have me all you want, babe." Then Knuckles spoke.

"Is Amy sure about all that? Given your speed, I don't think you'd last long, Sonic."

Sonic chuckled. "My speed comes with stamina, something you wouldn't know anything about."

Knuckles had no reply, so Amy spoke. "Yes Knuckles, I'm sure about that." Normal conversation resumes, and a few hours later, it was movie time. Of course, it was a bunch of movies on childbirth, raising a child, and various other things. It was to prepare Amy for what was to come in a little more than a week. Another few hours passes, then everyone leaves Sonic's house, with Sonic and Amy waving goodbye to them.

Closing the front door, Amy presses herself against Sonic. "I'm a little nervous now, Sonikku. I'm scared that our child may die, or that I might. Please hold me."

Sonic smiles, holding Amy to him. "Relax Ames. I'll be with you every step of the way. I'll say it again, I'll never leave you. I promise."

Amy nuzzles Sonic under his chin. "I promise I'll never leave you either. Thank you for being here with me."

Sonic chuckled. "What kind of husband would I be if I didn't help you out with these kinds of situations? I took a vow to be with you through everything, and I meant every word."

Amy sighed happily. "I meant every word of my vow too, Sonic."

The hedgehog couple shares a sweet kiss, then stares into each other's green eyes. Sonic speaks first. "I love you Amy Rose Hedgehog."

The pink hedgehog blushed, and this makes her blue stud blush. "I love you too Sonic T Hedgehog." Another kiss, then the two hedgehogs go upstairs to their room to finish getting ready for the baby's arrival.

-Five days later-

It's September 14th, a Saturday. Sonic is woken up by Amy at 4 AM. "Sonikku?"

Sonic yawns, and sits up. He finds Amy in a pink maternity shirt, loose green pants, and pink sandals. "Yes my love?"

Amy points to her belly. "It's time. The hospital is already expecting us."

The blue hedgehog stares at his pink wife, sweat dropping. "You-You mean..... The baby?" Amy nodded, then Sonic bolted off to the bathroom. Amy waits as patiently as she can. 5 minutes later, Sonic runs back into the room. "Quick shower." Putting on a blue shirt, green shorts, and his blue speed shoes, Sonic takes Amy's hand. "Chaos Control." The two hedgehogs vanish in a flash of blue light.

-Station Square Hospital-

Sonic and Amy appear in the hospital lobby. They're immediately escorted to Room 129. Amy is helped on the bed, and Sonic helps make her comfortable. The doctor comes in a few minutes later. It's Doctor Alnilam, and he smiles at the hedgehog couple. "Hello you two. I'll be delivering your baby when the time comes."

Sonic smiles. "I'm glad it's you, doc." Just then Amy screams, and Sonic is again by her side. "You okay?"

Amy nodded. "I just had a contraction." Doctor Alnilam sat in front of Amy.

"I'll give you a few minutes to change into these hospital clothes, then I need to examine you." Sonic nods and pulls the curtain closed. Two minutes go by, then the curtain is pulled back. Amy's now wearing the hospital

clothing, and Sonic has put Amy's clothes in a chair near the bed. Dr Alnilam nods, putting on some gloves. "Okay Amy. I'm going to examine you. If the contractions get stronger or more frequent, then we'll know it's time for childbirth."

Amy nods, taking Sonic's hand. The blue hero gives the rose-pink hedgehog a smile. "I'm right here Ames."

She smiles, then feels a kiss to her lips. "Thank you, my love."

Doctor Alnilam begins his exam. "Well, it looks like everything is fine. You're about 7 centimeters, which means you still have a while to go. Right now, get some rest. Let me know if the contractions change." The two hedgehogs nod and the doctor leaves. Sonic takes Doctor Alnilam's chair and sits beside Amy, taking her hand again. The sakura hedgehog squeezes her blue stud's hand. Soon, Amy's green eyes close and she falls asleep. It's fitful, since her contractions come and go. Sonic turns on the TV, and waits patiently.

-15 hours later, the hospital lobby-

It's now 7 PM. Sonic is in the lobby with Tails, Shadow, Knuckles, Cream, Rouge, and Tikal. They're all talking about Amy's child. Sonic is telling them about Amy's latest exam. "Well, Doctor Alnilam just finished another exam. The contractions are getting more frequent, and Amy's at about 9.5 centimeters."

Cream smiles at Sonic. "Are you ready for fatherhood, Sonic?"

The blue hedgehog chuckles. "I'm still nervous, but I can't wait."

Then a shrill cry echoes down the hallway. "SONIC!" It was Amy.

Sonic turns back to the group. "Got to go." Sonic bolts back to Amy's room, meeting Doctor Alnilam on the way.

-Amy's Room-

Sonic and Doctor Alnilam enter Amy's room. Sonic immediately takes Amy's hand. "I'm right here, Amy."

Dr Alnilam pushes the intercom button on Amy's bedside phone. "I need a nurse in Room 129. We have a childbirth on the way." In less than a minute two nurses enter the room. The doctor nods and addresses the first nurse. "Get my gloves." To the second nurse: "I need towels." The nurses leave and return in a few seconds with the needed materials.

The doctor then sits in front of Amy after he puts on his gloves. "Alright, Amy. When I say push, you push until I say stop, okay?"

Amy nods, then glares at Sonic as another contraction tears through her body. "SONIC! YOU ARE NEVER TOUCHING ME AGAIN!"

Out in the lobby, Tails is shocked. "Damn. Either Amy's really mad at Sonic, or her body's going into overdrive." The others agree and go back to waiting.

Back in Amy's room, Doctor Alnilam nods to Sonic. "Here we go." Sonic squeezes Amy's hand.

The doctor sits in front of Amy. "Okay Amy. Push."

The sakura hedgehog put Sonic's hand in a death grip as she pushes, screaming the whole way. "AHHH!" 10 seconds later, Doctor Alnilam has Amy stop to regain her breath.

Sonic takes a cloth and wipes Amy's face. "You're doing fine, Amy." She smiled at her blue stud, then is asked to push again. Another 10 seconds of pain, then Amy collapses onto the bed, panting and sweating heavily.

Doctor Alnilam looks at Amy's machines. "Easy Amy. Your heart rate is a little high."

Amy nods. "I'm doing (panting) the best (panting) I can."

The doctor nods. "Alright, push again." Taking a breath, Amy pushes, screaming the whole 10 seconds.

Sonic smiles. "Not much more now, Amy."

The doctor nods. "He's right. You're crowning now, Amy. One more push and you'll be done."

Sonic wipes Amy's face again, and smiles. "You can do it, Amy. I know you can."

Doctor Alnilam nodded. "Alright, Amy. Push." Amy takes a breath, and pushes. The doctor talks her through it. "Push, push, push, push..... Got it. You're done." Those words echoed in Amy's mind, and she collapses on the bed, sweating and panting.

Sonic cleaned Amy's face off with a cool cloth. "Good job, honey. You did it." The rose-pink hedgehog could only smile at her royal blue husband. Meanwhile, Doctor Alnilam is cleaning the newborn off, and has Sonic cut the umbilical cord.

Standing up, the two nurses leave as Doctor Alnilam finishes wrapping the hedgehog baby in the clean towels. "Congratulations. It's a boy."

Amy takes the baby, tears of joy falling down her face. "Oh Sonikku... He's so beautiful."

Sonic smiles, a few tears falling down his face. "Just like you, Ames." Pulling Sonic to her, Amy kisses him, tongue and all. Sonic kisses back, and after the kiss breaks, Sonic shakes Doctor Alnilam's hand. "Thank you so much, Doctor."

The doctor smiles. "It's my job, Sonic. You're very welcome, and I wish your family the best in the coming years."

Doctor Alnilam leaves at this point, and Sonic returns to Amy and his new son. Amy looks at Sonic with tired green eyes. "What will we call him, my love?"

Sonic thinks for a minute. I'm fine with naming him after me, but I think a better name would be.... Dash."

Amy nodded. "Then that's what he'll be called."

A knock is heard at the door. Sonic goes and opens it. Tails, Knuckles, Cream, Shadow, Rouge, and Tikal are standing there. The blue hedgehog chuckles. "Yes, you can see him. But be quiet. He's sleeping."

The seven friends walk quietly to Amy's bedside. She smiles. "Hey guys. This is Dash, mine and Sonic's son." The hedgehog baby opens his eyes, and there's a group "Aw, he's so cute." Dash looks around with jade green eyes that match Amy's eyes. Three quills stick out from his head, just like Amy has on her head. The rest of Dash's quills are slicked back like Sonic's quills are. The fur is a mix of Sonic and Amy's fur, and it's a rich bluish-purple color.

Dash's eyes wandered around the group until they came to Sonic and Amy. The pink hedgehog speaks softly. "Hey Dash. I'm your mother, Amy. This is your father, Sonic."

Amy passes Dash to Sonic, who gently spoke to him. "Hey buddy. Welcome to the world." Turning, the blue hedgehog introduces everyone Dash sees. "The orange one is your Uncle Miles, but everyone calls him Tails. Next to him is your Aunt Cream. Well, she'll be your aunt once she marries Tails. The next two are Shadow and Rouge, and after them are Knuckles and Tikal." The green eyes of the hedgehog baby look around at the group, then he yawns, letting out a high-pitched squeak.

Amy, who's been cleaned up now, chuckles. "Looks like nap time again." Reluctantly, Sonic gives Dash back to Amy, and soon Dash is asleep again.

Sonic turns to the group. "Thanks for coming, guys. Give us about a week, and we'll celebrate the proper way." Opening the door, the blue hedgehog is congratulated by everyone as they leave. Cream, Rouge, and Tikal hug Sonic, and Shadow, Knuckles, and Tails shake his hand.

Sonic closes the door and rejoins Amy and Dash. Amy pulls Sonic to her and kisses him. "Thank you for helping me bring our child into the world."

Sonic smiles. "Well, I didn't really do anything but support you."

Amy nods. "Yes, but without your support, I don't know if I could have had our baby."

Sonic nuzzles Amy. "I love you, Amy."

She nuzzles him back. "I love you, too, Sonic." The blue blur gets a chair, and soon the two hedgehogs are asleep, Dash wrapped protectively in their arms.

-Three days later-

Sonic walks into his house, followed by Amy and the sleeping Dash. The birth of their child made front page news all over the world. However, the hedgehogs refused to speak with reporters until they were ready to.

Sonic and Amy walk upstairs to the baby's room. Sonic and Tails had made the guest bedroom into the baby's room. Amy puts the sleeping hedgehog baby in the crib, then Sonic wraps his arms around her waist. "I'm proud of you Amy. You brought our child into the world, and you're a wonderful mother."

Amy turned around and passionately kissed him. "Thank you. You're a wonderful father, and you stuck by me every step of the way. I'm proud of you, too."

Sonic grinned. "Thanks babe. Now, about that second child...."

Amy giggles. "I think we should wait a little while before having that second child, Sonikku. However, I'm not against practicing."

Sonic chuckles. "The doctor said to wait a few days."

Amy whispered in Sonic's ears. "It has been a few days, baby. Besides, I have the perfect way to get us in the mood."

Amy gets the sex tape they made on Sonic's 23rd birthday. "Do you think our secret movie will work?"

Sonic runs downstairs and locks the door. Amy then feels herself get picked up bridal style and carried to their bedroom.

After a few hours of "practicing" for their second child, Sonic and Amy go to bed. They begin life as parents when Dash wakes them up at 3 AM the next day to nurse.

A Sonamy Story Sequel

The story continues

Two years have passed since Dash the Hedgehog was born. The bluish-purple hedgehog baby had taken some of the attention from his parents, Sonic and Amy Rose. When Dash was born, it had made front page news all over the world. Sonic and Amy had refused to speak with reporters until they felt ready. So far no interviews had been scheduled, and that didn't look too likely to change.

We find Sonic the Hedgehog walking around his yard, looking for something.... or someone. "Where are you, Dash? You can't hide forever."

Across the yard Amy Rose giggled quietly to herself, holding Dash in her lap. Sonic was playing hide and seek with them. The warm mid-September air and golden sunshine provided the perfect opportunity for outdoor fun. Amy risked a peek around one side of the tree she was hiding behind. Seeing nothing, the pink hedgehog turns around and finds a pair of emerald green eyes looking at her.

Amy jumps a little and then starts laughing. "Sonic, you scared me."

The cobalt speedster chuckles. "Sorry Ames."

Dash made a cooing noise and reached for Sonic. Smiling, Sonic picks the hedgehog toddler up, then put an arm around Amy. She brushes the various blades of grass from her red sundress, then presses against Sonic, sighing contently. "Can you believe it, Sonikku? Two years have gone by."

Sonic nods as Dash begins pulling on his green shirt. "It's gone by fast Ames, but I wouldn't change anything."

Amy smiled, her jade green eyes sparkling. "Me either, honey. However we need to finish planning for Dash's birthday party."

Sonic chuckles, giving Amy's forehead a gentle kiss. "Yes we do. Dash will get to toddle around with all of his little friends and cousins."

Amy laughs and leads her husband and son to the house. "Yes he will. Now come on, the party won't plan itself."

Sonic nods and lets Amy lead him and Dash into the white two-story house.

-Sonic and Amy's House-

The inside and outside had remained the same, except for Dash's room. The bathroom that was once there had been made into a closet for Dash's clothes, and the bathroom had been built onto Sonic and Amy's room.

The front door swings open to reveal the hedgehog family. Sonic gives Dash to Amy and sits on the couch to finish writing the party invites. So far, Tails, Cream, Shadow, and Rouge's invites had been finished. Knuckles' and Tikal's invites remained. As the royal blue speedster worked on the invites, Amy went upstairs and put Dash down for his nap.

Walking back downstairs, the sakura hedgehog went into the kitchen to make lunch. "Sonic? Would you like anything to eat?"

Sonic smiles. He loved Amy's cooking. "Sure babe. I'd like some grilled cheeses please. Two would be fine."

Amy giggles. "I was hoping you'd say that. I'm craving grilled cheeses myself."

Sonic is soon done with the invites and goes to put them in the mailbox. When he gets back Amy has lunch ready. Taking his plate, Sonic gives his wife a kiss. "Thanks Ames. It looks delicious."

Amy kisses back. "You're welcome Sonikku."

As the hedgehogs ate, they tried to find something on TV. Not much was on this particular Wednesday afternoon, so they just picked a TV show. They wound up finding a "Mythbusters" marathon. Sonic and Amy liked this show a lot, and they were happy the show was in the middle of a marathon.

A few hours pass, then Amy hears some noise on the baby monitor. "Sounds like Dash is awake."

Sonic nods and walks upstairs to get his son. Coming back downstairs, Sonic rejoins Amy on the couch. She's cleaned up from lunch and has a bottle ready. Sonic takes the bottle and begins feeding the bluish-purple hedgehog toddler.

Amy watches with shining green eyes. 'What a good father Sonic is. I had my doubts when Sonic ran away after finding out I was pregnant. Now that a few years have gone by, Sonic's proven to be a better father than I thought he would.'

After Dash finishes the bottle, Sonic puts Dash on his left shoulder and gently begins patting his back. About 15 seconds pass, then Dash's jade eyes open wide, followed by a burping sound. Sonic chuckles and repeats this process a few more times. Dash turns his green eyes to Amy and holds out his arms. The pink hedgehog takes Dash and holds him as she snuggles up to Sonic. He smiles and wraps his wife and son in his strong arms. Amy begins purring as Dash curls up in a ball in her arms. If anyone was to take a picture, it would be in the Top Ten Cute Pictures of all time.

9 PM comes around, and Sonic slowly opens his eyes. Clearing his vision, he gently wakes Amy. "Amy, wake up."

Amy opens her eyes and stretches. "How long have I been asleep?"

Sonic chuckles. "About three hours."

Amy shakes her head. "Wow. Alright then. I'll go change Dash, then we need to go to bed."

Sonic nods and Amy goes upstairs. Sonic turns off the TV and locks the front door. Turning off the lights, the cobalt hedgehog finds Amy just leaving Dash's room. Sonic and Amy go into their room, take off their clothes, and climb under the blue silk sheets. Sonic wraps his arms around Amy's shoulders, pulling her luscious body to him.

Amy sighed happily, nuzzling Sonic's chest and abs. "Sonic? When do you want to try for our second child?"

Sonic thinks for a few seconds. "I don't think it should be soon, babe. I have a bad feeling that something is wrong."

Amy's jade green eyes meet Sonic's emerald green eyes. "What could be going wrong when everything is going so well?"

Sonic frowns. "I don't think Robotnik is finished yet. Knowing him, he's probably left one last trick behind."

Amy snuggles closer to her cerulean husband. "Do you have any idea where it'll happen or what will happen?"

He shakes his head, the long quills partly falling over his shoulder. "None at all. Right now, I think we should get some rest. We'll need our strength for Dash's party tomorrow."

Amy nods, taking handfuls of Sonic's quills. "Okay, I trust you."

Sonic takes handfuls of Amy's soft pink shoulder-length quills. "I'll protect you Amy. I promise."

Amy yawns. "I know you will. I love you Sonic T Hedgehog."

Sonic smiles. "I love you too, Amy Rose Hedgehog."

In a few minutes, Sonic and Amy are asleep, smiles on their faces.

Dash's birthday party

As usual, Sonic is the first to wake up. It's around 9 AM, and he hears Dash just waking up. Giving Amy a gentle kiss, Sonic pulls on a blue robe, and goes across the hall to his son's room. The bluish-purple hedgehog toddler fixes his bright green eyes on his father, and lifts his arms.

Chuckling, Sonic picks Dash up and is immediately hit with a gut-wrenching smell. "Whoa. Dash, did you make a stinky?"

Dash just smiles. Sonic put Dash back in his crib and got a diaper. He also gets some baby powder and a blue outfit for the hedgehog toddler. Sonic walks back to the crib and picks Dash up again.

"Alright buddy, it's changing time."

Dash smiles and makes various baby noises as Sonic changes him. Once done, Sonic throws the dirty diaper away and picks Dash up again. "Much better."

The blue hedgehog turns to leave the room and finds Amy standing in the doorway. "Good morning you two."

Sonic and Amy kiss and walk downstairs. "You sleep okay Ames?"

Amy smiles. "Of course, Sonikku. I always sleep better when I sleep with you."

Sonic blushes and heads into the kitchen. Holding Dash, Sonic makes a bottle and heats it in the microwave. Amy has turned on the TV and is waiting to feed Dash. About a minute goes by, then Sonic enters the living room, giving Dash and the bottle to his wife.

"Here you go Ames. I'm going to shower."

Amy nods, kisses her husband, and starts feeding her bluish-purple toddler. Sonic smiles and heads upstairs to the shower.

While there, Sonic starts thinking about his bad feeling. 'Why do I feel like something horrible is going to happen? I just know something is going to happen to Amy and Dash, but I don't know what or who is going to cause it to happen. I wish I knew, but I can't protect my family if I don't know what's coming.'

Finishing his shower, Sonic dries off and goes to his dresser. He gets a blue shirt, dark green shorts, and his blue speed shoes. Walking downstairs, the blue hero finds his rose-pink wife singing to Dash.

Her jade green eyes turn to Sonic when he appears. "Sonikku? Why are you worrying so much?"

Sonic sits on the couch and takes Dash. "I'm not sure how you knew, but I'm worrying because the last time I failed to protect you, it nearly cost you your life. Twice."

Amy nuzzles Sonic under his chin. "Even if something happens, I know you'll rescue me."

Sonic nods and nuzzles Amy back, making her blush. "Of course I'll rescue you, Amy. I always will."

The hedgehogs share a passionate kiss, then Amy goes upstairs to shower. After she's done, Amy chooses a purple sundress, matching sandals, and the amethyst bracelet Rouge gave her for her 20th birthday. Rejoining Sonic and Dash, Amy helps finish planning the party.

-3 PM-

It's party time at Sonic and Amy's house. The first guests to arrive are Shadow, Rouge, and their son Slasher. He was identical to Shadow but had a pair of wings he inherited from Rouge. Sonic and Amy introduce Dash, then Shadow and Rouge introduce Slasher. The two toddlers make various cooing noises, even though Dash was a few months older.

Next to arrive were Tails, Cream, and their triplets. Sonic, Amy, Shadow, Rouge, Dash, and Slasher were introduced to the Prower triplets. The two

boys had orange fur and two tails like their father, but had Cream's chocolate eyes. The female resembled cream but had Tails' ocean blue eyes.

After the three families update each other, a solid knock was heard on Sonic's door. Sonic opens it and finds Knuckles, Tikal, and their quadruplets.

Sonic shook his head. "Tikal, I don't know how you managed that kind of birth."

Tikal blushes, then Knuckles speaks up. "It wasn't a birth, really. Tikal had a Cesarean Section, since it was a high-risk pregnancy."

Sonic nods, and the six echidnas enter the house. The two males of the quadruplets were pinkish like Tikal, but had Knuckles' purple eyes. The two females were red like Knuckles but had Tikal's sapphire blue eyes. All four children had just turned one year old, and still nursed when needed. Tails' triplets were a few months older, then Slasher at almost two years old.

Sonic and Amy had Dash open his presents a few minutes later. Shadow and Rouge had gotten him some blue hover shoes identical to the red ones Shadow himself used. Tails bought Dash models of the X Tornado and the Blue Typhoon to build when he got older. Cream had somehow found a stroller for Dash that could withstand the high speed runs Sonic took him on.

Knowing this made Sonic chuckle. "I don't run that fast when I take him with me, Cream."

The rabbit frowned. "I disagree, because Tails and I have found melted stroller wheels in the park, Sonic."

Tails smiles at his wife's remark. "Yes, Dash will be fast like you, Sonic, but do you really need to go that fast?"

Sonic sighs, then Amy looks at him. "Please slow down, Sonic."

The cobalt hedgehog frowns at his sakura wife, then turns to Shadow, Rouge, Knuckles, and Tikal. "You guys want to add anything?"

The four shook their heads, then Knuckles turned to Tikal. "Alright babe. Your present is next."

The pinkish echidna smiles and presents a pair of sandals. "These sandals are said to bring good luck to whoever wears them."

Knuckles watches as his fiancée puts the woven reed sandals on the hedgehog toddler's feet. Sonic and Amy look at Knuckles, who gives a deep chuckle. "My gift is to teach Dash how to fight once he's old enough. I'll teach him everything I know."

Sonic nods, then turns as Amy brings in Dash's birthday cake. "Time for the cake everyone."

The children are gathered, then everyone sings "Happy Birthday" to Dash. The cake is a chocolate cake, and in the middle is a number "2" candle. Sonic and Amy help Dash blow out the candle, then everyone digs in. No one notices the pair of brown eyes watching through a window.

The eavesdropper is a very familiar person to the group, but the smile is an evil smile. "Perfect. They don't suspect a thing. Soon, you will be avenged."

The eavesdropper runs off and inside the house, no one suspects anyone was just watching them. After the cake is finished, the children are changed and put down for a nap. The adults then gather in the living room for some movies. Shadow and his girlfriend Rouge snuggle in one chair. Knuckles gathered Tikal into the other chair. Tails and Cream take the love seat, and Sonic and Amy take the couch.

-9 PM-

Knuckles and Tikal are barely awake. Gathering their quadruplets, the six echidnas leave Sonic and Amy's house. Tails and Cream are the next to leave after getting their triplets. They're soon followed by Shadow, Rouge, and Slasher. The three disappear in a flash of green light thanks to Chaos

Control. Amy checks on Dash while Sonic locks the door and turns off the lights. Amy changes Dash's diaper, feeds him, and puts him back to bed in his crib. The pink hedgehog meets her blue husband in their room, and they spend a few minutes kissing.

Turning off the bedroom light, Sonic and Amy undress, then climb into bed. Amy snuggles up to Sonic. "Goodnight Sonikku. I love you so much."

Another passionate kiss, and Sonic's deep voice makes Amy sigh contently. "Goodnight Ames. I love you too."

Soon the two hedgehogs are asleep, cuddled close together.

A nearly fatal battle

Sonic wakes up around 9 AM, and finds a note in his bed where Amy normally would be. It reads: 'While you slept I kidnapped your wife and son, Sonic. The only way to save them is to find me. Might want to hurry though. Robot Alnilam.'

Sonic begins shaking with rage. Tearing through his house, he fails to find Amy and Dash. The blue hedgehog gets dressed in a blue shirt and matching shorts, gets his blue speed shoes, then bolts to Tails' workshop. He makes a mental note about the lock on the front door having been picked.

-Underground base, unknown location-

Amy wakes up, and finds Dash in her arms instead of Sonic. Looking around, Amy realizes something's wrong. The pink hedgehog also finds herself naked, just as she went to bed last night. She and Dash are wrapped in one of the blue silk sheets from Sonic's bed. A figure appears and turns on the lights, as well as a machine.

Amy covers herself as best she can and holds Dash to her. "Who are you?"

The figure steps into the light and Amy is shocked by who she sees. "Doctor Alnilam?"

The figure chuckles. "Yes and no. The real Doctor Alnilam is helping people. I'm a robot version of him left behind by Doctor Robotnik."

Amy's more than confused. "What do you mean?"

Robot Alnilam smiles. "Doctor Robotnik made a robot version of Doctor Alnilam in case something caused Robotnik to stop causing chaos. Alnilam was once Robotnik's physician, but stopped after accusations were made that Alnilam was providing funding for Robotnik's weapons. I'm not sure why it's taken so long to get the signal, but the time has come for me to pick up where Robotnik left off."

Amy's eyes flash. "Sonic is going to tear you apart."

The robot nods. "We'll see. Doctor Robotnik built me well. It's going to take at least Super Sonic to take me down."

Amy holds Dash closer to her. She knew Super Sonic was almost as strong as Sonic got. She looks down at the sleeping Dash, and smiled. He was sleeping through it all.

Robot Alnilam smiles and fiddles with the machine. "This machine is a motion activated laser. If you move, you die. You, and your son."

The pink hedgehog gasps. "B-But..."

The robot chuckles. "Sonic has 8 hours to find me and fight me for you. If he doesn't, the laser will fire, and you both will die."

Amy laughs. "Sonic will be here before then, and he'll easily take you down."

Robot Alnilam sighs. "Did I mention the fight was to the death?"

Amy's jade green eyes fill with tears, and Robot Alnilam nods. "You forget I was built by Doctor Robotnik with the sole purpose of taking Sonic down once and for all. If he defeats me, you'll all live happily ever after. If he fails, you and your son will be my slaves for the rest of your lives."

Amy lowers her head and quietly cries. Robot Alnilam leaves the room and waits for Sonic.

-Tails' Workshop-

A blue streak arrives at Tails' workshop and bangs on the door until the orange fox opens it.

"What's up Sonic?"

The blue hedgehog walks inside. "Amy and Dash have been kidnapped."

Tails goes to the Sonic Tracker. It's been modified to track Amy and Dash as well, should the need arise. Tails taps a few keys, and the machine begins searching for the missing hedgehogs.

-Three hours later-

The floor of Tails' workshop was starting to get a rut in it from Sonic pacing nonstop. The machine finally beeps, having found Amy and Dash.

Tails looks over the data. "No wonder it took so long. They're being held underground. Any idea who could be behind this, Sonic?"

The royal blue hero nods. "Robotnik's final attempt to get me to surrender."

The orange fox gives Sonic the information. "Go save your family."

Taking the data, Sonic rockets toward the underground base.

-1 hour later-

Sonic runs to the base and hears a loud humming noise. Getting a running start, Sonic runs into the door and sends it flying. Amy and Dash look at the doorway. They would go to Sonic, but the laser would fire.

Amy's relief is clear in her voice. "Sonikku! You're finally here!"

Sonic lands a hard Flying Kick to the machine, sending it aiming at another part of the room and then making it blow a decent sized hole in the wall.

Kneeling in front of Amy, Sonic wraps his rose-pink wife and bluish-purple son in a tight hug. "Are you two okay?"

Amy layers Sonic's face, neck, muzzle, and chest with loving nuzzles and kisses. "We are now, my love."

The sound of clapping makes the hedgehog family turn to the doorway. Sonic is confused by who he sees. "Doctor Alnilam?"

The robot smiles. "Your wife will do all the explaining."

Amy explains everything, then Sonic turns to the robot. "Did you have to kidnap Amy and Dash?"

Robot Alnilam shrugs. "It was extra incentive. I'm going to take your ruining of my laser as an acceptance of my challenge."

Sonic removes his blue shirt and gives it to Amy. "It's big enough to cover you up. Go home and wait for me there."

Nodding, Amy puts on Sonic's shirt and runs. The robot lets Amy and Dash go, his attention now focused on Sonic. "Shall we begin?"

Sonic growls. "Do your worst."

Robot Alnilam smiles. "Believe me, I will."

Grabbing Sonic by the neck, the robot ignites the rockets built into his shoes. Lifting Sonic over his head, Robot Alnilam uses the cerulean speedster to break through the ground and get to the city streets.

-Eight hours later-

Amy sits at home with the sleeping Dash, waiting for Sonic to return. She hadn't heard or seen anything of her husband since she ran home eight hours ago. A knock on her door makes Amy nearly rip the door from the hinges when she opens it. However, it's not Sonic she sees. Instead she sees Tails, Chief Parkinson, and Doctor Alnilam.

The orange fox speaks first. "Sonic's in the hospital Amy. I'm here to watch Dash so you can go see him."

Amy's eyes fill with tears. "W-What happened?"

Doctor Alnilam speaks now. "First, I apologize for what's happened to Sonic. I had no idea Robotnik built a robot version of me. Back to the point, though. Sonic was still in surgery when I left the hospital an hour ago. He'd been there for four hours."

The tears begin to fall more rapidly as Chief Parkinson speaks now. "He did a number on that robot, but nearly died in defeating it."

Amy falls to her knees, crying heavily now. "Can-Can I go s-see him?"

Tails smiles. "That's why I'm here. The others will visit on another day. Get going."

Nodding, Amy gets into Chief Parkinson's car. Doctor Alnilam joins them, and Chief Parkinson drives them to the hospital.

-Station Square Hospital, 30 minutes later-

The police car barely has time to stop moving before Amy's feet hit the ground. Amy's a blur of pink fur and a purple sundress as she darts into the hospital.

Running up to the desk, Amy pants her request. "Where's Sonic?"

The secretary taps a few keys on her keyboard. "He's in ICU Room 4."

Amy bolts to the door. The sign outside the door says "Sonic the Hedgehog". Slowly opening the door, Amy gasps and runs to her husband's side. Collapsing onto Sonic's limp body, Amy's body heaves as she cries, her voice broken by her sobbing. "Oh, Sonikku... Please speak to me... Please... Sonic I need you...."

There's no response, and Amy keeps crying. Suddenly the machine monitoring Sonic's heartbeat flat lined.

Amy nearly tears the door off its hinges when she opens it. "I need a doctor! Sonic's flat lining!" Two doctors enter with a defibrillator. Cranking up the machine, the doctors put the paddles on Sonic's chest. "Clear!"

Sonic's body jumps as the electricity shoots through his body. No change. The doctors repeat the process, and Sonic's heartbeat returns.... for 10 seconds. Amy walks to Sonic, a thoughtful look on her face.

The doctors give Amy a sympathetic look, and she looks back at them. "You may have given up, but I haven't."

Putting her hands gently on Sonic's chest, the sakura speaks to her cobalt husband. "Sonikku, over two years ago you saved my life with a kiss. It's time for me to return the favor."

Taking a breath, Amy gently presses her velvet lips to Sonic's lips. It takes a few seconds, but the machine does eventually start beeping again.

Beep....

Beep....

Beep....

The doctors watching would later swear they saw a yellowish glow where Amy's hands were touching Sonic's chest. The kiss breaks and Amy looks at the machine.

She smiles when she sees a heartbeat registering, and then she turns to the doctors. "Sonic will be fine."

Nodding, the two doctors leave the room. Once they do, Amy sends a text message to Tails. 'Tails, I'm staying with Sonic at the hospital tonight.'

The twin-tailed fox replies a few seconds later. 'Thanks for the update. Also, turn on the news. They're showing what happened.'

Amy nods and sends another message. 'Thank you very much for watching Dash. Sonic will live, but he'll be recovering for a long time.'

Tails replies: 'I'm very relieved. See you soon.'

Amy smiles and turns on the TV in Sonic's room. Sure enough, the news was showing what footage they could get their hands on.

The anchorwoman was relating the story. "From what we could gather, Robot Alnilam was left behind by Doctor Robotnik when he died. The

robot was to carry on with attempting to achieve world domination in Robotnik's place."

Amy sighs, realizing Sonic was right. He'd had a bad feeling something was off, and now he'd been proven right. The anchorwoman turns to a firefighter at the scene and asked what happened.

The firefighter sighs. "Based on all the destruction, it was one hell of a fight. The robot and Sonic gave as good as they got. Sonic was glowing a yellow color and landing plenty of good hits. They fought so long that Sonic wound up returning to his normal blue color."

The anchorwoman nodded. "Can you tell us anything else?"

Shaking his head, the fireman went back to work. A bomb squad technician walks up and was interviewed.

"The robot had a self-destruct program in it. Since the battle was essentially a stalemate, the robot waited until Super Sonic became normal Sonic, the activated the self-destruct. Sonic was close enough that he bore the majority of the massive explosion."

The anchorwoman turns back to the camera. "There's no word as to whether or not Sonic survived. We'll keep you updated as we get more details."

Amy turns off the TV, turns off the lights, and climbs onto Sonic's bed. Giving Sonic a gentle kiss, Amy wraps herself in Sonic's arms. "Wake up soon, my love."

Soon Amy falls asleep, dreaming of Sonic and Dash.

A long recovery

As the days passed, more footage of Super Sonic fighting Robot Alnilam was recovered and shown on the news networks. Amy watched with dull green eyes. She'd seen it all before. Meanwhile, Sonic remained in a comatose state. Tails, Cream, Rouge, Shadow, Knuckles, and Tikal visited on various days. Sonic remained out to the world.

Each passing day, the friends lost hope, thinking the blue hero would never recover. However, Amy Rose Hedgehog never lost hope. She remained strong, and two weeks later her hope paid off. One afternoon, Amy returned from a lunch with Cream, and stopped in her tracks when she entered Sonic's room. There on the hospital bed, Sonic's emerald green eyes looked into Amy's jade green eyes.

The pink hedgehog could barely form words. "S-S-Sonic?"

Sonic smiled, and Amy nearly jumped on him. "Oh Sonikku! I was so worried!"

Sonic held Amy as she layered kisses all over his face and muzzle. Eventually their lips and tongues meet. After the kiss breaks, both hedgehogs stare into each other's eyes. Tears of joy fall from their eyes, and Sonic gently nuzzles Amy, who nuzzles back. Looking into Amy's eyes, Sonic opens his mouth, points to it, and then shakes his head.

Amy frowns. "You can't eat?" Sonic shakes his head, and Amy tries again. "You have no food?"

Again, the cobalt speedster shakes his head. This time, he points to the location of his voice box, and Amy nods. "You have no voice."

Sonic smiles, giving Amy a thumbs up. Amy sighs. "How long will it take you to get your voice back?"

Sonic shrugs, then a doctor enters the room. She drops her clipboard when she sees Sonic is awake.

Amy chuckles. "I told you he'd be fine."

The doctor shakes her head. "Two weeks in a coma, and he finally wakes up."

Amy frowns. "He has no voice."

The doctor shakes her head. "With the injuries he suffered he'll be bedridden for at least the next month."

Amy's jade eyes begin filling with tears, but the doctor continues. "Sonic is going to have some trouble walking once he leaves the hospital, and even then he'll need 6 months to fully recover."

Amy lowers her head, quietly whimpering.

The doctor sighs. "I wish I had a better prognosis Mrs. Hedgehog, but I don't. I'm sorry."

The pink hedgehog nods and the doctor leaves. Turning back to her cerulean husband, Amy eventually stops crying, and looks at Sonic.

"Are you able to tell me what injuries you suffered?"

Sonic nods. He points to his arms, legs, ribs, back, and neck. His next action resembles something breaking. Amy gasps as she realizes what happened to her husband. "You suffered a broken neck, back, arms, legs, and ribs?"

Sonic nods, then points to his head and performs an action resembling something growing. Amy frowns, and asks a passing doctor. She finds out Sonic had also suffered brain swelling as well.

Returning to the room, Amy looks at Sonic. "You have no idea how lucky you are."

Sonic nods and hangs his head. It's gently lifted by Amy, who smiles and kisses him. "I'll be here every chance I get, Sonikku."

Sonic mouths "I love you Amy" to her, and she nuzzles him gently. "I love you too, Sonic."

She climbs back on the bed and curls up to Sonic for a nap. Sonic smiles as Amy begins purring. Closing his eyes, Sonic takes a nap himself.

-1 month later-

It's now the beginning of November. Everyone is there. Amy, Tails, Knuckles, Rouge, Cream, Tikal, and Shadow are all talking to Sonic. He still has no voice, but he's writing his answers down. Keeping their kids in line, everyone waits for the doctor to arrive. Outside the door several media networks are broadcasting live. Sonic was about to leave the hospital.

The anchorwoman for the Station Square network was updating everyone. "Nearly two months ago, world hero Sonic the Hedgehog was nearly killed in battle by a robot left behind by Doctor Robotnik. Today, he's expected to leave the hospital."

The doctor arrives in a few minutes. Once again, it's Doctor Alnilam, and he nods to everyone. "First off, I'm really sorry about all this. I have to admit that I wasn't sure Sonic would live, but as you can all see, he's alive and recovering well."

Everyone forgives the doctor, and then the time arrives. Doctor Alnilam nods to Sonic. "I've been instructed to let you leave the hospital, Sonic. I hope your recovery goes well."

Sonic smiles and takes a breath. Still wearing the blue shorts from his battle, Sonic sits up and gently puts his legs over the side of the bed. Knuckles and Shadow step forward, and Sonic puts an arm around each of their shoulders. With Knuckles and Shadow's support, Sonic gets off the hospital bed.

Cheers erupt from all over Station Square and many other locations, since it was a live broadcast. Knuckles and Shadow help Sonic walk out of his room and eventually out of the hospital. The bright November sunshine forces Sonic to shut his eyes until they adjust to the light change.

The reporters follow with multiple camera flashes. The media tried to get some questions answered, but each attempt failed.

It was a slow process, and Shadow got frustrated. "This is going to take forever. I'm taking the short way."

Getting everyone together, Shadow summons all of his strength. "CHAOS CONTROL!"

Sonic, Amy, Tails, Knuckles, Tikal, Rouge, Cream, Shadow, and all 9 kids vanish in a flash of green light.

-Sonic and Amy's house-

A bright green flash appears and shows everyone. Shadow hits the ground.

Rouge kneels next to him. "Are you okay, hon?"

The black hedgehog nods. "Remind me to never teleport 17 people ever again."

The group chuckles, and Tails helps Knuckles get Sonic into his house. Amy and Dash follow, thanking everyone for their help. After everyone leaves, Amy and Dash join Sonic on the couch. The cerulean speedster cuddles his rose-pink wife and bluish-purple son to him. All three hedgehogs are soon sleeping, happy that Sonic has finally come back home.

November becomes December, and Christmas comes around. Sonic still needs help getting around, but he's gotten his voice back.

Amy snuggles with him as Dash plays with some of his presents. "I'm so glad you're home, Sonikku."

Sonic smiles. "Me too, Ames."

Dash had gotten more clothes and toy cars. Amy had gotten another special perfume that made Sonic crazier for her. Sonic had gotten a cane from Shadow. It was more of a joke, but it had a good cause in mind. Sonic's 26th birthday was tomorrow, and Amy had a special present in mind for him.

Around 9 PM, Amy changed Dash and put him in his crib. Coming back downstairs Amy locks the door and turns off the lights. Supporting her royal blue husband, the rose-pink hedgehog helps him to their room. Both hedgehogs take off their clothes and climb into bed.

Sonic wraps his arms around Amy, and she begins purring. Sonic purrs as well, and a few minutes later Amy gives Sonic a kiss. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you."

Sonic smiles. "I love you too, Amy. Goodnight."

Soon the two hedgehogs are asleep, wrapped in each other's arms.

A birthday to forget, part 1

Sonic wakes up first around 9 AM. Today was his 26th birthday, but little did he know he'd wind up wishing he could forget this birthday. Looking down at Amy, now 23, Sonic gives her a gentle kiss on the forehead.

Amy's eyelids flutter, then the green eyes Sonic loves turn to meet his emerald eyes. "Good morning my sexy husband."

The cobalt speedster blushes. "Good morning my sexy wife."

Amy blushes, and the two hedgehogs share a sweet kiss. After the kiss breaks, Sonic slowly gets out of bed. Amy supports him as they walk to the shower. During the shower Sonic and Amy engage in much cuddling and purring as they wash each other. 30 minutes later, Sonic and Amy are in their room getting dressed. Sonic dresses in a black shirt, blue jeans, and his black speed shoes. Amy decides on a green long-sleeved shirt, blue jeans, and green boots.

The sakura hedgehog gets Dash from his crib and changes his diaper as Sonic hobbles downstairs to eat breakfast. Amy dresses Dash in a blue shirt, matching jeans, and the blue hover shoes Shadow got him for his 2nd birthday. The bluish-purple hedgehog toddler doesn't know how to use them, so they're just another pair of shoes.

Amy and Dash come downstairs and enter the kitchen, where Sonic has cereal and toast ready. Amy picks Dash up, since he's walking around some now, and sits him in her lap. As the three hedgehogs eat, Sonic and Amy discuss the plans for the day.

Amy makes the first suggestion. "I think we should spend some time in the park, since it's a sunny day."

Sonic nods. "I like that plan, babe. Will we need the stroller?"

Amy smiles. "I don't think so. Dash is walking around a bit now, and if the need is there, I can carry him."

The speedster frowns. He missed holding Dash, and Amy gave Sonic's right hand a squeeze. "I know you miss holding Dash, but you'd probably drop him given that you've only got one free arm."

Sonic frowns at his rose pink wife. "I only need one arm to carry him, Amy."

She sighs and puts her dishes away. "Fine. You can carry Dash a few times, but if you don't feel strong enough to carry him, give him to me."

Sonic nods, puts his dishes away, and hobbles out to the front porch. Amy gets Dash a coat and joins her husband and son. Sonic locks the door, and the hedgehog family goes to the park.

-Station Square Park-

Sonic, Amy, and Dash are seen near one of the many lakes in the park. Dash sets off crawling in the grass after some birds sitting nearby. Amy follows to make sure the hedgehog toddler doesn't fall into the water. As Sonic watches, someone taps on his left shoulder.

Sonic looks, but finds no one. Sonic returns to watching Amy and Dash, but is tapped on his right shoulder this time. Again Sonic looks, and finds no one. He smiles, then hears a deep giggle.

Shaking his head, Sonic goes back to watching Amy and Dash, calling the person out. "Shadow, will you quit screwing around."

Chuckling, Shadow walks up beside Sonic. "Took you long enough."

Sonic smiled. "Where's Rouge?"

The black hedgehog nodded to his right. "They're at my house, her and my son."

Sonic nodded. "Are they coming to the park?"

Shadow nods now. "They'll be here soon. How's your recovering going?"

The blue blur sighs. "It's slow. I actually just got my voice back, and I'm stuck using the cane you got me for Christmas to help me get around."

Shadow chuckles. "From the injuries I heard you suffered, you're lucky to even be alive. I always knew you were tough to get rid of, but damn if I ever got that close to killing you."

Sonic agrees, then gets a confused look on his face when he sees Amy running to him, carrying Dash. "Sonic!"

Shadow smiles and takes his leave. "Happy birthday, Sonic."

Thanking Shadow, Sonic turns to Amy. "Yes, my love?"

She puts Dash down as she catches her breath. "Dash just said his first word."

Sonic was stunned and happy at the same time. "What-What did he say?"

This time, Dash speaks. "Dada."

Amy smiles. "That's what he said."

Sonic picks Dash up, a few tears in his eyes. "I feel honored that Dash spoke his first word on my birthday."

Amy presses against her husband. "Happy birthday Sonikku."

Sonic gives Amy a kiss. "Thanks Ames. I don't know how this day could get any better."

Amy giggles. "I do, but it's a secret."

Sonic chuckles, and the three hedgehogs resume their walk through the park.

-Sonic and Amy's house-

After spending four hours in the park, Sonic and Amy walk into the house. Dash is sleeping in Amy's arms. Sonic shuts the door as Amy puts Dash in his crib. Sonic sits on the couch and turns on the TV. Amy joins him in a few minutes, snuggling up to her cerulean husband. The pink hedgehog sighs contently as Sonic wraps her in his strong arms. The TV is on the local news channel, and they were showing the weather forecast.

Sonic frowns. "They're forecasting some really bad storms tonight, Ames. Lots of lightning, heavy rain, and high winds. Hail and tornadoes are possible, but unlikely."

Amy sighs. "It's a good thing we'll be inside."

Sonic nods, and he turns the TV to a movie that was on. It's not long before Sonic and Amy are asleep, snuggled close together.

-Four hours later-

It's 5 PM now, and it's dark outside. The sun has set, and the storms have arrived. There's a flash of lightning, and the loud thunderclap wakes Amy up.

Very gently she wakes up her husband. "Sonic? Sonic, wake up."

The blue blur slowly opens his emerald green eyes, and smiles at his rose-pink wife. "Hey there. Everything okay?"

Another flash of lightning and loud thunderclap makes Amy press against Sonic. Sitting up, Sonic holds the shaking Amy in his arms. "Shh.... I'm here Amy. You'll be just fine."

Amy snuggles up to her husband, purring. She looks into her husband's eyes. "Sonikku? I have a question."

Sonic looks into his wife's eyes. "Yes my love?"

Amy smiled. "Can we perform the mating ritual?"

Sonic shakes his head. "No, we can't Amy. Sorry."

Amy gets a shocked look on her face. "B-But... You've never turned that down before."

Sonic frowns. "I've been out of the hospital for almost two months, Amy. I wouldn't be able to perform like usual. Besides, I'm not in the mood."

Amy frowns as the storms get worse. "Am I not pleasing you when it happens?"

Sonic laughs. "Of course you're pleasing me, Amy. However, there will be times that we don't or won't want to have sex. This is just one of those times."

Amy lowers her head, turning away from Sonic. "Just don't worry about it."

The blue hedgehog gets a worried look on his face. "Amy?"

The pink hedgehog shakes her head. "I don't want to talk about it anymore."

Sonic puts a hand on Amy's left shoulder, but she whirls on him. "I SAID LEAVE IT ALONE!"

Sonic's face twitches in anger. "Fine. Not only will I leave it alone, I'll leave YOU alone too!"

Amy's anger quickly turns to fear. "Sonic, no! Wait!"

But she was too late. Sonic vanishes in a flash of blue light. Amy runs upstairs to check on Dash. He's crying, and Amy holds him to calm him down. She lets some tears fall as well, and only one thought crosses her mind. 'I have to find him.'

After changing Dash, Amy calls Tails. "Tails, it's Amy. We need the Sonic Tracker."

A birthday to forget, part 2

Tails arrives at Sonic and Amy's house. The thunderstorm is going all out. The wind is howling, and the rain is so heavy Tails can't see three feet in front of him. Lightning hits the ground as it roars from the clouds. Shaking his head, the orange fox walks up to the door and knocks on it.

Amy opens the door, holding Dash, and Tails nods. "I've contacted Shadow and Knuckles. They're going to help us look for Sonic."

Amy nods and climbs into the X Tornado with Tails. After dropping Dash off at the Prower residence, Tails and Amy fly to the forest.

-Station Square Forest-

The X Tornado lands outside the forest. Shadow and Knuckles meet Tails and Amy as they climb from the ship.

Tails shakes his head. "Why did he leave this time Amy?"

The pink hedgehog sighs. "We got into an argument. He turned down sex for the first time, and I wound up yelling at him."

Tails, Knuckles, and Shadow blinked. It was Knuckles that made the mistake of speaking. "Amy, you know there's going to be times he'll not want to have sex. Besides, he's just gotten out of the hospital."

Amy whirls on him. "NOBODY ASKED YOU!"

Shadow shut them both up. "Will you two stop bitching! You're losing focus of why we're here! In this weather and in his condition, Sonic may not last long. Let's get searching."

With this statement, the four friends begin searching for the wayward speedster.

-Six hours later-

It's nearing midnight, and the storm hadn't let up at all. Everyone's clothes were soaked, and they knew they'd be sick. Approaching a cliff, a lightning flash illuminates the cliffside. Tails thinks he sees something on the precipice. Another lightning flash confirms Tails' guess. "There he is!" Amy, Knuckles, and Shadow all run up to the orange fox. Sure enough, Sonic is sitting on the edge of the cliff like nothing was happening.

Amy runs to her husband. "SONIC!"

The blue hedgehog turns, and stands as Amy gets to him. "What are you doing out here? It's too dangerous. Go home."

Amy shakes her head, beginning to shiver from the cold and the rain. "I'm not leaving without you."

Tails steps forward, but Shadow holds him back. "They're married now. Let them settle their own problems."

Tails frowns, but nods. Meanwhile, Sonic shakes his head at Amy. "I'm not going to argue. Go home. The lightning could kill you."

Amy narrows her eyes. "Any more likely than it could kill you? No. I'm staying, and if I get struck, I hope it kills you inside."

Sonic sighs. "Please, Amy. I've almost lost you twice already. Don't make the third time the one that actually makes me lose you."

Amy gently tugs on Sonic's hands. "Then come home. Please."

Sonic feels himself melting inside to the pleading green eyes of his wife. Amy sees the brightness return to Sonic's emerald eyes, and she nods. "Yes, Sonic. Come on. Let's go home now."

Sonic frowns. "It's not that easy. You yelled at me for turning down sex when we both know I'm not ready to start doing that yet."

Amy nods, pressing against her cobalt husband for warmth. "I know. I'm sorry, Sonikku. Please forgive me."

Sonic smiles and lifts his rose-pink wife's head gently. "Of course I forgive you. Your apology is accepted."

Amy smiles, then gives Sonic the "Don't-You-Have-Something-To-Say" look. Sonic chuckles. "I'm sorry I yelled at you, too. Please forgive me."

Amy smiles and kisses him. "Of course Sonic. I forgive you, and your apology is accepted."

Sonic and Amy lean forward to kiss, but the weather had other plans. A lightning bolt lands right between the two hedgehogs, and splits the rock. Sonic goes flying and Amy falls over the cliff.

Shaking his head to clear his blurry vision, Sonic looks at the cliff. "Amy!"

Amy's voice is barely heard over the wind. "Sonic! Help!"

Running as best he could to the cliff, Sonic looks over and finds Amy hanging by one hand. Her green eyes are filled with fear. "Sonic!"

Amy's grip gives out, and she falls. She closes her eyes and waits for the life-ending impact, but it never comes. Slowly opening her eyes, Amy looks up and finds Sonic holding onto her with both hands. Shadow, Tails, and Knuckles are shocked, and it shows on their faces. They didn't know how Sonic could take that much pain considering he'd only been out of the hospital for nearly two months.

The cerulean hero's emerald green eyes looked directly into the sakura hedgehog's jade green eyes. The pain was clear on Sonic's face. Another lightning flash glinted off of the white gold wedding rings the hedgehogs wore on their hands. Sonic takes a breath, and a determined look comes to his face. He grits against the pain and begins pulling Amy back to safety as his scars and stitches opened up. Once Amy's back on solid ground, Sonic falls to the ground, panting heavily.

Amy kneels beside him as Tails, Shadow, and Knuckles run over as well. Amy gasps when she sees red streams flowing from Sonic's body. Gently

taking his muzzle in her hands, Amy nuzzles him. "Oh Sonikku! You're bleeding!"

Sonic nods. "I knew that would probably happen, but I'd rather suffer this than live without you. Why did you come for me?"

Amy whimpers as she takes Sonic's right hand and presses it against her left cheek. "I was scared you wouldn't come back."

Sonic shakes his head as more lightning flashes. "As you told me a few years ago, every relationship has bumps in the road. This is just one of them."

Shadow speaks up now. "Can you two be mushy later? The rest of us are nearly battered flat by this rain."

Amy helps Sonic up, and gets him out of the forest with Knuckles' help. Tails helps Amy get Sonic into the X Tornado, but not without one last statement from Shadow. "Stop being so stupid, faker."

He and Knuckles then vanish in a flash of green light. Tails and Amy climb into the X Tornado, then take off from the forest.

-Sonic and Amy's House-

After getting Dash from Tails and Cream's house, Sonic and Amy walk in with the sleeping bluish-purple hedgehog toddler in Amy's arms. Sonic locks the door, and Amy puts Dash in his crib.

Getting a first aid kit, Amy finds Sonic on the couch, head in his hands. "Sonikku? What's wrong?"

Sonic sighs. "Well, I nearly lost you again. I shouldn't have run off, especially in my condition."

Amy begins working on Sonic's cuts as she talks to him. "Once again, you came back. What's better is that you saved me... I believe that's the fourth time I've needed saving, compared to your one."

Sonic winces as the alcohol soaks into his open wounds. "Maybe, but still... I'm sorry I ran off again."

Amy looks into Sonic's eyes. "I shouldn't have yelled at you. It's my fault you ran off this time."

Sonic nuzzles Amy's muzzle, then turns his head and sneezes. Amy laughs, finishes with his cuts, and puts the first aid kit away. Turning to Sonic, she sneezes, and Sonic chuckles. "Looks like we'll be stuck around the house for a while."

Amy giggles and locks the door. Helping Sonic off the couch, she helps him up the stairs, both hedgehogs sneezing. Once they arrive in their room, the two hedgehogs change out of their soaked clothes. Sonic gets some blue boxers and Amy chooses a pink nightgown. After more sneezing, Sonic and Amy climb into bed and snuggle close together.

Amy nuzzles Sonic's chest. "I'm glad you're home, Sonikku."

Sonic kisses Amy's forehead. "I'm glad I'm back, too. I love you Amy. So very much."

Amy smiles when Sonic's strong arms wrap around her. "I love you too, Sonic. Very much."

Sonic and Amy are soon asleep, wrapped in each other's arms.

Anniversary romance

The months pass as Sonic recovers from the battle against Robot Alnilam. Like the doctor said, it took 6 months for Sonic to return to his old self. It's June now, and Sonic is finally running around at full speed. Amy smiles as she watches Sonic and Dash play around in the grass. Sonic and Amy's third wedding anniversary was coming in a few days, and Sonic had a special plan in mind for Amy.

After the cobalt hedgehog and bluish-purple toddler get done frolicking in the grass, Amy comes out to join them. A gentle breeze stirs her green sundress as she walks to Sonic and Dash. "Hey you two. Ready for dinner?"

Sonic and Dash just smile. Their blue clothes had several green grass stains on them from playing in the yard. Amy giggles. "I'll take that as a yes."

Sonic gets up, picks Dash up, and kisses Amy. "You know we both love your cooking, babe."

The pink hedgehog nuzzles Sonic. "I love everything about you, my sexy husband."

Sonic blushes and takes Amy's hand as they walk inside, Dash racing in behind them. Amy soon has grilled cheeses ready, and joins her husband and son in the living room. Dash climbs onto Sonic's lap and eats his sandwich with Sonic's help.

Dash bites Sonic's fingers a few times with tiny white teeth, and Sonic laughs. "He gets a little feisty when he eats doesn't he?"

Amy nods. "He's bitten my fingers several times as well."

After they eat, the three hedgehogs watch a movie on TV. It doesn't take long for Dash to fall asleep. Amy puts Dash in his crib upstairs and rejoins her husband on the couch. Cuddling the sakura hedgehog to him, the royal blue speedster begins purring. Amy purrs as well, and the hedgehogs eventually kiss.

Fireworks go off in their heads as their tongues meet. Loud moaning is heard, and then the kiss breaks. Amy and Sonic look into each other's sparkling green eyes.

Amy speaks first. "Sonic, I want you."

Sonic whispers deeply into Amy's ears. "That's going to have to wait until our anniversary."

Amy pouts, using the Puppy Face on her husband. "Please Sonikku?"

Sonic melts inside, but shakes his head, giving Amy the answer she didn't want to get. "You'll have to wait. I'm sorry."

Amy frowns. "You had better be able to perform."

Sonic smiles. "You won't have to worry about that."

Amy giggles and gives a squeal as Sonic picks her up bridal style. Sonic locks the door and bolts upstairs. Amy begins tickling Sonic when they enter their room. She smiles when Sonic turns red in the face. "HAHA! Okay – Heehee – Okay Ames! Hahahaha! Okay Amy!"

Amy stops tickling him, but then Sonic begins tickling her. "My turn now."

Amy squeals as Sonic tickles her. "GAH! Sonic! Hahahaha! Please – Haha – Please stop!"

Sonic shakes his head. "Not until you surrender."

The tickling resumes, and Amy gasps for breath. "Sonic! – Hahaha – Okay! I surrender!"

Amy pants after Sonic stops tickling her, trying to catch her breath. Once she does, Sonic turns off the bedroom light, then Dash starts making noise. Amy goes to change the hedgehog toddler, and then rejoins Sonic in their room. The two hedgehogs undress and climb into bed.

Sonic cuddles Amy to him. "Goodnight Amy Rose Hedgehog. I love you."

Amy nuzzles Sonic's chest and abs. "Goodnight Sonic T Hedgehog. I love you too."

Soon the two hedgehogs are asleep.

-June 16th-

Sonic and Amy's third wedding anniversary arrives. The blue hero wakes up around 9 AM and looks down at Amy. A gentle kiss to the pink hedgehog's forehead wakes her up. The two pairs of green eyes meet, and a tender lip lock ensues.

After the kiss breaks, Amy speaks first. "Happy anniversary Sonikku."

He smiles. "Happy anniversary Ames. Are you ready for the day?"

Amy giggles. "Of course, but what will we do about Dash?"

Sonic thinks for a second. "Well, with what I have planned, he can't come with us."

Amy nods. "Well, he does love going to Tails and Cream's house."

Nodding, Sonic calls Tails and explains everything. A few minutes later, Sonic ends the call and turns to Amy. "Tails would love to help Cream with Dash."

The hedgehog toddler makes some noise in his room. Amy gets him after putting on a red robe, and Sonic takes a shower. Amy gives Dash to Sonic once he gets done and then takes her own shower. Once she gets done, Sonic and Amy take Dash to Tails and Cream's house.

-1 hour later-

Sonic and Amy appear in a flash of blue light, and they're in front of a very nice resort spa. The pink hedgehog gasps and then hugs her blue stud tightly. "Oh Sonikku! This is so exciting!"

He smiles. "At this spa, I can give you massages if you want."

Amy literally drags Sonic inside and up to the front desk. Once the paperwork is filled out, Sonic and Amy are given Massage Room 8. Amy had chosen for Sonic to give her the full body massage. When they enter the room, Sonic and Amy feel their jaws drop. In one corner of the room is a black granite waterfall with water trickling down it. There's also one bed with various oils beside it used for the massage.

Amy shuts the door and presses against her cobalt husband. "Oh Sonikku.... I'm ready for my massage."

Sonic makes Amy shiver with his deep voice. "You know you have to be naked for this, right?"

Giving him a naughty wink, the rose-pink hedgehog teasingly takes off her pink shirt, purple skirt, and pink sandals. Next to go are the purple bra and undergarments. Sonic grins, feeling his member hardening. Amy gets on the bed, and Sonic washes his hands in the nearby sink. After drying his hands off, Sonic takes off his black muscle shirt and puts it in one of the pockets of his gray shorts.

Amy smiles. "You read my mind, Sonic."

He chuckles, gets a warming oil, and begins the massage. Amy shivers as Sonic's hands gently rub her neck and head. The tension that had built up over the last few years simply melted under Sonic's touch. The pink hedgehog begins purring as Sonic massages her. The cerulean speedster smiles as his hands move to Amy's delicate shoulders. Amy purrs a little louder, her jade green eyes closed in ecstasy.

Her thoughts: 'This feels wonderful. I've been given massages from Sonic before, but this is beyond belief.'

Amy feels Sonic's hands work down her back to her ample rear. His touch makes her giggle as he massages the area. Amy's tail starts wagging as Sonic now moves to the long legs. Sonic smiles as the purring from his rose-pink wife resumes. Moving to the feet, Sonic works his strong hands around the ankles and all over Amy's feet.

Amy starts to moan a little now, her eyes remaining closed. "Ohh, Sonic... That feels so nice."

The massage continues until the hour is used up. Amy gets dressed and collapses onto Sonic. "That was the best massage you've ever given to me."

Sonic smiles and opens the door. "It's not over yet. We still have our dinner to get to."

After Sonic puts his shirt on, the two hedgehogs leave the spa.

-7:30 PM-

A limo arrives in front of the Olive Garden that Sonic and Amy went to on their first date. Sonic steps out wearing a black suit with a blue tie. He helps his wife out of the limo after straightening his tie. Amy's wearing a black dress and black four inch heels. After getting their table, Sonic and Amy look over the menu, then look into each other's eyes.

The next five minutes passes very quickly, then the waitress arrives. It's Rachel, and she smiles at the two hedgehogs. "Well, hello again you two."

Sonic and Amy smile, and Sonic speaks first. "Hello again Rachel. How have things been?"

Rachel smiles. "Well, things have been pretty good. I was hoping you two would have been back sooner."

Amy speaks now. "We would have been, if a certain married pair of hedgehogs hadn't had a baby."

Rachel chuckles. "I'm sure this is late, but congratulations."

They talk for a few more minutes, then Rachel takes their orders. Amy goes first. "I'll have a Caesar salad please."

Sonic orders the shrimp scampi, and then Rachel goes to get their food.

-1 hour later-

Sonic and Amy are now riding home. They left a nice tip for Rachel at the restaurant, and were snuggled together in the back seat of the limo, purring. Once the limo reaches their house, Sonic helps Amy out, pays the driver, and they head inside. Tails had called Sonic on the way home, asking if Dash could stay the night since it was Sonic and Amy's wedding anniversary. The hedgehogs agreed, and it would wind up working in their favor.

Sonic locks the door and winks at Amy. "Be in our room in five minutes."

Bolting up the stairs, the cobalt speedster leaves his sakura wife a little confused. Five minutes passes, then Amy goes to their room.

-Sonic and Amy's Room-

Amy knocks on the door, and Sonic opens it. The lights are off, and apple-cinnamon candles are lit in various places, giving the room an all-too-familiar glow. Amy smiles at Sonic, because she knows what's on his mind.

She shuts the door and presses against her royal blue husband. "Sonikku? What's on your mind?"

Sonic smiles at his rose-pink wife. "You are on my mind. I want you right here, right now."

Amy giggles. "What are you waiting for then?"

Sonic's answer is a strong kiss to Amy's velvet lips. Amy's eyes widen, and when the kiss breaks, she gives Sonic a confused look. "Where is this coming from, my love?"

Sonic nuzzles Amy tenderly. "I need to make up for denying your needs in the past."

The kissing resumes as Sonic and Amy are soon naked and rubbing each other's bodies. Again the kiss breaks, and the two pairs of green eyes reveal how much Sonic and Amy want each other. Laying Amy on the blue silk sheets, Sonic begins laying light kisses on Amy's neck and shoulders.

Amy moans, and then she feels Sonic's sharp fangs on her left shoulder. The pink hedgehog moans loudly, and her blue stud repeats the motion on her right shoulder. Another loud moan, and Amy begins grinding her womanhood on Sonic's thighs.

Giving a deep chuckle, Sonic whispers into Amy's ears. "I'm not done yet."

Amy frowns. "Will you hurry please?"

Sonic chuckles. "The best mating rituals are always slow to begin."

After a short nibbling on her ears, Sonic moves to Amy's 36C breasts. His tongue comes out and softly licks Amy's left nipple.

Amy takes handfuls of Sonic's quills and holds him to her breast, moaning loudly. "Ohh Sonic..."

Smiling, the blue hero begins to suckle on the large dark pink nipple. Another loud moan from Amy makes Sonic start gently nibbling on the nipple. His left hand rubs Amy's right nipple and his right hand rubs Amy's clitoris.

The pink hedgehog's moans become screams as her pleasure rises. "OH YEAH! GIVE ME MORE! PLEASE, BABY! MORE!"

Putting his thumb on Amy's clit, Sonic's middle finger begins rubbing Amy's G Spot. Amy shudders as Sonic switches nipples, suckling on the right nipple and rubbing the left nipple.

Amy screams to her husband. "SONIC! I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Sonic speeds up his actions, and seconds later Amy tenses up in orgasm. Her warm juices spray onto Sonic's hand as she screams his name. "SONIC!"

Sonic looks down at his wife, who's panting heavily. Amy's jade green eyes are sparkling with ecstasy as she recovers from her orgasm. "S-Sonic... Wow... How do you know these moves?"

He chuckles. "Well, I know what turns you on, and I just go with your sounds."

Amy smiles. "Now it's my turn, you sexy husband of mine."

Sonic grins as Amy jumps on him and kisses him with more passion than he can remember. The kisses work their way down to Sonic's nipples, and Amy smiles. Moving her head to the right nipple, Amy's soft tongue gently teases it hard.

Sonic moans. "Ohh Amy... That feels awesome."

The sakura hedgehog grins and begins to suckle on the nipple. Sonic takes handfuls of Amy's long pink quills. She'd let them grow out again, and they now reached three inches past her shoulders. Sonic twirled them around his fingers and held Amy in place as his moans get louder.

These moans are fuel to Amy's hormones, and she switches to the left nipple. Her right hand teases Sonic's fuzzy testicles as her left hand rubs Sonic's right nipple. Amy feels her sturdy blue stud shudder as his pleasure rises. Amy stops her teasing of Sonic's nipples and testicles, and moves to Sonic's manhood.

Licking her lips, Amy locks her jade eyes with Sonic's emerald eyes. Sonic smiles, and Amy begins licking the tip of the 8 inch appendage.

Sonic gives a low growl, and Amy smiles. Her right hand begins stroking the thick shaft, and Sonic moans loudly. "Yes Amy! More!"

Amy reaches up and pinches Sonic's nipples as she deep throats all 8 inches of Sonic's meaty member. The blue hedgehog gently begins pulling on Amy's soft quills, and Amy speeds up her actions. Sonic shivers and pulls on Amy's long quills just a little harder. Amy begins purring, since she loved it when Sonic pulled on her soft pink quills.

Sonic feels his organ pulse, and he makes his announcement at a loud volume. "Amy! I'm going to cum!"

Amy moans, and it's only a few more seconds before Sonic reaches orgasm. As he unloads into her mouth, Sonic shouts Amy's name. "Amy!"

The rose-pink hedgehog's eyes sparkle as her stud fills her mouth with his seed. Once he's done climaxing, Amy swallows the whole load, and smiles at Sonic. "Mmmm... I love how you're always so fertile, Sonikku."

He smiles back. "It's all for you, too."

Amy giggles and gets on her hands and knees. "Since you know what turns me on, you should also know this position."

Sonic studies her for a minute, then pretends he doesn't know. "In our entire relationship, I have never seen you in this position."

Amy turns to him, growling. "You had better be joking, Sonic."

The speedster kisses his pink wife. "Of course I am. Give me just a minute."

Sonic gets off the bed, and gets a condom and the lube. Amy nods and lifts her tail. Sonic puts the condom on his member, lubes it up, then lubes Amy's anus up. Positioning himself behind Amy, Sonic takes a grip on her hips. "Ready Ames?"

Amy nods, and Sonic gently enters Amy's ample rear. Amy shudders, moaning as she feels Sonic massive manhood fill her. "Oohhh Sonic..."

After Sonic enters, Amy nods and tells him he may continue. Sonic begins a gentle thrusting into Amy's tight anus, making her moan. "Ohh yes... Go faster my love."

The increase is immediate as Amy feels Sonic speed up. Her moans make Sonic go crazy inside. "Oh yeah. Uh. Mmmm. Yes, Sonic. Go harder and faster."

Sonic speeds up again, reaching around and gently pinching Amy's large nipples. Amy's moans get louder now. "Oh yes! Just like that! Yes Sonic!"

Sonic's deep voice makes chills race down Amy's spine. "I want to hear you beg."

Looking behind her, Amy pants her desire. "Sonic... Spank me please. I need you to spank me. It feels so good."

Sonic grins. "I don't know Amy."

The pink hedgehog's sounds get louder as Sonic speeds up again. "UH! SONIC, PLEASE! SPANK ME! I NEED IT NOW!"

Sonic stops pinching Amy's nipples and spanks her. Hard. Amy tosses her head back and screams as loud as she can. "YES! JUST LIKE THAT BABY!"

Sonic adds in a few more spanks, then speeds up again and begins rubbing Amy's clit. Amy shudders and looks behind her to Sonic. "SONIC! I - UH! - I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Sonic nods. "Me too babe! Get ready!" Sonic makes a few more thrusts, then holds as his next orgasm crashes over his ripped frame.

His grip on Amy's hips tightens as he unloads into the condom, screaming Amy's name. "AMY!"

At the same time, Amy shakes as her orgasm tears through her luscious body. Her juices spray onto Sonic's thighs as she screams his name at full volume. "SOOONNIIC!"

Sonic gently pulls out of Amy's rear and discards the condom. Lying down on his back, Sonic begins trying to regain control of his breathing, and grunts when Amy lays down on top of him.

The sakura hedgehog's sparkling jade green eyes look into her cerulean husband's shining emerald green eyes. "Wow Sonic. (panting) That was one of the strongest (panting) orgasms I've ever had."

Sonic smiles. "I'm glad (panting) it was that strong baby. That means (panting) I'm still pleasing you."

Amy giggles. "Of course you are Sonikku. (panting) I'd let you know if you weren't."

Sonic smiles. "Good. (panting) Before we continue though, I'd like to (panting) catch my breath."

Amy nods. "Sounds good (panting) but don't wait too long."

Sonic nuzzles Amy, who nuzzles back. A few minutes pass, then Sonic nods. "Ready babe?"

Amy smiles and kisses him. "Get another condom, sexy."

Sonic gets the condom after Amy gets off of him, and puts it on his huge manhood. Amy has Sonic lay on his back, and mounts him.

"My turn to do the work for awhile."

Sonic laughs. "Just do what you do, babe."

Amy smiles and lowers herself onto Sonic's shaft, moaning as the 8 inch organ fills her completely. Once their groins connect, Amy begins riding Sonic at a fast pace. Her claws dig into Sonic's shoulders, and this makes Sonic hold her hips for extra support.

Amy tosses her head back and moans loudly. "Ohhh Sonikku... So deep... So hard... So thick... Can I go faster?"

Sonic removes his hands and gently begins squeezing Amy's large dark pink nipples. This action makes the pink hedgehog speed up, and Sonic frowns. "I didn't say you could go faster yet."

Amy frowns at her cobalt stud. "Dammit Sonic! Please let me go faster!"

Sonic thinks for a second. "Fine. You may go faster."

Amy immediately rides Sonic at a faster pace, her moans getting louder. "Uh! Uh! Oh yes! I love you Sonic! Oh wow!"

Sonic smiles. "You can go faster if you want."

Amy speeds up yet again, and makes her announcement not long after. "Sonic! I'm going to cum!"

Sonic pinches Amy's nipples and smiles. "Let it out baby. No one will hear us."

Amy reaches orgasm just after Sonic finishes speaking. Her body shakes as her claws dig into Sonic's shoulders, making him wince a little. Her juices spray onto Sonic's abdomen as she screams his pet name. "SONIKKU!"

Amy looks at Sonic with bright green eyes as she recovers from her orgasm. Sonic sits up and kisses her. "I hate saying this, but I haven't cum yet."

Amy smiles. "As much as I love how long you can go, sometimes it sucks."

Sonic chuckles and rolls Amy underneath him. "Don't worry. I'll take over this time, and it shouldn't take that long to finish."

Amy whispers into Sonic's ears. "Why are you still talking then?"

Sonic then begins a hard, fast thrusting into Amy's dripping womanhood. Amy wraps her arms and legs around her royal blue husband, taking a strong grip on his fur. Sonic smiles and watches Amy's breasts bounce with his thrusts.

The pink hedgehog pants to him. "I know they're pretty, but don't just watch."

Sonic speeds up and positions both nipples close together. Leaning his head down, Sonic puts both nipples in his mouth and gently suckles and nibbles on them. Amy nearly has an orgasm just from this, but she manages to hold off.

However, she does skip the moaning and go right to the screaming. "OH YEAH! HARDER SONIC! POUND ME HARDER DAMMIT! HARD AS YOU CAN!"

Sonic begins railing Amy at full speed and power, keeping her large nipples in his mouth. His right hand begins rubbing Amy's clit, and Amy shudders. "MORE! FUCK ME MORE SONIKKU! MAKE ME CUM AGAIN!"

Sonic finally releases Amy's nipples and bites on her shoulders again. Amy screams to Sonic. "I'M GOING TO CUM SONIKKU!"

Sonic grunts his reply. "Me-Me too Amy. Get ready."

10 seconds passes, then Sonic holds as his seed roars into the condom again. He screams Amy's name, giving the soundproof glass a challenge. "AMY!"

At the same time, Amy digs her claws into Sonic's back. She shakes and draws blood as she screams Sonic's name as loud as she can. "SONIC!"

Sonic pulls out of Amy and discards the condom, then both hedgehogs crawl under the sheets. Amy's still shaking a little from her last orgasm, but she could care less at this point.

Sonic wraps her in his arms, inhaling her pheromones and giving a deep, content growl. "Mmmm baby... I love your pheromones."

Amy nuzzles Sonic's abs and chest, then under his chin. "This definitely makes up for denying me in the past Sonic, and I love your odor as well. It helps me calm down."

Sonic gives Amy a gentle nuzzle as well, and yawns. "I think it's time for bed, sweetie."

Amy nods, closing her sparkling green eyes. "I was about to say that myself."

Sonic chuckles and kisses Amy's forehead. "Goodnight Ames. I love you."

Amy smiles. "Goodnight Sonikku. I love you too."

The apple-cinnamon candles and hedgehog pheromones mix, making Sonic and Amy fall asleep in less than 10 minutes.

Sally causes more trouble

July comes around, and Sonic is on the couch, talking with Amy about a letter he's received from Sally. "It says it's very important I go."

Amy frowns. "I'm coming with you."

Sonic smiles. "I wouldn't have it any other way."

Amy gets Dash and walks out to the porch. Sonic walks out, locks the door, and takes Amy's hand. "Chaos Control."

The three hedgehogs vanish in a flash of blue light.

-Federal Jail, Arizona desert-

Sonic, Amy, and Dash appear outside the maximum-security federal jail. Walking inside, Sonic checks them into the jail, and they're escorted to Sally's cell. This time, she wasn't alone. The former squirrel princess narrows her eyes as the hedgehog family stops outside her cell. At first, the talking was short.

Sally glared at Amy. "Whore."

Amy glared back. "Bitch."

Sonic frowns at his pink wife. "Watch your language please."

Turning to Sally, the blue blur shakes his head. "Why did you bring me here?"

Sally smiles. "You have a child."

Sonic nods. "Yes I do. Amy's holding him."

Sally chuckles, and calls behind her. "Samuel, come here please."

The brown squirrelhog toddles over to his mother, and Sally smiles. "This is who I'm talking about."

Amy gives Sonic a look that would freeze beer. Her voice is a low growl. "You have some explaining to do."

Sonic shakes his head. "It's not possible. I haven't once been inside this cell."

Sally grins. "Are you willing to take a DNA test?"

Amy chimes in. "How about a lie detector test?"

Sonic sighs. "Yes to both."

Sally has a guard come over, and she scribbles something down. Handing the paper to Sonic, the ground squirrel nods to it. "Call that number, and see you soon."

Shaking his head, Sonic leaves the jail, followed by Amy and Dash.

-One month later-

Sonic, Amy, and Sally are all in New York City. Their situation is being televised on a TV show that deals in this kind of stuff.

The host of the TV show is talking Amy. "Mrs. Hedgehog, what's going on?"

She growls. "I have a feeling my husband is cheating with his former lover."

A chorus of "BOOO!" erupts from the audience. They know Sonic is Amy's husband. The host continues. "There's something else, isn't there?"

Amy nods. "Sally is claiming Sonic fathered her son."

More booing, and the host nods. "Well, let's see what Sally has to say."

The clip plays, showing the enraged squirrel. "I'm 10,000% sure Sonic is the father of my baby, Samuel! He's got quills like Sonic, and even has green eyes like Sonic! When this test proves Sonic is the father, I want him to take care of his responsibility!"

The host brings Sally out, and security has to be called when Amy summons her hammer and charges at Sally. It takes a few minutes, but order is restored.

The host speaks to the squirrel. "Miss Acorn, how is Sonic the father?"

Sally points to the TV screens. "Tell me that doesn't look like Sonic's child."

The audience agrees, and the host turns to the sakura hedgehog. "You also had Sonic take a lie detector test, didn't you?"

Amy nodded. "If he fails, we have a lot to discuss when we get home."

The host plays the clip of Sonic. The cobalt hedgehog sighs. "I don't know where these accusations are coming from. This is the first time I've seen Sally since she was put in jail over three years ago. I love my wife Amy and my son Dash, and I'd never do this to them. Sally, when this test proves I'm not the father, I want you to leave me and my family alone."

The host brings Sonic out to a chorus of loud booing from the studio audience. The host nods. "Well, what do you have to say, Sonic?"

Sonic frowns. "It's not possible. I've never cheated, and that's not my child."

The host frowns. "These two women say otherwise."

Sonic shakes his head. "I'll let the tests prove them wrong."

The host gets the test results. "If this child is yours Sonic, will you take care of it?"

He nods. "Of course. I'm not the kind to shirk responsibility."

Sally yells at him. "You've done it to Samuel, and I'm surprised you haven't done that to Dash!"

Sonic whirls on her. "You know DAMN well Samuel isn't mine! You're still just fucking jealous that Amy has me! GET OVER YOURSELF!"

Amy gently pulls on Sonic's arm, and he sits down, shaking a little with rage. The host shakes his head, and reads Sonic's lie detector test results. "Sonic, you were asked if you've ever seen Sally since she was put in jail other than when you visited her last month. You said no, and the lie detector was.... Inconclusive."

Amy frowns at Sonic, who sighs. "I was nervous."

Sally speaks up. "Don't worry Amy, that's true."

Amy nods, and the host continues. "Sonic, you were asked if you've ever had sexual contact with Sally during your entire relationship with Amy. You said no, and the lie detector determined that was the truth."

Amy smiles, and the host reads the last question. "Sonic, you were asked if you've ever been with anyone other than Amy during your entire relationship. You said no, and the lie detector test determined... You were telling the truth."

The audience cheers as Sonic stands up. "On your knees and apologize, Amy."

The pink hedgehog slowly gets out of her chair and gets on her knees. The crowd chants "Kiss his feet! Kiss his feet!"

Amy stares up to her husband, who's wearing a black shirt, gray shorts, and his black speed shoes. "Do I have to kiss your feet?"

Sonic chuckles. "No, but you do have to apologize."

Amy wraps her arms around Sonic's strong legs. "I'm so sorry Sonikku. I should have listened to you. Please forgive me."

Sonic smiles and helps Amy up. There are a few tear stains on Amy's green shirt and pink skirt. Sonic gently lifts Amy's head, and his emerald green eyes look right into Amy's jade green eyes. "Of course you're forgiven Amy."

The pink and blue hedgehogs share a kiss and sit back in their seats.

Sally smiles. "There's still one result left."

Sonic and Amy shake their heads, and the host opens the envelope. "Well, I think I know what these results will be, but here goes."

The host looks at the results, and nods. "Sonic is not Samuel's father."

Sally bursts into tears, and Sonic holds Amy back as she once again charges at the former princess. Sonic looks at Sally, and shakes his head. "Why do you keep doing this to yourself, Sally?"

There's no response as Sally continues to cry. The host of the show thanks Sonic and Amy for coming and then goes to Sally to help her find the father of Samuel. Sonic and Amy join hands and vanish in a flash of blue light.

-Tails and Cream's House-

A flash of blue light appears, showing Sonic and Amy. Tails is playing with Dash when the pink and blue hedgehogs arrive. Dash runs over to them. "Mama! Dada!"

Sonic picks Dash up and hugs him. Tails goes over to them, then his own triplets crash into his legs. Cream is right behind them. The 21 year old fox-rabbit pair smiles at the three hedgehogs, and Cream speaks first.

"Miles and I were watching. Why does Sally keep doing this, Sonic?"

The cerulean speedster shakes his head. "I don't know, but I think she's still jealous of me and Amy."

Tails nods. "From what I saw, she's starting to improve."

Amy shrugs. "Either way, keep in mind that she's been sentenced to rot in jail."

Cream speaks again. "What's going to happen with her son?"

Sonic sighs. "I hope he's put up for adoption. It's not fair for him to be in prison."

Tails gets an idea, but keeps it to himself for now. After a few hours of talking and playing with the children, Sonic joins hands with his wife and son, and then the three hedgehogs vanish in a flash of blue light.

-Sonic and Amy's House-

The blue, pink, and bluish-purple hedgehogs appear in their living room. Amy goes to change Dash as Sonic gets dinner ready. He gets the needed things for spaghetti and then something crashes into his legs. Looking down, Sonic finds Dash looking back up at him, wearing Sonic pajamas.

Sonic picks up his son and tickles him. Dash laughs as Amy joins them in the kitchen. She smiles at her husband and her son. "Sonic, what are you making?"

Sonic gives Dash to Amy and stirs the food. "I'm making spaghetti. There will be plenty for all three of us."

10 minutes goes by, and then Sonic brings the meal into the living room. Amy turns the TV on, and the hedgehog family watches various shows on TV as they eat.

Sonic soon takes out his phone and sends a text message to Tails. 'I hope you have an idea for getting Samuel out of the prison, Tails.'

The orange fox replies in a few seconds. 'I'm way ahead of you, Sonic. I just talked to Chris and Helen. They're going to talk it over.'

Sonic smiles and replies: 'Nice job little brother. I hope everything works out with them.'

A few seconds pass, then Tails' reply comes in. 'You're welcome big brother. Talk to you soon.'

Amy looks at Sonic. "What's going on, Sonikku?"

Sonic nuzzles her. "Tails has asked Chris and Helen to adopt Samuel, and they're going to talk it over."

Amy smiles. "I really hope they take him in. It breaks my heart to think about him in that awful place."

Sonic agrees. "Same here, but I think Chris and Helen would make excellent parents."

Another hour passes and then Sonic takes Dash upstairs for bed. Amy cleans up from dinner, locks the door, turns off the lights, and joins Sonic in their room. The hedgehogs undress and climb into bed. The hedgehogs snuggle together, and close their eyes.

Amy yawns and lays her head on Sonic's chest. "Goodnight my sexy husband. I love you."

Sonic blushes and nuzzles Amy tenderly. "Goodnight my sexy wife. I love you too."

Sonic and Amy are quickly asleep, smiles on their faces.

Two unexpected funerals

October rolls around, and we find Sonic, Amy, Dash, and everyone else at the Hedgehog Residence watching a football game. It was the opening week for the season, and everyone was watching their favorite team win. Well, the guys were. Rouge, Cream, Tikal, and Amy were watching the kids and talking about various girl things.

Rouge looks at Slasher, and frowns. "I don't know what's wrong with Slasher. He's got a fever, and nothing seems to be working."

Tikal puts a hand on the toddler's forehead and pulls it away. "You need to get Slasher to a hospital. Now."

Rouge runs into the living room and grabs Shadow's hand. "Shad, we need to get Slasher to the hospital."

The black hedgehog turns his crimson eyes to the white bat. "Fever again?"

Tikal joins them. "I fear it's much worse than just a fever."

Shadow takes Rouge's hand. "Chaos Control."

Shadow, Rouge, and Slasher vanish in a flash of green light. Sonic, Tails, and Knuckles go back to watching the game, unaware of how serious the situation really was.

-Three weeks later-

It's now the beginning of November, nearly one year after Sonic left the hospital. It's a cloudy day, and everyone is gathered at a cemetery. All present were dressed in black, and they were all crying. What caused this to happen? Let's take a trip back in time.

-Flashback-

A green flash appears in the lobby of the Station Square Hospital. Shadow, Rouge, and Slasher approach the secretary's desk, with Shadow doing the talking. "My son is burning up with a fever. Rouge and I have tried all we know, and nothing is working."

The secretary calls Doctor Alnilam. He arrives in the lobby, and nods to them. "What seems to be the problem, Shadow?"

The black hedgehog sighs. "My son has had chronic fever, and nothing seems to be working."

Doctor Alnilam takes Slasher and puts him in room 274. Shadow and Rouge follow. The doctor had been recommended by Sonic and Amy when this problem started, and the bat and hedgehog didn't question why.

Doctor Alnilam turns to face Shadow and Rouge. "I've got Slasher hooked up to various antibiotics, but the outlook isn't good. Come back in a week, and we'll know for sure what's wrong."

Shadow takes Rouge's hand and leads her out of the hospital. On their way home Shadow and Rouge talk about what could be causing their son to be feeling so bad at such a young age.

-One week later-

Shadow and Rouge arrive, along with Sonic, Knuckles, and Tails. Cream, Tikal, and Amy Rose were watching the kids.

Doctor Alnilam meets the group, a concerned look on his face. "Hello everyone. I'm glad you're here, but I have bad news."

Everyone's ears perked up as the doctor knelt before the black hedgehog and white bat. "I'm sorry, but Slasher is dying."

The news shocked everyone. The son of the Ultimate Life Form was dying? Rouge fell onto Shadow, crying on his shoulder.

As Shadow held her, he looked to the doctor. "He's - He's dying?"

Doctor Alnilam nodded and stood up. "It seems you're the carrier of a rare genetic disease, Shadow. Your son inherited it, and there's nothing we can do."

Rouge turned her tear-filled aquamarine eyes to the doctor. "You were recommended by Sonic and Amy. You saved Sonic's life, why can't you save my son?"

Doctor Alnilam spun around. "Do you really think I enjoy telling parents that their child is dying? That's the worst part of this job. I became a doctor to try and keep this from happening, but even I can't work miracles."

Sonic spoke up now. "Actually Rouge, Doctor Alnilam had nothing to do with my surgery other than watching to make sure nothing happened to me."

Shadow spoke to the doctor again. "How long does Slasher have?"

Doctor Alnilam sighs. "If you're lucky, two weeks." Everyone hangs their head as the doctor leaves.

Sonic, Knuckles, and Tails all send the same text message to their partners. 'Slasher is dying. Doctor Alnilam has given him two weeks to live, if he's lucky.'

In less than an hour, the three other females arrive with the other children.

Two weeks passes quickly. Shadow and Rouge are in their dying son's room saying their last goodbyes. Rouge gives Slasher one last kiss, and then the machine flat lines. Shadow picked up his son and held the lifeless body to him. His body heaved as he cried. Rouge just watched, tears streaming from her eyes.

Sonic, Tails, and Knuckles looked in the room from outside the windows, tears flowing from their eyes as well. They rejoin their partners in the lobby, and their crying says it all. Shadow and Rouge eventually rejoined them. The next few hours pass quickly as the group just cries in the lobby. Doctor

Alnilam walks by a few times to check on the group. Each time, nothing changes, so he continues his rounds, wiping tears from his eyes as well.

-End flashback-

We rejoin the group at the funeral. Shadow was giving a speech. "Slasher was my only child. I was expecting him to grow up and use all of the abilities he inherited. However, an unseen disease has taken him too soon. My child..."

Here, Shadow breaks down and just cries, unable to continue. Rouge walks up and helps Shadow to his seat. A few more speeches are given, then the tiny casket is lowered into the ground. The black hedgehog can't and doesn't watch, simply crying on Rouge's left shoulder. The white bat holds him, quietly crying to herself.

As the dirt is piled onto the casket, Sonic begins singing a song. The song is called "Til I Die" by the Beach Boys. It was hard, since he knew this could have easily been his own son, Dash. Tails and Knuckles join in, providing the harmonies to the sad dirge. Once the casket is completely buried, the group leaves, tears falling freely from their eyes.

-One month later-

December comes, and we find Sonic reading another letter from the federal jail Sally was in. Amy, now 24, joins him on the couch.

Dash, now 4, runs in and climbs into Sonic's lap. "Daddy? What's wrong?"

Sonic sighs. "I really don't know how to explain it."

Amy leans over and reads the letter, then gasps. "It's not possible."

Sonic frowns. "We have to go Ames. I won't let Samuel be without a family." Amy nods. "I understand your concern, but we've already got Dash. What about Shadow and Rouge?"

The cerulean speedster thinks. "I don't know Amy. I'm not sure they're ready for another child."

The rose-pink hedgehog sighs. "We'll talk about it later. Right now, let's get to Sally."

Sonic takes Amy's hand, picks up his bluish-purple son, and the three hedgehogs vanish in a flash of blue light.

-Federal Jail, Arizona desert-

The hedgehog family appears outside the jail, and they're led to Sally's cell. The ground squirrel was on her bed, but something wasn't right. Her blue eyes were glazed over, and she looked pale. Samuel had already been taken to an adoption agency so that he wouldn't see Sally's final moments.

Sonic asks one of the paramedics what happened to Sally. The reply was one Sonic never expected. "Miss Acorn has lost the will to live, Sonic. Her time is short, going by her vital signs, so make it quick."

Sonic sighs and walks up to the bars. "Sally?"

The former princess rolls over, coughing up blood. Sally looked at Sonic, then at Amy. "I have a lot to say, so listen."

Sonic nods, and Sally continues. "First, I'm sorry for beating you all those years ago, Amy. It was wrong, and it should never have happened."

Amy nods. "Apology is accepted Sally."

Coughing again, Sally looks at Sonic. "Sonic, I'm sorry I've caused you so much trouble. You were right, I was jealous of Amy having you."

Amy wiped a few tears from her eyes as the squirrel continued. "Sonic, promise me one thing."

The cobalt hero looked at his pink wife, then back to Sally. "What is it Sally?"

Her glazed blue eyes stare into Sonic's emerald green eyes. "Promise me... That you'll find Samuel... A - A good home... To live in."

Sonic nods, a few tears finally escaping from his eyes. "I promise."

Sally smiles, takes a few more breaths, then the blood-soaked cloth falls from her lifeless body. Turning away, Sonic puts his head in his hands, his shoulders heaving with his tears.

Amy walks over to her husband and nuzzles him. "I'm so sorry Sonikku."

Sonic wraps his wife and son in his arms and starts bawling. A white sheet is placed over Sally's body, and she's carried out of the jail.

A few minutes pass, then Amy gently pulls on Sonic. "Come on Sonic. It's time to go."

Slowly the hedgehog family leaves the jail.

-Three days later-

Once again, the group is gathered at the cemetery. Sally's casket was on the ground near where it would be buried.

Sonic was currently giving a speech. "Many years ago, I was proud to say I was with Miss Sally Acorn. I never thought she'd be gone at such a young age. Even though I'm happily married now, a part of me has always cared about her."

Amy gives a slight frown, but understands Sonic's feelings. When he loved someone, he loved with everything he had and would do anything to protect them. Sonic finished his speech and then rejoined his wife and son.

45 minutes goes by, then Sally's casket is lowered into the ground. Shadow and Rouge go to Slasher's grave, their bodies heaving as they cry.

Sonic gives Amy a frown. "I can't have Samuel without a mother or father. That, and I promised Sally her son would have a good home."

Amy frowns back. "I've told you before that I'm not going to adopt Sally's son."

Sonic nods, the wheels in his head turning. "No, but I think I know who will."

Samuel gets adopted

A few days after Sally's death, Sonic walks into his house. He's been visiting with Chris and Helen Thorndike about possibly adopting Samuel. Dash runs over and laughs as Sonic sweeps him up into the air. Amy meets the two male hedgehogs as they played a tickling game.

The sakura hedgehog's jade green eyes sparkle at Sonic's affections toward his son, and she fiddled with the hem of her green shirt. 'Maybe adopting Samuel wouldn't be such a bad thing after all.'

Sonic finishes with Dash and kisses Amy. "Everything okay babe?"

Amy nods. "I was just thinking... Maybe adopting Samuel isn't such a bad idea."

Sonic smiles. "I'm glad you're warming up to the idea. However, Chris and Helen are also thinking about adopting him."

Amy nods. "Not that you're a bad parent, but I think Chris and Helen would make great parents for him."

Sonic put Dash down, and he sped off to play with his toys. The pink and blue hedgehogs smiled as they heard the bluish-purple hedgehog going "Vroom!" as he played with some of his toy cars.

Amy's jade eyes look into Sonic's emerald eyes. "My love, when would you like to try for our second child?"

Sonic took a hold of Amy's blue jeans, giving her ample rear a squeeze. "I think we can try after the whole ordeal with Samuel is over."

Amy squeals in delight when Sonic squeezes her backside, then nuzzles him tenderly. "I think that's fine, my very sexy husband."

The hedgehogs kiss and go upstairs to play with Dash. She didn't mention it, but Amy was nearing peak fertility, and she was hoping Sonic would

catch on to it before the day came.

-The next day-

Sonic wakes up around 9 AM. The emerald green eyes look over Amy, snuggled close to him. He smiled as he thought over the past 3½ years. 'I can't believe it's been three and a half years since Ames and I got married. I'll admit that we've had our ups and downs, but overall things are perfect. I hope she comes around to adopting Samuel.'

Sonic goes to get out of bed, but a gentle grip keeps him from leaving. The blue blur looks behind him and finds Amy holding onto his left arm. "Don't go. Please?"

Sonic melts to those sparkling green eyes, and rolls back into bed. Amy giggles as she feels Sonic's strong arms wrap around her. "Much better."

Sonic nuzzles his rose-pink wife, making her sigh with happiness. "Do you have to go anywhere Sonikku?"

He nods. "I was planning to go see Chris and Helen again today."

Amy nods. "I'm coming along, right?"

Sonic chuckles. "Of course, baby. Why would you think I wouldn't want you along?"

Amy nuzzles Sonic's strong chest. "Well, I know you're concerned about Samuel, and I'll admit that I'm starting to warm up to the idea, but we have Dash. Besides, what if we have another child later on?"

Sonic lifts Amy's head so that her green eyes look into his emerald eyes. "I understand what you're saying sweetheart, but remember that I promised Sally he'd get a good home."

The sakura hedgehog sighs. "I admire your strength to make good on your promises, but I don't know if we can handle three kids."

Her blue stud thinks for a second. "Tell you what. After we visit Chris and Helen we'll go to the adoption agency. Okay?"

Amy nods. "Okay my love."

Sonic and Amy get up, shower, and get dressed. Once Dash is ready, the three hedgehogs walk to Chris and Helen Thorndike's house.

-The Thorndike Residence-

Sonic, Amy Rose, and Dash walk up to the lavish Thorndike Residence. Sonic rings the doorbell, and Chris answers. Now 25, he'd become very wealthy from scientific advances in the medical field.

Chris smiles at the hedgehog family. "Hello again Sonic. Hello to Amy and Dash as well. It's nice to see you all again. Please come inside."

Sonic and Amy carry Dash into the living room. Helen comes in a few seconds later. Giving the three hedgehogs a glance, the blonde 24 year old looks to her husband. "You never said we were having visitors."

Chris chuckles. "I believe I mentioned it before bed last night."

Helen giggles. "Of course. I apologize Christopher."

Dash runs over to her, and Helen picks him up. "Goodness you're heavy. How old is he, Sonic?"

The royal blue hedgehog chuckles. "He's four years old, Helen."

Dash asks Helen to take him for a ride, and Helen rolls out of the room with the bluish-purple hedgehog laughing all the way.

Chris gets a few glasses of tea and rejoins Sonic and Amy. "Well, I guess we should get down to business."

Amy sits next to Sonic and he puts an arm around her. Chris' blue eyes look into the green eyes of the hedgehog couple. "We've been to see Samuel at the adoption agency. He's a cute kid. Looks a decent amount like you Sonic,

but with brown fur. Anyway, it turns out that Helen and I aren't the only ones who may want to adopt him."

Amy gives Chris a confused look. "Who else could there be?"

The 25 year old scientist shrugged. "They wouldn't say. Apparently the other couple requested they remain anonymous."

Sonic nodded. "Interesting. Well, I'd be more than willing to take him."

Amy looks at her husband. "Now wait a minute. What about me?"

Sonic frowned. "You said yourself that it didn't sound like a bad idea."

The pink hedgehog nodded. "Yes, but I'm still trying to think ahead, Sonic. That's something you don't seem to be doing right now."

The blue hero chuckled. "You seem to be forgetting that I promised Sally he'd get a good home. Neither one of us said it would be our home he'd be in. Believe me, I understand your concerns Amy. They haven't just gone in one ear and out the other."

Chris finally had enough. "Stop arguing! You're losing focus."

Sonic and Amy stared at him, and he continued. "Either way, we all need to keep our heads clear. Helen and I talk about this night after night. We'd love to have a child, and we'd love to have Samuel, but we don't argue."

Helen comes back in, Dash still giggling on her lap. "If it helps, maybe you should spend some time with Samuel."

Amy gets Dash, and Sonic shakes Chris' hand. "We'll do that right now. Thank you."

After hugging Helen, the three hedgehogs go to the adoption agency.

-Station Square Adoption Center-

Sonic, Amy Rose, and Dash walk into the adoption center. The secretary smiles. "Hello. How may I help you?"

Sonic nods. "We'd like to see Samuel, please."

The secretary nodded and escorted the hedgehog family to the play room. There the green eyes of the three hedgehogs watch Samuel play with the others.

The secretary sighs. "He's been asking for his mother several times a day."

Sonic frowns and whispers that Sally had died in prison almost a week ago. Shaking her head, the woman looked at the three year old squirrelhog. "I would take him, but with two families in a battle for him, I'd never win."

The phone rang and in a few seconds the secretary's mood lightened immensely. Rejoining the hedgehogs, she wipes a few tears from her eyes. "Well, the battle is over. Two people are on their way now."

Sonic gives Amy a look, then turns back to the woman. "What if we wanted to adopt Samuel?"

The secretary shook her head. "I'm sorry, but you're too late."

Sonic frowned. "Why can't we adopt him?"

A deep voice is heard from behind the group. "You can't, because we are."

Sonic turns around and is shocked by who he sees. "Shadow and Rouge?"

The black hedgehog and white bat nod, then Shadow speaks again. "We're here to take Samuel home."

Tails' challenge

Sonic, Amy, Dash, and the secretary stare. Rouge chuckles. "You hedgehogs look shocked."

There was only nodding, and Shadow smiles. "Can we have the paperwork please?"

The secretary goes to get the papers, and Amy speaks. "Wait a minute. Why are you two adopting him?"

Rouge smiles. "It's taken this long to wear Shadow down, Amy."

Shadow nods. "We decided that we didn't want to have another child, and wound up at the option of adopting Samuel. Since he was orphaned when Sally died, Rouge used her charms to finally convince me to adopt him."

The secretary returns and gives Shadow the papers. "You have our deepest thanks, Shadow and Rouge."

She leaves, and Shadow sits down. Rouge gets a pen and gives it to him. The black hedgehog begins filling out the paperwork and the white bat calls Chris and Helen, explaining that she and Shadow were adopting Samuel.

After the call ends, Rouge sighs. "Well, they're disappointed, but they're very happy he's getting out of here."

Shadow turns in the paperwork, and then Sonic pulls Rouge and Shadow to one side. "Before she died, Sally made me promise her that I'd find Samuel a good home. My request is this: Please treat Samuel like he was your own son, and don't make me a liar. I don't want Sally's ghost haunting me."

Rouge nods and Shadow puts a hand on Sonic's left shoulder. "You have our word, Sonic."

The cobalt speedster smiles and thanks them. Shadow gets Samuel from the play room, takes Rouge's hand, and then the new family vanishes in a flash

of green light. Sonic rejoins Amy and Dash.

Amy smiles at him. "Happy now?"

Sonic sighs. "We'll have to see. It's too early to tell yet."

Taking Amy's hand, Sonic escorts his wife and son to Tails' house to tell them the good news.

-The Prower Residence-

A solid knock is heard. Cream opens the door and smiles when she sees the hedgehog family. "Hey there. Come on in. Miles is expecting you."

Sonic chuckles, then Dash speeds by to play with the Prower triplets. Tails enters the living room and smiles at Sonic and Amy. "I'm glad you're here guys. I have something to discuss with you."

Amy chuckles. "Strangely enough, so do we."

Cream gets the drinks as Tails sits in front of the hedgehog couple. "Well, let's hear what you have to share."

The royal blue hero smiles at his orange little brother. "Well, Ames and I actually just got back from the adoption agency."

Tails nods at his older brother. "How did that go?"

The sakura hedgehog smiles. "Samuel has been adopted."

Cream smiles at her husband, then gives the hedgehogs a confused look. "If it wasn't you, then who was it?"

Sonic takes a breath. "Well, it wasn't Chris and Helen either."

This shocks the fox and rabbit, and Tails asks the obvious question. "Who adopted Samuel then?"

Amy sighed. "Shadow and Rouge did."

Tails and Cream feel their jaws drop. Tails' ocean blue eyes meet Cream's chocolate eyes, then they look into Sonic and Amy's green eyes.

Sonic chuckles. "I almost wish we were making this up."

Cream speaks again. "Why would they want to adopt Samuel?"

Amy shrugs. "I guess they got lonely not having a small child around the house."

Sonic frowns now. "I don't know if that counts as me keeping my promise to Sally."

Tails gave Sonic a quizzical look. "What promise?"

Amy entwined her hand with Sonic's hand. "Sonikku promised Sally that Samuel would wind up in a good home."

Tails and Cream nod, then Sonic speaks again. "I have my doubts about Shadow and Rouge adopting Samuel though."

Cream nods. "I don't know if anyone else has noticed this, but Rouge has helped Shadow with his emotions. The addition of a child, biological or not, only helps more."

Tails, Amy, and Sonic nod. The orange fox gives his wife a wink, then turns to the pink and blue hedgehogs. "Now to my discussion."

Sonic and Amy sweat drop. Tails was highly intelligent, and no one but Cream knew what he was truly capable of.

The fox smiles. "I've thought about this a lot, and I've decided to test you. Sibling rivalry, you know?"

Everyone nods, and Tails continues. "Sonic, I think I'm better in bed than you are."

Amy and Cream immediately object, because that was what happened at Amy's bachelorette party between Rouge and Tikal.

Tails laughs. "Like I said, sibling rivalry."

Sonic nods, thinking. "I see. Are you sure you want to do this?"

The twin tailed fox nodded. "Yes. However, you can't knowingly do this. I'll admit that Cream was in heat that night."

Amy sighs. "This is unnecessary Tails. I know Cream says you're the best in bed. I know Sonic is the best in bed. Let's just leave it there."

Tails chuckles. "That's why it's a challenge, Amy. Perhaps it is unnecessary, but only one can be the best."

Sonic speaks up now. "I refuse the challenge. Not because I'm scared, but because I also feel it's unnecessary."

Tails nods. "Well, will you think about it?"

The royal blue hedgehog looks at his rose-pink wife. She frowns, then Sonic turns back to Tails. "No guarantees, Tails. Both of us feel it's unnecessary, and this shouldn't even be challenged. Even Cream disagrees with this idea."

The rabbit sighs and gives Tails' right hand a squeeze. "He's right Miles. I think Amy has a very good point. You satisfy me, and he satisfies her. That should be the end of it."

Tails gets a sheet of paper and writes something down. "These are mine and Cream's numbers, in case you change your minds."

Amy takes the paper and doesn't even look at it. Cream gets out a few games, and Sonic and Amy help them set up the game table. Every so often, either Dash or the Prower triplets would call their parents or need some diaper changing. Before they knew it, four hours had gone by.

After stretching out their stiff muscles, Sonic and Amy get Dash from upstairs, say goodbye to the Prower family, then vanish in a flash of blue light.

One of the triplets looks at Tails. "Dada, how he do that?"

Tails smiles and sits on the couch. One triplet sits on his lap. Cream takes the other two triplets and joins her husband. Tails then enters Story Time Mode. "It all started a few years ago...."

-The Hedgehog Residence-

A flash of blue light radiates in the living room, then the hedgehog family appears. Amy heads to the kitchen to make dinner. "Sonic, what do you and Dash want for dinner?"

Sonic looks at his bluish-purple son. "What are you hungry for, buddy?"

The answer is almost immediate. "Steak."

Sonic laughs and answers Amy. "Dash is in the mood for steak, and I think that's a good idea."

Amy nods and begins making the steak. 25 minutes goes by, and Amy makes the announcement. "Dinner's ready!"

Sonic and Dash enter the kitchen, and Sonic kisses Amy on the left cheek. "Thanks babe."

Blushing, the rose-pink hedgehog joins her cerulean husband and bluish-purple son in the dining room. After saying grace, the hedgehog family begins eating.

Dash is done first and gives Amy's right leg a hug. "Thank you Mommy."

Amy smiles. "You're welcome Dash."

The 4 year old hedgehog runs upstairs to play again as Sonic and Amy keep eating. In a few minutes, Sonic goes upstairs to get Dash ready for bed.

Sonic winds up playing with Dash for 45 minutes, then they're interrupted by Amy. "Bedtime, Dash."

The green eyes of the small hedgehog look at Sonic, who nods his head. "She's right, son. You'll need your rest to grow big and strong."

Dash nods, and after changing into his pajamas, climbs into bed. "Goodnight Mommy and Daddy. I love you."

Sonic and Amy smile. "Goodnight Dash. We love you too."

Sonic goes downstairs and locks the door. After he turns off the lights, Sonic joins Amy in their room. Both hedgehogs undress and climb into bed.

Amy lays on top of Sonic, her head on his chest. "How long has it been since we slept like this, Sonikku?"

Sonic chuckles. "Too long. We need to sleep this way more often, baby."

Amy giggles, and nuzzles Sonic's chest. "I agree, but now it's bedtime."

Sonic kisses the top of Amy's head. "Goodnight Amy. I love you."

Amy kisses Sonic back. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you too."

Soon the two hedgehogs are asleep, smiles on their faces.

The hedgehog love marathon

Amy wakes up first on Sonic's 27th birthday. It's 9 AM, and Amy feels that something is just a little off. Gently lifting the bed sheets, Amy sees that the sheets around her are soaked. She sniffs, and thinks over the various smells she knows. 'It's not Sonic... It's not sweat...' The pink hedgehog sniffs again, and her green eyes widen. Amy has figured out the smell. 'Oh no...'

Sonic rolls over and his emerald green eyes give Amy a confused look. "Everything okay Ames?"

Amy nods, blushing a little. "Kind of. First, happy birthday. Second, I'm a little worried."

Sonic frowns. "Worried about what, babe?"

Amy frowns. "Look at the calendar."

The blue hero does so. "It's a full moon tonight. I've heard it does some strange things."

Amy nods. "Yes, but I was hoping you'd catch on to the bigger reason I'm worried."

Sonic shakes his head, and Amy sighs. "Not only is it the full moon, but I'm in heat. Today is when I'm at maximum fertility."

Sonic's eyes widen. "Oh boy. I can see why you're worried. You tend to hump me at every possible chance."

Amy frowns. "Be happy it's only you."

Sonic chuckles and kisses Amy. "Believe me, I am. Now, I think Dash will eventually have to go to Tails and Cream's house so he doesn't get any bad memories."

The sakura hedgehog laughs, kisses her blue stud, and pulls on a red robe. Dash is already up and about, waiting for Mommy and Daddy to come play with him. After Sonic takes his shower, Amy takes one, barely resisting grabbing Sonic and dragging him into the shower with her. After her shower, Dash is bathed, dressed, and the three hedgehogs go to the Prower Residence.

-Tails and Cream's House-

Sonic knocks on the door. Cream opens it and immediately notices Amy. "You're going through that period, aren't you Amy?"

The pink hedgehog nods, then Dash speaks up. "What's Mommy going through?"

Sonic shakes his head. "You're not old enough yet."

Tails joins them in a few seconds. "Come on in guys. Cream's got some gifts for Sonic as well as some party games for everyone."

The hedgehog family goes inside, and the festivities begin.

-8 PM-

After a very long discussion about Tails' challenge, Sonic's gifts, and a lot of partying, Sonic and Amy vanish in a flash of blue light from the Prower Residence. Dash is once again staying the night at his uncle and aunt's house. Amy locks the door and then sees the full moon.

She feels Sonic's arms wrap around her waist and his deep voice in her ears. "Yes it's pretty, but not as pretty as you."

Amy turns around, her jade green eyes turning a pale green with lust. The kiss she puts on Sonic's lips nearly makes him faint.

The kiss breaks, and the rose-pink hedgehog's voice reveals how badly she wants her cobalt husband. "We need to get to our room. Now. Please Sonic."

Nodding, Sonic picks Amy up and bolts to their room. Once inside, Amy literally rips Sonic's blue shirt, blue jeans, and black speed shoes off of him. Sonic smiled, since he liked Amy's wilder side, but this was wild even for her. Since Amy was in heat, Sonic was about to have one of the most memorable nights of his life.

After Amy rips her own clothes off, she pins Sonic to the bed and handcuffs him. "I hope you took your endurance pills, my love. You're going to need them."

Sonic chuckles. "What, no foreplay?"

Amy touches her lower region and shows Sonic her soaked fingers. "I'm in heat Sonic. I don't need foreplay. But since you asked..."

Amy leans over Sonic and nibbles on his ear tips. Sonic begins purring and Amy trails her kisses down to Sonic's muzzle and neck.

Her green eyes look into Sonic's emerald eyes. "A little something extra for you."

Sonic gives a low moan as Amy bites his shoulders. It's a harder bite than Sonic would give her, since his skin is tougher, but the pleasure is there just the same. Amy loved Sonic's low growls, and soon she arrives at Sonic's nipples. The pink hedgehog doesn't even wait for Sonic to say anything. She just begins licking and biting her blue husband's nipples.

Sonic moans Amy's name. "Ohh Amy... That feels good."

Amy begins to suckle on Sonic's left nipple as she rubs his right one. More moaning from Sonic makes Amy switch nipples. Sonic attempts to hold Amy in place, but he can't because he's handcuffed.

Amy giggles at his actions. "Had enough foreplay?"

Sonic grins. "I don't think so. There's an area you haven't visited yet."

The sakura hedgehog gives a fake frown and turns to Sonic's 8 inch manhood. She begins stroking Sonic's member as her soft tongue teases the

tip. There's a lot of loud clanging as Sonic writhes in pleasure. Amy is the only thing actually keeping Sonic on the bed.

The handcuffs are showing signs of breaking as Sonic's pleasure rises. "Amy! Please keep going!"

Sonic's noises make Amy's hormones reach an unknown level, and she begins deep throating all 8 inches of Sonic's organ. Sonic's moans get even louder, and Amy begins dry-humping Sonic on his abs, moaning loudly.

Their moans fuel their arousal even more, and Sonic is the first to make his announcement. "AMY! AMY I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Amy moans loudly, and after a few seconds Sonic unloads into Amy's mouth. As he orgasms, Sonic yells Amy's name. "AMY!"

Thanks to her heightened sensitivity, Amy tenses up in orgasm as well, moaning loudly. Turning to her blue stud, the rose-pink hedgehog swallows Sonic's entire load.

Sonic smiles. "That's always hot."

Amy nods and purrs into Sonic's ears. "Had enough foreplay, Sonikku?"

He thinks for a second. "Did I taste good?"

Amy giggles. "Of course. I wouldn't swallow your load if it didn't taste good."

Sonic chuckles. "Awesome. Well, we may continue. Can you take these handcuffs off now?"

Amy shakes her head, the long pink quills making Sonic drool. "Not yet babe. I'll release you when it's time."

Sonic nods, and Amy lowers herself onto Sonic's meaty manhood, moaning as all 8 inches fill her drenched womanhood. Once she's ready, Amy digs her claws into Sonic's shoulders and begins riding him. It's a hard fast pace as Amy's urges to mate take over her focus. Sonic entered that stage not

long after she did, and gently thrusts upward into Amy as she lowers herself.

This makes Amy scream. "YES! DEEPER MY LOVE!"

Sonic nods and thrusts harder into Amy. She digs her claws deeper into Sonic's tough skin and thick fur as her second orgasm quickly approaches.

Her screams are fuel to Sonic's fire. "OH SONIC! JUST LIKE THAT! MORE!"

Sonic frowns. "You'll have to take the handcuffs off."

Amy shakes her head. "TOO BUSY MATING! JUST BREAK THEM OFF!"

Sonic sighs. "If you say so, sexy."

The chains to the handcuffs snap with no effort at all, and Sonic rolls Amy underneath him. His sakura wife's claws remain dug into Sonic's shoulders as her legs wrap around the royal blue blur's hips.

Sonic begins pounding Amy's flower at full speed, and it's only a few seconds before Amy screams into Sonic's ears. "SONIC I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Sonic smiles and gently bites on Amy's delicate shoulders with his sharp fangs. This extra bit of pleasure sends Amy over the edge.

Her luscious body shakes as she orgasms, and she screams Sonic's name at full volume. "SOONNIIC!"

Sonic smiles down at Amy. Sweat has just begun to form on her fur, and her jade green eyes are sparkling with sexual satisfaction.

Sonic's deep voice makes Amy shiver. "This is why I had the soundproof glass installed."

Amy gave Sonic a kiss. "I'm glad. Now, I'm assuming you haven't cum yet?"

Sonic shakes his head. "Not yet, but I'm nowhere near finished yet, my love."

Amy smiles. "Then why are you still talking?"

Sonic moves to Amy's left nipple, dark pink and soft to the touch. Sonic's tongue snakes out and lightly licks the large nipple, making Amy moan loudly. "Oh yes Sonikku!"

Sonic begins to gently suckle on the nipple, making Amy shudder. He switches nipples, and Amy shivers as she feels the gentle suckling on her right nipple. She'd forgotten that Sonic was still inside her until she felt him start thrusting again.

Her moans border on screams as Sonic speeds up his thrusts. "Yes baby! Harder! Deeper! Faster!"

Nodding, Sonic suckles on Amy's left nipple again, rubbing the right nipple with his left hand, and rubbing her clitoris with his right hand.

His pace speeds up again, and Amy screams. "UH! UH! UH! OH WOW! YES SONIC! I LOVE YOU SO MUCH RIGHT NOW! FASTER!"

Again, Sonic rails Amy at full speed and power. Both hedgehogs are sweating and panting heavily now, but neither hedgehog cared. The full moon shone brightly on the two mating hedgehogs like a spotlight on a stage. Sonic and Amy just didn't have an audience.

Amy's hormones are pumping at full strength now, and she makes her announcement again. "UH! SONIC! I-I'M GOING TO-TO CUM AGAIN!"

The royal blue speedster shouts a reply to his sakura wife. "AH! ME TOO AMES! GET READY!"

Amy nods. "CUM INSIDE ME SONIC!"

Sonic gives a few more thrusts, then holds as his thick shaft pulses. His grip on Amy's shoulders tightens as he unloads into Amy's core, screaming her name. "AMY!"

At the same time, Amy shakes and draws blood from Sonic as her orgasm tears through her stunning body. Her warm juices spray onto Sonic's legs and lower abdomen as she screams his pet name. "SONIKKU!"

Sonic pulls out of Amy and flops onto the now-soaked blue silk bed sheets. Amy flops on top of him, and both hedgehogs inhale the scents. Sonic loved Amy's pheromones, and Amy loved Sonic's odor. The two pairs of green eyes meet, followed by a tender kiss.

Amy speaks first after the kiss breaks. "Mating with you feels (panting) SO much better (panting) without a condom, Sonikku."

The cerulean hero chuckles. "I agree. (panting) I'm hoping you're not (panting) done yet."

Amy giggles. "I'll let you know. (panting) I can't help that (panting) being in heat increases my endurance."

Sonic smiles. "I'm not complaining one bit."

The pink hedgehog kisses Sonic again, then gets on all fours, tail in the air. "You have another area my love."

Sonic gets the lube and climbs back on the bed. He lubes up his member, then lubes up Amy's tight anus. Tossing the lube onto the floor, Sonic positions himself behind Amy. "Ready honey?"

Amy nods. "I'm ready sexy."

Sonic nods and gently enters Amy's ample rear. She moans and shudders as all 8 inches fill her firm backside. "Ohhh yesss... I always love that feeling."

Once she feels Sonic's groin on her rear, Amy nods and Sonic begins thrusting. He gives Amy's rear a few spanks as he thrusts, and Amy moans.

"Oh yes... Please, Sonic... Go faster."

Sonic nods and speeds up, reaching around and pinching Amy's large nipples. The sakura hedgehog tosses her head back, skipping the moaning and going right to the screaming. "Yes! Uh! Yeah! Harder! Deeper!"

Sonic chuckles. "I'll never get tired of your sounds, sweetheart."

Amy sighs as Sonic speeds up again. She manages one thought. 'The pleasure is so incredible. I knew Sonic was awesome in bed when we first made love nearly five years ago. He was great then, and he's still great now.'

Sonic has a thought of his own. 'It doesn't seem that long ago when Amy and I first got together. Looking back, I'm glad I grew a pair and asked Amy to be mine.' Amy and Sonic's hormones once again override their thinking.

Amy looks back to her cobalt husband. "UH! UH! SONIKKU! I'M GETTING CLOSE! AH!"

Sonic grunts his reply. "Me-Me too Ames! Here it comes!"

Giving a few more thrusts, Sonic holds as he unloads in Amy's ample rear. He pinches Amy's nipples as he shouts her name at a loud volume. "AMY!"

Sonic's pressure on Amy's dark pink nipples makes her orgasm yet again. Her juices spray onto Sonic's legs as she screams her husband's name. "SONIC!"

After their simultaneous orgasm passes, Sonic collapses onto the bed, and Amy gently lays her head on his chest. The pink and blue hedgehogs are sweating profusely and can barely breathe.

Amy's the first to speak. "Wow. (panting) I'm satisfied (panting) but I want more (panting)."

Sonic shakes his head. "I'm not sure (panting) I can continue Amy (panting)."

Amy's face has a playful look on it as her sparkling green eyes look into Sonic's shining emerald green eyes. "What's this? (panting) The incredibly skilled Sonic the Hedgehog (panting) can't go on? I told you (panting) that you should have taken (panting) your endurance pills."

Sonic chuckles. "I hope (panting) you're joking Ames."

Amy giggles. "Of course. I would still like you (panting) to pound me again though."

The blue speedster kisses his rose-pink wife. "I'll see what I can do. (panting) Which area should I start in?"

Amy assumes the position. "Start in my rear, babe. It always feels good."

Sonic positions himself behind Amy. Once his shaft is erect again, Sonic inserts himself back into Amy's anus. Amy moans loudly, then squeals when Sonic pulls her off the bed and leans her against him. Amy puts her head on Sonic's right shoulder, and he begins thrusting again.

Amy moans loudly and wraps her arms behind Sonic's head, kissing him passionately. Sonic returns the kiss and gently drags his claws along Amy's flat stomach up to her 36C breasts. Amy gives a loud muffled moan and takes handfuls of Sonic's long quills. The kiss breaks and Sonic once again bites Amy on her shoulders with his fangs. Amy's loud moaning makes Sonic smile, and he speeds up his thrusting into her ample backside.

Amy begins screaming as Sonic pinches her large dark pink nipples. "OH YES! FASTER! DEEPER! MORE DAMMIT!"

The royal blue hero laughs and goes full speed into Amy's tight anus. The screams that the rose-pink hedgehog is making drive Sonic wild inside, and it's not long before Amy tenses up.

Her body shakes as her next orgasm races through her body, and her juices spray onto Sonic's legs as she screams his pet name. "SONIKKU!"

As she orgasms, Sonic unloads into her rear yet again, also screaming her name. "AMY!"

After they finish climaxing, Sonic pulls out of Amy and helps her back on the bed. Joining her, Sonic snuggles up to his wife, panting. "Okay. (panting) I think (panting) I'm done."

Amy uses the Puppy Face on him, also panting. "Please Sonikku? (panting) I'll do all (panting) the work this time."

Sonic melts when Amy uses the Puppy Face. "Fine. (panting) But this is it for me."

Amy smiles. "Fine with me. (panting) I'm about done as well."

Amy's velvet lips press against Sonic's lips as she mounts him. She moans as she lowers herself onto Sonic's massive member. Once their groins connect, Amy begins riding Sonic again, but much gentler this time.

Sonic spans Amy a few times, and Amy sighs with pleasure. "Please spank me again my love. It always feels good when you spank me."

Sonic spans Amy a few more times, and Amy begins riding Sonic faster. Her moans get louder, and then Sonic begins thrusting upward as she lowers herself. "Oh yes! Okay! Get back on top! Finish us up Sonic!"

Sonic frowns. "You said you were going to do all the work."

Amy growls to him. "Just do it!"

The blue blur rolls his pink wife under him and begins thrusting at a fast pace. Amy's claws dig into Sonic's tough back and her legs wrap around Sonic's hips.

Her screams nearly deafen Sonic, but he doesn't care at this point. "UH! AH! OH YES! HARDER! FUCK ME HARDER SONIC!"

Sonic focuses his remaining energy and pounds Amy's womanhood at full speed and power, loving the squishy sounds he hears. Amy holds Sonic as

close as she can, loving the penetration of his massive 8 inch shaft. Their lips meet as Sonic once again pinches Amy's large nipples.

The kiss breaks after a few seconds, and Amy makes her announcement. "SONIC! I-I'M GOING TO CUM A-AGAIN!"

Sonic manages to shout his reply. "ME-ME TOO AMY!"

Amy nods. "CUM INSIDE ME AGAIN SONIKKU! PLEASE! I WANT TO FEEL YOUR SEED ENTER ME AGAIN!"

Sonic thrusts a few more times, then unloads into Amy's drenched flower. He gives the soundproof glass a challenge as he screams Amy's name as loud as he can. "AMY!"

Just as she wanted, Amy feels Sonic unload inside her. Just after he orgasms, Amy reaches her final climax. Her claws draw more blood from Sonic as she shakes with the powerful orgasm. As she climaxes Amy screams Sonic's name at full volume. "SOONNIIC! UH! WOW! Sonic! You-You just gave me another multiple orgasm... Four in a row this time. Oh wow."

Sonic somehow rolls Amy back on top of him, still inside her. He didn't care, and didn't have the strength to pull out of her soaked womanhood.

Amy sighed contently on Sonic's chest. "We haven't made love (panting) like this since... (panting)... Well, ever."

Sonic kissed the top of Amy's head as their scents began to work their magic. "That was incredible, Ames. (panting) Wow. I don't know (panting) what to say. Just wow."

Amy giggles. "I second those feelings."

The two hedgehogs share one last kiss and close their sparkling green eyes.

Sonic yawns. "Goodnight Amy Rose Hedgehog. I love you. So much."

Amy yawns now. "Goodnight Sonic T Hedgehog. I love you too, and happy birthday."

Sonic and Amy are quickly asleep, their bodies glowing with the love they share.

Babies on the way

A few weeks go by, and Sonic and Amy are visiting Tails and Cream. It's a little cool outside, unusual for southern California. The blue hedgehog is wearing a gray long-sleeved shirt, blue jeans, and his blue speed shoes. Amy had decided on a green long-sleeved shirt, blue jeans, and green shoes.

The hedgehogs were playing with the Prower triplets while Tails and Cream got dressed. The orange fox picked an orange shirt, blue jeans, and socks, since he didn't plan on leaving the house today. Cream was ahead of Tails as they entered the living room. She was wearing a white shirt, brown skirt, and socks as well. The triplets and Dash go to play in the play room while their parents talked.

Tails nods to Sonic. "How have things been, Sonic?"

Sonic shrugs. "Things have been fine. Amy gave me the most awesome 27th birthday present."

Amy bolts to the bathroom when Sonic mentions this. Cream gives Sonic a confused look, and he shrugs. "Don't know what to tell you Cream."

Just then Amy's weak voice is heard. "Cream... I need your help."

The rabbit frowns and goes to the bathroom. Tails and Sonic continue talking, with Tails daring to ask about his challenge. "So, did you two try for the challenge?"

Sonic frowns, the emerald green eyes glazing over. "Dude, how many times do I have to say no? Ames and I thought it was unnecessary. Either way, we would have beaten your challenge."

Tails' ocean blue eyes sparkle. "Oh really? Let's hear about it."

While Sonic and Tails talk, Cream and Amy are in the bathroom. Amy's busy vomiting and Cream's holding her quills to keep them out of the awful stuff.

Cream sighs. "Do you think you could be pregnant again Amy?"

The pink hedgehog shrugs after flushing the toilet. "Possibly. Do you have a pregnancy test?"

Cream nods and gets one. "How long has it been since you and Sonic had sex?"

Amy thinks. "We did a few days ago, but before that was on Sonic's 27th birthday a few weeks ago."

Cream nods and gives Amy the pregnancy test. "I think I know what the results will be, but go ahead."

Amy takes the test as Cream rejoins Sonic and Tails. "Amy's not feeling well Sonic."

The royal blue hero frowns. "I hope she's not sick. Dash could catch it."

Tails chuckles. "I'm sure she'll be fine, Sonic."

Cream nods, but doesn't mention that Amy's suffering from what she is as well.

-5 minutes later-

Amy walks out of the bathroom and plops on the couch beside Sonic. "Sonikku?"

He looks at her. "Yes Ames?"

Cream stops Amy here, and turns to Tails. "Miles, I'm pregnant."

Tails' jaw drops and he stutters. "You're-You're p-p-pregnant? Why didn't you tell me sooner?"

Cream giggles and kisses him. "I wanted to wait until the right moment."

Sonic turns to Amy again. "Do you have anything to share?"

Amy nods and nuzzles Sonic. "I'm pregnant too."

Sonic wrapped Amy's face in his hands. "You-You mean... I'm having another child?"

Amy giggles. "Yes my love. You're going to be a father again."

Sonic's strong arms wrap Amy in a tight hug. "I-I don't know what to say, baby. But I do know I'm very happy."

Tails and Cream are rejoicing as well. Dash and the Prower triplets heard what their parents said, and Dash speaks up. "What does that mean?"

Sonic answers. "You're going to have a little brother or sister, Dash. The same goes for the Prower triplets."

All four kids just smile and keep playing.

-Three hours later-

Sonic, Amy, and Dash appear in their living room in a flash of blue light.

Dash smiles up at Sonic and Amy in that cute way. "Mommy? Daddy? Can we watch a movie?"

Amy smiles. "Of course Dash. Which one would you like to watch?"

Dash gets the movie he wants, and the three hedgehogs cuddle together. Dash sings along and this makes Sonic and Amy join in every once in a while. Once the movie was over Amy gets Dash ready for bed.

Once he's asleep, Amy rejoins Sonic and kisses him. "Something's on your mind."

Sonic chuckles. "I don't know how you knew, but you're right. While I believe the pregnancy test, I think we should go to Doctor Alnilam just to make sure."

Amy smiles. "If you say so Sonic."

He kisses Amy and the two hedgehogs watch TV for a little while longer. 10 PM comes around, and Amy turns off the TV while Sonic locks the door. After the lights are turned off the two hedgehogs walk upstairs to their bedroom. They undress and climb under the blue silk sheets on Sonic's king sized bed.

Wrapping his arms around his rose-pink wife, the cobalt hero cuddles her close. "Goodnight Amy. I love you."

Amy kisses Sonic and snuggles as close as she can get to him. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you too."

About 5 minutes passes, and Sonic and Amy are in a peaceful sleep.

-Two days later, Station Square Care Center-

It's January 18th now. Amy's lying on the couch with her head in Sonic's lap. Her jade eyes are closed, and Sonic is massaging her head.

Sonic smiles at his purring wife. "You look so cute."

Amy smiles but says nothing. A few minutes pass, and Doctor Alnilam comes into the lobby with Tails and Cream behind him. "Well, this is interesting."

Tails chuckles. "What are you two doing here?"

Sonic smiles. "We're confirming Amy's pregnancy."

Cream frowns. "You didn't believe the pregnancy test?"

Amy finally speaks. "You should know Sonic by now Cream. He likes to be sure."

Tails nods. "Cream's pregnancy will be high risk since she's already had triplets."

Sonic gives a confused look to Doctor Alnilam, who nods. "Since she's had three children already, her body may encounter problems during the

pregnancy."

Amy frowns. "What about me?"

The doctor thinks. "You should be fine Mrs. Hedgehog, but we'll see. Now, Mr. and Mrs. Prower, please let me know if complications arise."

The fox-rabbit couple nods and they carry their triplets out of the care center. Doctor Alnilam nods to the hedgehogs. "Your turn now."

Dash is called over, and the three hedgehogs follow the doctor to his office. Once they enter, Dash gets in one of the chairs. Sonic picks Dash up, sits in the same chair, and puts Dash in his lap. Amy takes the other chair. Doctor Alnilam gets a needle and takes a blood sample from Amy.

He sends it off to be analyzed, then sits on his desk. "Well, how is Dash doing?"

Sonic smiles. "He's coming along fine. As expected, he's very fast, and shows all the tendencies I do."

Doctor Alnilam chuckles. "Excellent. Well, I'm expecting Amy's second pregnancy to be just like her first. A normal one. It'll be just like when she was pregnant with Dash."

Amy suddenly runs to the bathroom, making the doctor chuckle. "There will be more of that as well."

Dash points to the stethoscope the doctor had. "Doctor, what's that thing?"

Doctor Alnilam smiles. "This is a stethoscope. It helps me hear heartbeats."

The bluish-purple hedgehog is allowed to play with the stethoscope, and Amy returns from the bathroom a few minutes later. "Sorry about that."

Sonic smiles. "Feel better?"

The pink hedgehog rejoins her blue stud. "I sure do."

Doctor Alnilam chuckles. "You've been through it once, you'll be fine."

Amy frowns. "I hope so."

Sonic speaks again. "Come back in three days?"

The doctor shakes his head. "No need. I'll call you when the results come in."

Dash is allowed to keep the stethoscope, and the three hedgehogs walk back to their house.

-Sonic and Amy's House-

The front door opens and Dash speeds into the house. Sonic and Amy enter, and Sonic shuts the door. Amy goes to the bathroom again, and Dash turns his green eyes to his father.

"Daddy, what's wrong with Mommy?"

Sonic chuckles. "Surprisingly that's normal, Dash. Your mother is carrying your brother or sister, and sometimes it makes her a little sick."

Dash nods. "Should I use the stetho – steto – How do you say it?"

The cobalt speedster chuckles. "Stethoscope."

The bluish-purple hedgehog repeats after Sonic. "Steth-o-scope."

Sonic ruffles Dash's quills. "Good job, son."

Amy comes back into the living room. "Sorry again. This baby's apparently planning to make me vomit a lot more than Dash did."

Dash runs up to her. "Can I use this on you, Mommy?"

The sakura hedgehog smiles. "I feel fine now, but if you must, you may."

Dash gives Amy a checkup. "You're okay, Mommy."

Amy chuckles and sits on the couch. "Thank you Doctor Dash."

The two male hedgehogs join her on the couch and watch a few movies on TV. 8 PM comes around, and Amy has Dash go to bed.

Dash gives Amy that adorable face little children have. "Can I stay up later Mommy? Please?"

Amy melts inside, but Sonic shakes his head. "Do as your mother says Dash."

Dash nods and hugs his parents. "Goodnight Mommy and Daddy. I love you both."

Sonic and Amy reply. "We love you too Dash. Sleep well."

Dash goes upstairs to his room, and Amy turns to her husband. "Why wouldn't you let him stay up?"

Sonic frowns. "He needs his rest, Amy. Besides, we really don't let him stay up late unless it's the weekend."

Amy nods. "Yes, but one day a week isn't bad, is it?"

Sonic shakes his head. "No, but if we let him have one day, then it'll be two, and then three."

Amy sighs and cuddles up to Sonic. "I understand, my love. I hope you reconsider."

Sonic shrugs. "We'll see babe."

The two hedgehogs watch TV a little longer, then Amy locks the door and Sonic turns off the TV. He also turns off the lights, and joins Amy in their room. Sonic takes off his blue shirt and jeans, his blue speed shoes, and also his black boxers. Amy takes off her green shirt, pink skirt, green boots, and then joins Sonic in bed.

She snuggles up to him and sighs contently when she feels his strong arms wrap around her. "I love your arms around me Sonikku. I feel so safe when they hold me."

Sonic gives a deep chuckle. "Why do you think I do it so much?"

Amy giggles and kisses him. Sonic kisses back and holds her as close as he can. After a few minutes of nuzzling and purring, the hedgehogs say goodnight to each other and fall asleep.

Sonic gets an unexpected visitor

Three days pass, and the phone rings. It's Doctor Alnilam calling with the blood sample results.

Sonic answers the phone. "Yes?"

The doctor chuckles. "Sonic, it's Doctor Alnilam, and I'm calling with the blood sample results."

Sonic nods. "I'm listening."

Doctor Alnilam reads the results. "Well, Amy's pregnant. The pregnancy test she took at Tails and Cream's house was right, but we know how you like to be sure."

The blue hero laughs. "It's just in my nature. I believed the pregnancy test was right, but I like solid proof."

The doctor nods. "Well now you have it. I'll need to see you in five months for the first sonogram on the second child. How is June 22nd?"

Sonic thinks for a second. "Sounds good. I'll let Amy know."

The call ends and Sonic hangs up the phone. Turning around, he finds Amy and Dash. Sonic jumps a little, and then all three hedgehogs laugh. Amy's dressed in a green turtleneck shirt, blue jeans, and green boots. Dash is wearing a red shirt, light blue pants, and red shoes.

Amy smiles at her royal blue husband. "Who was that, Sonic?"

Sonic ruffles Dash's quills and kisses his rose-pink wife. "That was Doctor Alnilam. The first sonogram for our second child is on June 22nd."

Amy nuzzles Sonic's chest through his black shirt. Her hands take hold of two belt loops on Sonic's blue jeans, and she stands on his black speed shoes. The green eyes shine, and Sonic smiles.

He knows what Amy's thinking, and his deep voice makes Amy shiver. "Not in front of our son, Ames."

Amy giggles and gives a sultry reply. "After he goes to bed then?"

Sonic winks and smiles at Dash. "Alright buddy, what do you want to do today?"

Dash pulls on Sonic and Amy's hands. "Let's go to the park. Come on Daddy! Mommy let's go!"

Sonic and Amy allow Dash to pull them outside. Sonic locks the door, and the three hedgehogs go to the park.

-That night-

Sonic is seen tossing and turning. He's having a nightmare. The cobalt hedgehog suddenly sits bolt upright, screaming. "AAAAHHHHHHH!"

Panting and sweating profusely, Sonic looks around and then realizes it was another dream. His emerald green eyes are full of fear, but soon he calms down. Shaking his head, Sonic climbs out of bed and walks out to the balcony. The cool February air quickly cools Sonic off, and he puts his head in his hands.

-Sonic's POV-

After I walk out to the balcony I hang my head in my hands. "What is causing me to have this nightmare?"

My thoughts race as I try to figure out why this is happening to me. A soft gentle voice makes me turn around. "Sonic?"

My green eyes find Amy walking out to me. Her own green eyes show that she's very concerned. "It's two in the morning. Is everything okay?"

I shake my head and turn away from her. "No. Everything's not okay. I keep having nightmares."

Amy presses her stunning body against me, and her voice is gentle. "What kind of nightmares, my love?"

Wrapping my arms around her, I feel a few tears fall from my eyes as I answer. "They're about our coming child."

-Amy's POV-

While I'm wrapped in Sonic's arms, I feel something hit my head. Looking up, my jade eyes find tears falling from Sonic's emerald eyes.

I nuzzle his chest, and then nuzzle under his chin. "What are you seeing?"

Sonic's voice is shaky. "I see you, and you're in the hospital."

I nod, growing concerned. "Go on, Sonikku."

Sonic holds me tightly to him. "I've had this nightmare several times before, but it felt too real this time Ames."

I bury my face in his chest and whisper to him. "Why didn't you tell me sooner?"

Sonic gently rubs my back. "I didn't want you to worry, my love."

Our talking is interrupted by another female voice. "So this is the sadness I've picked up on."

-Normal POV-

Sonic and Amy look around but find no one. The voice speaks again. "Don't worry you two. It's Tikal. Before I locked on to your grief, I was busy meditating."

Sonic frowns. "If you don't mind, we'd like our privacy back."

Tikal's voice echoes back to him. "It's a little too late, Sonic. I know you're both worrying about your coming child."

Amy sighs. "Well, say what you need to say."

Tikal now appears as a blue outline of herself, and she hesitates. "Oh my... Um, I don't mean to point this out, but you two know you're both naked right?"

Sonic and Amy blush, then Sonic replies. "You should know that getting dressed isn't thought of after the mating ritual is performed."

Tikal laughs. "I sure do. By the way Amy, I'm jealous."

Amy giggles to herself, then Tikal continues. "I know you're worried, but worrying will only make things worse for the growing child."

Sonic nods. "What do we do?"

The bluish outline of the pinkish echidna chuckles. "You keep living your life."

The sakura hedgehog glances to her cerulean stud, and finally asks the important question. "Will our child live?"

Tikal frowns. "Even though these special herbs I'm using help me talk with you, they don't reveal the future. I'm sorry, but I don't know."

Amy puts her head on Sonic's chest again, and he looks at Tikal's outline. "Tikal, do you know if there will be something like this happening to Tails and Cream?"

Tikal shakes her head. "I don't know Sonic. I have a feeling that it may, but like I just told Amy, I can't see the future. Now, I have to get back to Knuckles and the kids. Take care you two."

The outline fades, and moonlight once again bathes the hedgehogs in its light. Walking back inside, Sonic and Amy climb back into bed and snuggle together.

Amy sighs contently when she feels Sonic's arms wrap around her. "I love being in your arms Sonikku."

He kisses her, then frowns. "What was Tikal talking about when she said she was jealous?"

Amy teasingly strokes Sonic's member as she answers. "Isn't it obvious?"

Sonic thinks for a second, then it hits him. He laughs and rubs noses with Amy. "I get it now. I'm apparently bigger than Knuckles is, but did you have to tease my manhood to make your point?"

Amy giggles. "No, but you got the point, didn't you? Now try and get some sleep, okay honey?"

Sonic nods and closes his eyes. "I will. Goodnight Amy. I love you."

Amy closes her eyes. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you too."

Sonic and Amy are soon in a peaceful sleep, dreaming about their second child.

Poker at the hedgehog residence

June 22nd comes, and it's 9:30 AM. Sonic wakes up first and looks down to Amy. She's snuggled up close to Sonic, a smile on her face. This makes Sonic smile, but he knows they can't stay long.

Leaning close to Amy's ears, Sonic's deep voice is heard in a gentle whisper. "Time to wake up baby."

The pink hedgehog's ears twitch, then she yawns. Opening her green eyes, Amy smiles at her royal blue husband. "Good morning my love."

They share a kiss, then Sonic nuzzles Amy tenderly. "It's almost time for the sonogram."

Amy nuzzles back, sighing contently. "I know, but I just want to lay here with you for a few more minutes."

Sonic chuckles. "Well, that would be nice, but you know Doctor Alnilam keeps a tight schedule."

Amy giggles. "Yes he does. Alright then. Let's get ready."

Sonic climbs out of bed, then helps Amy out of the bed. She's now 5 months pregnant, and needs a little help getting around. Sonic helps Amy into the shower, then joins her. 30 minutes later the two hedgehogs dry off and get dressed. Dash takes the bathroom, and he's done showering in 15 minutes. Sonic dresses in a blue shirt, black shorts, and his blue speed shoes. Amy picks a red sundress and matching sandals. The two hedgehogs check on Dash and find he's chosen a blue shirt, matching shorts, and black shoes.

After eating breakfast, Sonic joins hands with Amy and Dash. "Chaos Control."

The hedgehog family disappears in a flash of blue light.

-Station Square Care Center-

A flash of blue light radiates in the lobby, then three hedgehogs appear. Doctor Alnilam walks into the lobby. "I need the Hedgehogs and the Prowers please."

Sonic, Amy, and Dash all get a confused look on their faces, then see Tails, Cream, and their triplets.

Tails laughs. "Well, didn't expect to see you here."

Sonic nods. "Same here. How are things going with your pregnancy Cream?"

The rabbit smiles. "So far so good. What about Amy?"

Amy puts a hand on her enlarged belly. "Same as you. Nothing to report on."

The two families follow Doctor Alnilam into Exam Room 4. There are two beds, two sonogram machines, and the doctor turns to them. "I'm sure you're confused, so let me explain. Since I'm fairly busy today I had to schedule you both at the same time."

Amy and Cream are helped onto the beds, then Sonic and Tails help Doctor Alnilam get the area ready. Once they're ready the doctor has the females expose their bellies. He layers the special jelly onto Amy and Cream, then turns on the machines. Dash and the Prower triplets watch with curious eyes.

Dash again speaks for the kids. "Doctor, what are you doing?"

Doctor Alnilam smiles. "These machines will help us see how the coming children are doing, Dash."

The four kids nod, and the doctor gives the attachments to Sonic and Tails. First to be observed is Tails and Cream's child. "Let's see... First, this will be a female child. Like your previous daughter, she will resemble you, Cream."

The rabbit wipes a few tears from her chocolate eyes and smiles at Tails. "She looks so beautiful Miles."

The orange fox blushes then turns to the four children. "Come take a look."

They walk over and their eyes widen. Sonic and Amy smile at their nephews, niece, and son.

One triplet turns to Sonic. "Uncle Sonic, will she look like this when she arrives?"

The cobalt speedster chuckles. "No. The doctor says she'll look like your mother."

The female triplet looks at Amy. "Aunt Amy, what about your child?"

The rose-pink hedgehog giggles. "Patience young one. I don't know yet."

Doctor Alnilam is preoccupied with showing Tails and Cream the child's features. "You can see the two ears here, and the hands and feet here. The umbilical cord is doing fine, and you can just start to see the tail right here."

Cream gives Tails' right hand a squeeze, then Doctor Alnilam turns off their machine. "So far everything looks fine. The child is developing normally, and nothing looks out of place."

Cream fixes her clothing and Tails helps her off the bed.

They join their children and Dash as the doctor goes to Sonic and Amy. "Okay Mr. and Mrs. Hedgehog. Let's take a look at your child."

Sonic and Amy wait patiently as Doctor Alnilam looks over the image on the screen. "Okay. Your child is also female. You're going to have a daughter this time around."

Amy pulls Sonic over and nuzzles his abs. The doctor points out the features again. "Here's the tail just starting to form. The ears are here, hands and feet are here. The umbilical cord is doing just fine as well."

The machine is turned off, and Amy is helped off the bed. The doctor washes his hands and escorts the two families to the lobby. "Both of you are looking good. Come back again in two months for the second sonogram."

Everyone nods, then the two families walk to Sonic and Amy's house.

-Sonic and Amy's House-

The front door opens and four children dart to the playroom. Amy and Cream sit on the couch while Sonic and Tails get out a poker table. Knuckles and Shadow arrive a few minutes later, and Sonic smiles when Samuel runs into the house.

Shadow and Rouge chuckle, and the black hedgehog picks the brown squirrelhog up. "You ready to lose, faker?"

Sonic grins. "You only win in your mind, young grasshopper."

Tails and Knuckles try to keep from laughing, but fail. Shadow glares at them. "Ha ha ha, it is to laugh."

Tikal and Rouge join Amy and Cream on the couch while Sonic, Tails, Knuckles and Shadow play some Texas Hold 'Em Poker. For some reason, the boys decided to wear cowboy outfits. The girls were confused but watched with interest. Every once in a while the children would fight over a toy, so the game stopped for a bit while order was restored.

Cream was busy making a tumbleweed, much to the confusion of Amy, Rouge, and Tikal. 45 minutes goes by, and Cream has finished the tumbleweed. Giving a nod, Cream throws it at the boys. The other three females had been informed of Cream's plan and willingly played along. Basically, the four families had re-created a showdown scene from a western movie.

The tumbleweed bounces lightly across the poker table. Rouge and Cream whistled, then Amy and Tikal chimed in. "Wah wah waaah."

The girls repeated this sequence, and it made the boys smile. Shadow won this particular hand, but with 5 Aces. Sonic, Tails, and Knuckles glare at him.

Shadow blinked. "What?"

The other three guys leaped on the black hedgehog. "Cheater!"

It was a play fight, but they pretended to be serious.

You could hear Tails trying not to laugh. "You cheater!"

Sonic is heard next, trying to speak with a cowboy accent. "You didn't think you would get away with that, did yer?"

Next is Knuckles. "First, not teaching me Chaos Control, and now this? That's low Shadow."

Shadow tried to get out from under then other three males, but couldn't because he was laughing. "Okay! Haha! Alright! I-Hehe-I won't cheat again! Hahaha!"

Sonic, Tails, and Knuckles get off of Shadow and help him up. Meanwhile Rouge, Tikal, Amy, and Cream are howling with laughter. A few minutes go by and they finally stop laughing, wiping tears from their eyes. The poker game resumes, and eventually Knuckles wins.

The red echidna chuckles. "So what do I win?"

Tikal sidles over to him, swaying her hips and giving her fiancé a naughty wink. "You get one of the best gifts a woman can offer her mate."

Knuckles' amethyst eyes sparkle, and he grins. "Perhaps I should win more often."

Shadow, Tails, and Sonic glare at him, then look at their mates. Amy, Cream, and Rouge shake their heads.

Rouge speaks for the group. "You didn't win, so you get nothing."

This is when Tikal and Knuckles get their quadruplets and leave, since Knuckles didn't want to wait any longer for his reward. After they leave, the girls laugh at the faces their partners have. It was a mix of shock, sadness, and disappointment.

Amy walks over to her blue stud. "Don't worry Sonic, it's only for the rest of the week."

Sonic tickles his pink wife. "I see. Well, perhaps I should tickle you until you change your mind."

Amy squirms as Sonic tickles her. "Hahaha! Okay! I sur-hahahaha-I surrender! Hahahahaha!"

Sonic stops tickling her and helps get the other kids under control.

Shadow picks Samuel up and takes Rouge's hand. "I'll win the next time you have a game, faker."

Sonic laughs. "Keep telling yourself that."

Shadow, Rouge, and Samuel vanish in a flash of green light. Tails picks up two of his triplets and puts them on his shoulders.

Cream gets the other of the triplets and joins Tails. "Thanks for having us over guys. Will we see you for the second sonogram?"

Amy nods. "Well, since we're both scheduled to be there, I guess you will."

Sonic says goodbye to the Prower family, then shuts the door. Turning to the sakura hedgehog, Sonic smiles. "Well, what do we do now?"

Amy looks at the clock, which says it's 5 PM. "Well, it's 5 PM. I'm not in the mood for the mating ritual, so how about a walk in the park?"

Sonic nods. "I think that's fine. Dash, you want to go chase some animals?"

Dash is immediately with his parents. "You know it Daddy. Let's go."

Dash pulls Sonic and Amy out to the front porch. "Come on! If we don't hurry the animals will be gone."

Sonic locks the door, and joins hands with his wife and son. "I guess we better take the short way."

The hedgehog family vanishes in a flash of blue light.

-8 PM-

Another flash of blue light radiates in the living room, and three hedgehogs appear. Sonic carries Dash upstairs to bed, since the bluish-purple hedgehog can barely keep his eyes open.

Dash dresses in his Sonic pajamas and hugs the actual Sonic. "Goodnight Daddy. I love you."

Sonic hugs his son, ruffling the short quills. "Goodnight son. I love you too. Very much."

Amy joins them and Dash hugs her. "Goodnight Mommy. I love you."

Amy gives Dash a kiss to his head. "Goodnight Dash. I love you too."

Dash climbs into bed and closes his jade green eyes. Soon, he's asleep. Sonic and Amy go to their room and undress, then climb under the blue silk sheets. Amy cuddles up to Sonic, putting her head on his chest. She sighs happily when Sonic wraps his strong arms around her body. Sonic's emerald green eyes look into Amy's jade green eyes.

The rose-pink hedgehog presses her soft lips against her cobalt husband's lips, purring softly. Sonic kisses back, purring and rubbing Amy's back.

The kiss breaks, and Amy closes her eyes. "Goodnight Sonikku. I love you so much."

Sonic gently nuzzles Amy. "Goodnight Ames. I love you too. More than you know."

Sonic and Amy are soon asleep with Amy wrapped protectively in Sonic's strong arms.

Oceanside passion

July comes around, and as usual it's very hot. To this point there hasn't been a summer day that hasn't reached 100 degrees. We find Sonic, Amy, and everyone else at the beach. They'd somehow found a place to put their stuff in the middle of all the people there.

Sonic and Amy are watching Dash play with the Prower triplets, Samuel, and Knuckles and Tikal's quadruplets. Neither family noticed the news reporters walking around on the beach.

The Station Square News Network found Sonic and Amy and ran up to them. "Mr. and Mrs. Hedgehog, do you have a few minutes?"

The pink and blue hedgehogs look at each other and shrug. Amy decides to watch Dash while Sonic handled the reporters.

He stands up and brushes the sand from his blue swim shorts. "Well, what is it you want this time?"

The reporters sweat drop, then ask their first question. "Are you planning to schedule any interviews for TV?"

Sonic shakes his head. "No. I'd have done a few by now if I had planned on any TV interviews."

The next question is for Amy. "Mrs. Hedgehog, when is your next child due?"

The sakura hedgehog shrugs. "I don't know the exact date, but it'll be close to October."

She calls Dash to her, and the bluish-purple hedgehog speeds over. "Yes Mommy?"

The reporters smile. "You must be Dash. What's it like having world heroes like Sonic and Amy for parents?"

Dash thinks for a second. "Well, since Mommy and Daddy are heroes, I wonder sometimes if I'll ever have to take over for them at some point."

The news team turns to Sonic and Amy. "Are you expecting this to happen?"

Sonic shrugs. "It's not something he needs to worry about right now. Go on and play, son."

Dash speeds back to the water, and Amy joins Sonic, brushing some sand from her green two-piece bathing suit. "Dash may or may not pick up where Sonic and I leave off, but don't pressure him to do so."

The reporters nod and move on to another group of people. Amy turns to Sonic. "Is our son really going to do what we do? Be a hero?"

Sonic watches Dash as he answers. "It'll be his choice to make, but that's at least 15 years down the road. I don't see it happening, but you never know. There aren't any threats to humanity right now, so we'll just have to wait and see."

The pink hedgehog presses against her blue husband, and he holds her close, making sure he's careful about her enlarged belly.

-9 PM-

Sonic and Amy are once again seen at the beach, but this time they're alone. The beach is deserted, and the full moon shines brightly overhead. There's a light breeze stirring the warm night air, and the waves crash gently on the shore.

Sonic and Amy approach the sandbar where they got married, and Sonic smiles at Amy. "Remember this place Ames?"

Amy giggles. "Of course, Sonikku. This is where we got married."

Sonic chuckles. "Actually that sandbar is where we got married."

Amy playfully hits his arm, then smiles. "It's been five years since we've been there, and I think we should visit."

Sonic nods. "Chaos Control."

Sonic and Amy disappear and then reappear on the sandbar. It's high tide, and $\frac{1}{4}$ of an inch of water flows gently over the area. Amy's jade green eyes shine brightly in the moonlight.

Sonic was stunned. "Ames... Your eyes..."

The sakura hedgehog blushes. "Yes, Sonikku?"

The blue blur tries to keep speaking, but can't. Amy giggles. "I'm assuming my eyes are blowing your mind?"

Sonic only nods, and Amy nuzzles Sonic's chest. "The same thing is happening with your eyes, my love. Every time I look into them, my heart flutters in my chest. The moonlight just adds extra effect."

Sonic's deep voice makes Amy's body heat up. "I feel chills down my spine whenever I look into your eyes, Amy Rose. That hasn't changed in our entire relationship."

Amy feels Sonic's strong arms wrap around her, and she leans against him. "I love you Sonic. Always have, and always will."

Sonic gently kisses Amy's cheeks. "I love you too Amy, and always will."

The rose-pink hedgehog turns to her royal blue husband, and her silky lips meet Sonic's lips. Their arms entwine around each other, and their tongues begin a slow, sensual wrestling match. Even after more than five years of marriage, Sonic and Amy still felt fireworks in their heads and chills down their spines. A few minutes go by, and the kiss finally breaks. Sonic and Amy look into each other's sparkling green eyes for what seemed an eternity, though it was only a few minutes.

Amy holds onto Sonic's black shorts by the belt loops on them. "Sonikku? I want to perform the mating ritual. Right here, right now."

Sonic is shocked. "Here on the sandbar? It's a public place, Amy."

She nods. "Yes, but we're beyond the breakers. It's also at night, and no one's going to see or hear us."

Sonic smiles. Amy was right, and the shining jade green eyes made it impossible to refuse again.

Amy shivers when Sonic's deep voice is heard in her ears. "Well then, let's get started."

Amy gently pulls on Sonic's blue shirt as he takes off his blue speed shoes. Amy removes her green sandals. Sonic removes his blue shirt, revealing the chest and abs Amy loved almost as much as she loved Sonic himself. Amy takes off her purple maternity shirt and matching bra, revealing her supple breasts. Just like when she was pregnant with Dash, they've grown in size, preparing for the production of breast milk.

Sonic pulls Amy to him and gently kisses her. His hands slowly begin to pull Amy's green skirt and green underwear off of her long legs. The pink hedgehog unbuttons Sonic's black shorts and begins pulling them down, along with his black boxers. The kiss finally breaks, and Amy begins to nibble on Sonic's neck and shoulders.

The cerulean speedster gives a low growl, and Amy bites on his shoulders. Another low growl makes Amy trail her kisses down Sonic's strong chest to his nipples. Sonic begins purring as Amy's soft tongue gently licks his left nipple. Amy smiles when Sonic takes handfuls of her soft, shoulder-length pink quills and holds her in place. Amy begins lightly dragging her claws along Sonic's abs as she suckles on his left nipple.

Sonic shivers and moans. "Ohh Amy..."

Amy moves to the right nipple as her while her right hand rubs Sonic's left nipple. The blue hero moans Amy's name louder, making her body heat up even more.

The sakura hedgehog gets on her knees, and her sparkling green eyes look into Sonic's emerald eyes. "Well, it didn't take long for you to get turned on, did it?"

Sonic chuckles. "For you, it never takes very long."

Amy blushes. "Awww, you're so sweet Sonikku."

Now Sonic blushes. "So are you Ames."

Amy gently begins licking and sucking on Sonic's testicles. Sonic holds Amy in place, moaning her name loudly. His moans are music to Amy's ears, and she finally moves to Sonic's member. Licking her lips, Amy's right hand begins stroking the 8 inch appendage as her tongue teases the tip.

Sonic shivers visibly and looks down at his wife. "That feels incredible Amy. Oh wow."

Amy locks her jade eyes with Sonic's emerald eyes and deep throats all 8 inches of his throbbing manhood.

Sonic shudders. "Yes Amy. Please keep going."

The pink hedgehog starts bobbing her head along Sonic's length as she pinches Sonic's nipples. The speedster feels his member pulse, and he makes his announcement. "I'm going to cum baby."

Amy moans, then Sonic erupts in orgasm. Amy releases his pulsing manhood and moans as his thick seed sprays onto her face, dripping down her luscious body to her swollen breasts.

Sonic smiles. "That looks awesome honey."

Amy giggles. "I'm glad you think so, sexy. Can I have more?"

Sonic nods. "Go for it."

Amy wraps Sonic's shaft in her swollen mounds and begins massaging it.

Sonic begins to gently pull on Amy's long quills, moaning her name. "Oohhh yesss... Amy that feels so good."

Amy begins licking the tip of Sonic's huge appendage when it becomes visible from between her breasts. Sonic shudders and Amy increases her pace.

Sonic begins panting a little as his pleasure quickly rises. "Amy-Amy that feels so good."

Amy speeds up once more, then Sonic reaches his limit. "Amy! Yes Amy! Here it comes!"

Amy's eyes light up as Sonic unloads on her face again. The speedy hedgehog yells Amy's name as he climaxes. "AMY!"

After his orgasm passes, Sonic looks down at his wife. Her face is covered in his seed, and this makes him smile. "You seem to enjoy having my seed on your face, baby."

Amy giggles. "You seem to have forgotten how much of a freak I am for you."

Sonic shrugs. "I think you just reminded me. However, it's my turn."

Amy lays down on her back, shivering as her fur gets wet by the water gently flowing over the area. Sonic crawls on top of her, being careful about her enlarged belly.

Amy feels Sonic's muzzle on the left side of her neck, and she moans. "Ohh Sonic..."

He moves to the right side, and gets more moaning from Amy. The rose-pink hedgehog moans loudly when she feels Sonic's sharp fangs on her delicate shoulders.

With her hormones screaming, Amy pants to her cobalt stud. "S-Sonic... I need you inside me."

Sonic smiles, his shining emerald green eyes meeting Amy's sparkling jade green eyes. "I'm not done yet."

Amy growls. "Dammit Sonic, hurry up."

Sonic moves to Amy's sensitive breasts, his tongue gently sweeping her right nipple. This makes Amy moan loudly, and Sonic begins to suckle on the nipple. Amy begins grinding her soaked womanhood on Sonic's thighs. Sonic moves to Amy's left nipple, as his left hand rubs Amy's right nipple.

His right hand begins rubbing Amy's clitoris, and Amy starts screaming. "YES SONIC! MORE! OH YES!"

Sonic's thumb rubs her clit and his middle finger rubs Amy's G Spot. The sakura hedgehog begins writhing in pleasure, screaming loudly. "SONIC! UH! I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Sonic smiles, then Amy erupts in orgasm. Her body shakes as the powerful climax rips through her, and she screams her stud's name. "SONIC!"

Sonic looks at Amy and smiles. Her eyes are closed in ecstasy, and she's panting heavily. Once she calms down, her eyes open, and she smiles at Sonic. "Sonikku... Oohhh... That was strong, but it felt incredible."

Sonic chuckles. "I'm not done yet."

Amy nods. "Then stop talking and get going again."

Sonic spreads her legs and begins to softly trace a sensual path around Amy's lower region. Amy holds Sonic in place, taking handfuls of his long quills and moaning softly. "Oohhh yeah... Just like that my love."

Sonic reaches up and gently pinches Amy's sensitive purple nipples. Amy begins writhing and screaming again. "SONIC! YES! I LOVE YOU SONIC T HEDGEHOG! MORE DAMMIT!"

Sonic gives a muffled reply. "I love you too Amy Rose Hedgehog."

Now Sonic begins to gently nibble on Amy's sensitive clitoris and Amy screams loudly. "SONIKKU! I-I'M GOING TO CUM AGAIN!"

Sonic speeds up his actions, and he feels Amy tense up. The tingles race throughout Amy's body as she screams Sonic's name as loud as she can. "SOOONNIIC! UH! Uh! Oh wow. Ohhh..."

The blue blur's face gets covered in Amy's warm juices as they spray from her dripping flower. After cleaning her up, Sonic sits up and smiles. "I'm surprised no one's heard us yet."

Amy giggled. "I told you the breakers would cover our sounds. Now, lay on your back."

Sonic does so, and Amy lubes Sonic's manhood with some of the juices from her soaked core. "I know we don't have any lube, so this will have to do."

Sonic nods, and Amy finishes lubing him and herself up. Amy positions her tight anus over Sonic's manhood, and lowers herself onto it. She squeals a little from the pain, since her juices only worked so well. Sonic holds onto Amy's hips, and she slowly begins riding him.

Amy's swollen breasts bounce freely with every movement, and she starts moaning as the pain slowly goes away. "Ohh yeah... You're so deep in me, Sonic... I love how it feels. Can I go faster?"

Sonic smiles. "You're asking to go faster? It's fine with me babe. Go as fast as you want."

Amy digs her claws into Sonic's shoulders and speeds up. This makes all 8 inches of Sonic's huge manhood fill Amy's ample rear completely. For extra penetration, Sonic thrusts up when Amy comes down.

His actions make Amy moan loudly. "Oh! Yes! Ahh! Sonic! Uh! So thick! So hard! Oh yeah!"

Sonic releases Amy's hips and inserts three fingers into her leaking flower. This double-penetration move makes Amy's pace increase as the pleasure screams through her body.

Sonic's free hand is used to pinch Amy's sensitive purple nipples, and Amy screams to her husband. "SONIC! UH! I-OH!-I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Sonic nods. "Don't hold back Amy."

Amy nods and her next orgasm hits a few seconds later. Sonic winces as her claws dig into his shoulders. Amy shakes as her juices spray onto Sonic's abdomen, screaming is pet name. "SONIKKU! OH SONIC! UH! UH! Uhhh.... Damn. I feel... Well, I can't describe it."

The sturdy blue hedgehog smiles at his stunning pink wife. "I love your sounds, Ames."

Amy sighs. "I love how big your manhood is."

Sonic sits up and kisses Amy tenderly. "I hate bursting your bubble here, but I haven't cum."

Amy pouts. "You suck. How close are you?"

Sonic shrugs. "I'll let you know. I think we need to change positions for best results though."

Amy pouts again. "But I like you inside me Sonikku. Can't you stay inside me and change positions?"

Sonic thinks for a second, then nods. He has Amy face away from him, then get on all fours. This results in him winding up on his knees, never once pulling out of Amy's backside. Once they're both ready, Sonic begins thrusting into Amy's firm rear.

Amy tosses her head back and screams. "HARDER! FUCK ME HARDER DAMMIT!"

Sonic speeds up and spanks Amy a few times. Amy's hormones are going all out now, and her only focus is mating with her royal blue husband. Sonic reaches around and begins pinching and rubbing his rose-pink wife's sensitive nipples.

Amy screams back to him. "SONIC! UH! UH! FASTER! DEEPER! PLEASE! DON'T HOLD BACK!"

Nodding, Sonic pounds Amy's ample backside at full speed and power. He also takes one hand and rubs Amy's swollen clitoris.

Amy shudders, then turns to Sonic. "UH! SONIC! I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Sonic grunts his reply. "Me-Me too baby. Get ready!"

Amy nods. "CUM INSIDE MY ASS, SONIC! PLEASE!"

Sonic grips Amy's hips tightly, then holds as he unloads into Amy's firm backside. He yells Amy's name as his strong orgasm tears through his ripped frame. "AMY!"

At the same time, Amy has another strong orgasm. Her juices spray onto Sonic's thighs as she screams his name at full volume. "SONIC!"

Sonic gently pulls out of Amy's rear and collapses onto the sandbar, panting heavily. He makes the water splash around him, and grunts when Amy gets on top of him. She's also panting heavily, and she simply smiles at Sonic.

The blue hedgehog smiles back at the pink hedgehog. "Whoa. (panting) I don't remember (panting) ever making love (panting) like this."

Amy sighs contently. "I do. (panting) It was when I (panting) was in heat on your (panting) 27th birthday."

Sonic nods. "Are you in heat now?"

Amy giggles. "No, that was last week (panting) but this works just fine."

Sonic chuckles. "I agree. (panting) Now, are you ready for the last part?"

Amy nods. "What took you so long?"

Sonic gets Amy on all fours again, but then changes his mind. "Ames, I have e new position I'd like us to try."

Amy's eyes light up. "Really now? Well, let's try it."

Sonic sits down then has Amy sit on his legs, known as the Lotus position. Amy inserts Sonic's 8 inch shaft into her soaked flower, moaning as the huge organ fills her completely. "Ohhh.... Already I love this position."

Sonic nods and nuzzles Amy's chest. "When you're ready, we can continue."

Amy wastes no time, and begins riding Sonic's massive member. Chills race up Amy's spine to her head as the new feeling makes her shiver with pleasure. Sonic leans his head forward and gently bites Amy's left shoulder.

The pink female hedgehog moans loudly. "Ah! Yes Sonic! Do that again! I love it when you bite me!"

Sonic repeats the action on her right shoulder, and Amy speeds up. Her womanhood pulses with the waves of pleasure she's getting, and she kisses her sturdy blue husband. The muffled moaning only makes the two hedgehogs more aroused.

The kiss breaks, and Sonic grunts to Amy. "Go-Go faster Amy."

The response is immediate, and Amy starts screaming. "SONIC THIS FEELS SO GOOD!"

Sonic begins to pinch and suckle on Amy's swollen purple nipples. This makes Amy's breath catch in her throat and then really start riding Sonic's meaty manhood.

Sonic was surprised, considering Amy was 6 months pregnant. "You're really going hard (panting) considering you're pregnancy."

Amy nods. "I know. (panting) It just feels so good Sonikku!"

Sonic resumes suckling on Amy's sensitive nipples, and Amy resumes screaming. "OH! OH! AH! SONIC! I'M GOING TO CUM!"

Sonic smiles. "Let it out, baby. No one will hear us."

Amy is panting heavily, and she tosses her head back. Her orgasm crashes over her like the waves on the beach, and she screams at a volume that would shatter glass. "SOOONNIIC!"

After her orgasm passes, Amy flops against Sonic, still shaking from her last orgasm. Sonic rubs the sakura hedgehog's back as she recovers.

He chuckles when he feels Amy's opening occasionally pulse as the juices keep flowing from it. "I'm going to assume that was a multiple orgasm."

Amy nods. "Yes. (panting) This time it was (panting) five orgasms in a row. I'm still orgasming (panting) right now, so give me (panting) a few minutes."

Sonic was more than surprised. "Damn Ames. Are you able to continue?"

Amy nods again. "Yes, but this will be it for me."

Sonic nods. "Alright. Let me know when you're ready."

Amy nuzzles Sonic's neck and then licks it as her reply. Sonic gives a deep chuckle and gently rubs Amy's back.

After five minutes, Amy nods and looks at Sonic. "Alright, let's go."

Sonic stands and keeps Amy's body wrapped around him. Amy smiles. "This should be good."

Sonic smiles and starts thrusting upward into Amy's drenched flower. Amy gently begins pulling on Sonic's quills and moans as his huge appendage penetrates her. "Oh. Yes. Oh yeah Sonic. I love you so much. Faster dammit faster!"

Sonic pinches Amy's swollen and sensitive nipples, and speeds up his thrusting. Amy kisses Sonic as passionately as she could, her loud moans becoming muffled once again. Amy has only one thought during this entire time. 'I know this will be ending soon, but this is one of the best mating rituals Sonic and I have ever had. Well, I think so anyway.'

Sonic has a thought of his own. 'Amy may not be in heat, but this is awesome. I actually think this is a lot better than Amy being in heat.'

Amy begins screaming as Sonic spanks her. "HARDER! FUCK ME HARDER DAMMIT! KEEP IT COMING SONIKKU!"

Sonic starts pounding Amy's dripping womanhood as hard and fast as he can. Amy screams at full volume. "UH! UH! SONIKKU! I'M GOING TO-TO CUM! AH!"

Sonic shouts his reply. "ME TOO AMY! MMPH! HERE IT COMES!"

Amy yells back to him. "CUM INSIDE ME AGAIN SONIC!"

Sonic holds onto his sakura wife's hips as he thrusts a few more times. He then holds as his thick seed roars into Amy's pulsing flower, yelling her name as loud as he can. "AMY!"

At the same time, Amy's final orgasm tears through her body. Her claws dig into Sonic's back and she draws blood, shaking violently as she tosses her head back and screams into the night. "SOOOONNIIIC!"

After their orgasms pass, Sonic pulls out of Amy and nearly falls down. Amy can't stand, and Sonic has to keep holding her. Both hedgehogs are shaking and can barely breathe. Amy's jade green eyes are bright with her love for Sonic, and Sonic's emerald green eyes show the same for Amy. They don't speak for a few minutes as they try to catch their breath.

Amy eventually speaks. "Just so you know, that was the best sex we've ever had."

Sonic nods. "I agree. Now, it's time to go home. Tails is probably wondering where we are."

Amy lays her head on Sonic's left shoulder, and then they vanish in a flash of blue light, completely forgetting about their clothes.

-Sonic and Amy's House-

A flash of blue light radiates in Sonic and Amy's room. The pink hedgehog climbs into bed as Sonic goes to say goodnight to Dash.

The bluish-purple hedgehog is fast asleep, and Sonic smiles. "Goodnight Dash. I love you."

Tails comes upstairs and immediately covers his eyes. "Dude, why are you naked?"

Sonic laughs. "Amy and I just got back from our beach walk, which wound up becoming a mating session. Anyway, thanks for watching Dash again. Sorry it took so long."

Tails smiles, still not looking at Sonic. "It's no problem at all. Goodnight Sonic."

Tails leaves and Sonic locks the door. Turning off the lights, Sonic joins Amy in bed. She wastes no time snuggling up to her husband.

Sonic wraps his arms around Amy as best he can, making her sigh happily. "That was incredible Sonikku. Actually, it was beyond incredible. That was on a level most only dream about."

Sonic nods. "I'm glad you enjoyed it as much as I did. If we can move tomorrow, we need to make sure no one saw us or heard us."

Amy giggles. "I really don't care if they did or not, but I understand why you want to make sure."

The two hedgehogs kiss and close their eyes. Amy yawns and nuzzles Sonic under his chin. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you."

Sonic pulls Amy as close as he can, being careful with her enlarged belly.
"Goodnight Amy. I love you too."

Sonic and Amy are asleep in less than five minutes, their bodies glowing with the love they share with each other.

Tikal's warning

August 22nd comes, and we find Sonic and Amy with Tails and Cream in the lobby of the Station Square Care Center. Amy's getting her head scratched by Sonic as he usually does when they're in the Care Center. Tails and Cream are cuddled together in the chair next to them. Dash is playing with the Prower triplets in the designated play area.

Doctor Alnilam arrives in the lobby at 10 AM and calls the two families. "Prowers and Hedgehogs, come with me please."

The kids are gathered and the two families follow the doctor to the examination rooms. Exam Room 11 is set up for the two families, and Doctor Alnilam shuts the door. "Alright. This is the last time you have to see me before childbirth. Once you're ready we can begin the sonograms."

Sonic and Tails help Amy and Cream get on the beds. Both females sigh as their back muscles relax. Soon they're hooked up to the sonogram machines, and Doctor Alnilam layers the special jelly onto their exposed stomachs. Sonic and Tails take the attachments and make a few passes on their wives' exposed bellies. Dash and the Prower triplets watch as the images slowly appear on the screens. Amy, now 25, watches her screen with hopeful green eyes.

Her cobalt husband smiles at the image. "There we go."

Sonic's emerald green eyes shine as they look at his rose-pink wife. The doctor comes over and looks at the screen. "Okay. Well, the fetus is doing well. The eyes are fine, hands and feet are good. The umbilical cord is just fine, and the placenta is where it should be at this point in the pregnancy."

Amy gasps as Sonic and Doctor Alnilam see the baby kick the womb. Sonic chuckles and speaks to the growing child. "Easy now. You've been good so far. Save the kicking until after we get home."

Doctor Alnilam chuckles, and turns off the machine. Amy gives Sonic's hand a squeeze, and the doctor smiles. "Your daughter is looking just fine, Mr. and Mrs. Hedgehog."

Sonic helps Amy off the bed, and they join Tails and Cream. The orange fox and cream-colored rabbit watch as Doctor Alnilam looks at their child. His brown eyes narrow as they focus on one area. "Well, everything is alright. The child is developing normally."

Cream and Tails look at him, then Amy speaks up. "But..."

The doctor sighs. "But the location of the umbilical cord is bothering me. It's functioning fine, but it's too close to the fetus for my comfort. However, the child should be okay. In cases like this, the cord usually stays where it is. I'm going to assume the child will be a little larger than normal, as was the case for your triplets."

Tails and Cream nod, then Sonic speaks. "Will the child encounter any problems before childbirth, considering the location of the umbilical cord?"

Doctor Alnilam shrugs. "As I've said, the child should be fine, but I'd like Mr. and Mrs. Prower to keep a close eye on this situation. Sonic, I'd like you and Amy to help out with them, please."

The pink and blue hedgehogs nod, and Doctor Alnilam turns off Tails and Cream's sonogram machine. The fox and rabbit thank the doctor, and leave the Care Center.

The doctor washes his hands and turns to the hedgehog family. "See you for the child's delivery."

Sonic thanks Doctor Alnilam, joins hands with Amy and Dash, then says the two famous words. "Chaos Control."

The three hedgehogs disappear in a flash of blue light.

-That night-

It's 3 AM, and Sonic is tossing and turning in his sleep. Once again, he's having a nightmare. He suddenly sits bolt upright, screaming again. "AAAHHHHH!"

He's sweating profusely, but Amy has once again slept through it all. Sonic gets out of bed and walks to the balcony. The emerald green eyes look out over the quiet city, and a gentle breeze stirs the long quills that were four inches past his shoulders.

Sonic's ears twitch when he hears a gentle voice. "Sonikku?"

It was Amy, and she walks over to him, nuzzling his left arm. "Did you have another nightmare?"

The speedster nodded and pulled his sakura wife to him. Amy feels a few tears land on her quills, which extended three inches past her shoulders.

Her green eyes are laden with concern as she looks up to Sonic. "What did you see this time?"

Sonic shook his head, his voice shaky. "No... No I-I can't say."

Amy turns his head so that he looks into her eyes. "Tell me please."

Sonic takes a breath. "This time, you and the child died in childbirth."

Amy gasped. "No... Sonic, why would this happen?"

A female voice replies. "It's because you two keep worrying about it."

Sonic and Amy turn around and find a bluish outline of Tikal.

Amy frowns. "You again?"

The pinkish echidna's outline nods. "Yes, and once again, you two are naked. Did you perform the mating ritual again?"

Sonic shook his head. "No. We always sleep naked. What are you here for now?"

Tikal sighs. "It seems your nightmares aren't so unreasonable anymore Sonic."

Amy presses as best she can against Sonic. "Our child dies?"

Tikal shakes her head. "All I can say is that Sonic's nightmares will come true. Given that you and Cream are pregnant at the same time Amy, it may or may not happen to you. Then again, it could, and it'll spare Tails and Cream's child."

The pink hedgehog cries silently into her blue stud's chest. Sonic turns to the bluish outline of the female echidna. "You know who this happens to, don't you?"

Tikal nods. "I do, but I'm not allowed to say. I'm sorry Sonic."

Sonic gently rubs Amy's back as Tikal continues. "Tails and Cream will get a visit from me tomorrow night. They won't know who this will happen to, just that it'll happen."

Amy keeps whimpering into Sonic's chest, so he speaks again. "So you're just here to warn us?"

Tikal nods. "Yes, Sonic. I'm sorry I can't tell you more."

Sonic smiles. "It's okay. Amy and I definitely appreciate it."

Tikal's bluish outline fades and leaves Sonic and Amy alone on their balcony. Sonic helps Amy back into their room and back into bed.

Amy clings tightly to Sonic, her grip on his fur like a vice. "Sonikku... I'm so scared... I don't want our child to die... I don't want to die either... Oh Sonic!"

Amy buries her face in Sonic's chest again, crying openly. Sonic holds her close and gently rubs her back. "Shh.... I have you Amy... Try to calm down."

Amy continues to cry, her body heaving with her sobs. Sonic goes to his next attempt. He begins singing to Amy. The song he chooses is called "God Only Knows" by the Beach Boys.

"I may not always love you, but long as there are stars above you, you never need to doubt it, I'll make you so sure about it... God only knows what I'd be without you...."

As he sings, Amy slowly stops crying, and her breathing slows. Once Sonic finishes singing he checks on his wife. She's peacefully asleep with a smile on her face. Sonic cuddles Amy as close as he can, and falls asleep.

-Two days later-

Sonic, Amy, and Dash are watching TV when a knock is heard on their door. It's Tails and Cream with the triplets. Sonic lets them in, and smiles as the kids go to the playroom. The fox and rabbit join the two hedgehogs on the couch.

Cream is the first to speak. "We got a visit from Tikal last night. She said she visited you two as well."

Amy nods. "She has. Twice."

Tails chimes in now. "Tikal has warned us that one of the coming children will die."

Sonic nods. "She should have also told you that I've been having nightmares about this for a long time now."

Tails nods. "She did. What are we to do?"

Amy frowns. "We don't have much choice. Our only option is to let things happen."

Cream presses against her twin-tailed husband. "But it scares me. I don't want my child to die."

Amy nods. "Your fears are equally shared by me Cream, but there's nothing we can do."

Sonic and Tails nod, then Amy gives the blue blur a nudge. He takes the sakura hedgehog's hint, and looks at the fox-rabbit couple. "Have you guys kept a watch on your child?"

Cream nods. "Miles and I are like hawks, Sonic. So far everything seems fine, but it's tough to give a certain answer without the proper equipment."

Sonic nods. "I understand Cream. I'm just trying to do as Doctor Alnilam asked."

Tails smiles. "We appreciate it Sonic."

Amy and Cream suddenly gasp at the same time. Sonic and Tails give them confused looks until they explain at the same time. "I just got kicked."

The boys chuckle and rub their wives bellies, occasionally getting kicked.

-9 PM-

Tails and Cream gather their children and leave Sonic and Amy's house. Sonic locks the door and turns off the lights while Amy helps Dash get ready for bed. Sonic joins them in Dash's room, and the bluish-purple hedgehog hugs his royal blue father and rose-pink mother.

"Goodnight Mommy and Daddy. I love you."

Amy kisses Dash and Sonic hugs him. "Goodnight Dash. We love you too."

Dash climbs into bed and his parents go to their room. Sonic and Amy undress and climb under the blue silk sheets. Sonic cuddles Amy to him, making her sigh contently. They share a sweet kiss, and close their green eyes.

Sonic gives Amy another kiss to the top of her head. "Goodnight Amy. I love you."

Amy nuzzles Sonic under his chin. "Goodnight Sonic. I love you too."

The two hedgehogs are soon asleep, snuggled close together.

Tragedy strikes

September arrives, and we find a party at Sonic and Amy's house. It's Dash's 5th birthday party, and the house is alive with party sounds. Tails, Cream, Sonic, and Amy Rose are on the couch. Shadow, Rouge, Knuckles and Tikal are also there, watching the children play together.

For gifts, Sonic and Amy had given Dash custom made bluish-purple speed shoes. Tails had given Dash some tools for the models of the X Tornado and Blue Typhoon he was given a few years earlier. Cream and Tikal handwove a bluebell flower necklace with special herbs to protect Dash in the future battles he may face, should he decide to become a world hero like his parents.

Knuckles had gotten Dash a carrying case for the piece of the Master Emerald he was given five years ago as a baby shower gift. Shadow and Rouge had agreed to give Dash stealth training for extra fighting prowess to go along with Cream and Tikal's gift.

Since Amy and Cream were now into the ninth month of their pregnancy, moving around wasn't easy. Sonic and Tails go get the chocolate cake and bring it into the living room.

Everyone starts singing "Happy Birthday" to the bluish-purple hedgehog, and after the song, Dash smiles. "Thanks everyone."

His jade green eyes shine as he blows out the candle, which is a number 5. As the cobalt speedster and orange fox cut pieces of cake for the guests, Amy smiles at Cream. "I can't believe it. Soon, we'll be giving birth to our daughters."

Cream nods, putting a hand on her large belly. "I can't wait for this to be over. Carrying the triplets was a lot tougher, but this is still pretty rough."

Amy laughs. "Believe me, I know. I don't think I could handle carrying three children like you did though."

Tails and Sonic join their wives, who lay their feet on their legs. Sonic rubs Amy's sore feet and ankles while Tails does the same to Cream.

Amy moans as Sonic works the tension out of her feet. "Oohhh, I needed this Sonikku."

Sonic blushes and continues working. Cream sighs as Tails rubs her feet. "This feels so nice, Miles."

Tails smiles and gives Cream's right hand a kiss. "I'm glad it does, Cream."

The other two couples take the chairs as they all watch movies on TV.

-5 hours later-

Sonic, Amy, Tails, Cream, Shadow, Rouge, Knuckles, and Tikal are barely awake. The kids are all asleep on the floor.

Rouge picks Samuel up off the floor and gently wakes Shadow. "Shad?"

The black hedgehog yawns and opens his crimson eyes. "Yes babe?"

The white bat blushes, and whispers. "It's time to go."

Shadow stretches, takes Rouge's hand, and says two words. "Chaos Control."

The family vanishes in a flash of green light. Tails and Cream gather their triplets, thank Sonic and Amy for having them over, and then leave. Knuckles and Tikal gather up their quadruplets, and leave after thanking the pink and blue hedgehogs. Amy yawns and turns off the TV while Sonic locks the door and carries Dash upstairs to his room.

After tucking him in, Sonic helps Amy off the couch and upstairs to their room. They undress and climb into bed. Amy faces away from Sonic, and smiles as Sonic's muscular arms wrap around her.

Sonic nuzzles the back of Amy's neck and speaks in a deep, quiet voice. "Are you ready for our second child?"

Amy nuzzles Sonic's left arm. "Of course. I am a little worried about Tikal's warning though."

Sonic holds Amy as close as he can. "I know you are, but remember that Tikal said worrying about it would only make it worse."

Amy nods and closes her jade eyes. "I'm doing my best Sonikku, but I can't help it with the due date so close."

Sonic nuzzles Amy's right cheek. "Just relax and let things happen, baby. I know you'll be fine."

Amy purrs when Sonic nuzzles her cheek, then she rolls over and kisses him. "I believe you. Now, let's get some rest."

Sonic kisses Amy back and closes his emerald green eyes. "Goodnight Amy Rose Hedgehog. I love you very much."

Amy smiles. "Goodnight Sonic T Hedgehog. I love you very much, too."

The two hedgehogs are asleep in ten minutes, dreaming about their second child.

-Five days later-

It's now September 19th, and Sonic is awakened by his cell phone ringing. The speedster finds his phone and answers it. "Yes Tails?"

Tails is frantic. "Sonic! You and Amy need to come to the hospital!"

Sonic frowns, then yawns. "It's 2:30 in the morning, Tails. I hope you have a good reason for calling me."

The fox sighs. "Does Cream being in the hospital count?"

Sonic is suddenly wide awake. "I wish you'd said so sooner. Me, Ames, and Dash will get there in the next hour."

Tails smiles. "Awesome. See you soon."

Sonic ends the call and gently wakes Amy. "Ames? Wake up honey."

The sakura hedgehog growls and replies in a sleepy voice. "Why did you have to wake me up?"

Sonic climbs out of bed. "Cream's in the hospital."

Amy's eyes shoot open and she throws the bed sheets off of her. "We need to get to the hospital!"

Sonic laughs. "Calm down babe. There's plenty of time. Let's shower, then Dash can shower. After that, we'll go to the hospital."

Amy nods, and Sonic helps her out of bed. 35 minutes later, Dash takes his shower. Sonic dresses in a dark green muscle shirt, black shorts, and his black speed shoes. Amy picks a green maternity shirt, a loose-fitting pink skirt, and green sandals. Dash finishes his shower and decides to wear a blue shirt, matching shorts, and his bluish-purple speed shoes.

Sonic joins hands with his wife and son, and nods. "Chaos Control."

The hedgehog family vanishes in a flash of blue light.

-Station Square Hospital-

A bright blue flash radiates in the lobby of the hospital, then three hedgehogs appear. Shadow, Tikal, Rouge, and Knuckles are already there. The kids are playing in the designated play area, and Dash goes to join them.

Sonic and Amy join the other two families, and Sonic speaks first. "Any news yet?"

Shadow nods, and Rouge answers the question. "Tails and Cream are in Room 463. Cream's at 5 centimeters, so she has a long way to go."

Amy nods. "What about the child?"

Knuckles speaks now. "We haven't heard anything yet. Since this is the case, we can only assume the best."

Tails comes into the lobby and smiles at his friends and older brother. "Glad you all could make it. Doctor Alnilam is examining Cream again now."

Sonic smiles at his little brother. "I'm glad everything is going well so far."

Tails nods. "The nurses say I can have one person in the delivery room with me."

Shadow frowns. "That sounds a little fishy to me. We all know you're going to choose Sonic."

Tails shrugs. "Well, I do know him better than the rest of you, so why shouldn't I choose him?"

Sonic rolls his eyes and joins Tails in Cream's room.

-Cream's Room-

The hedgehog and fox enter the rabbit's room. Doctor Alnilam nods to the two males. "Hello you two. Cream's at about 7 centimeters, so she still has a while to go."

Tails joins hands with Cream. "How do you feel Cream?"

She smiles. "A little tired, but I'm okay so far."

Sonic turns to the doctor. "How long do you think Cream will be here?"

Doctor Alnilam shrugs. "As long as she needs. It could be up to three days, including the day of delivery."

Sonic nods, and then Cream screams in pain. Tails winces as Cream squeezes his hand.

Sonic knows all too well what Tails is going through. "Tails, I hope you have a hand left after this. Amy damn near broke mine when she had Dash."

Tails laughs, then winces again as Cream has another contraction. The ocean blue eyes have a few tears in them when Sonic's emerald green eyes see them.

"Sonic, get an ice pack ready."

Sonic laughs and goes back to the lobby.

-37 hours later-

It's 4 PM on September 21st. Tails is in the lobby updating everyone on Cream. "She's at 9 centimeters, and the contractions are getting more frequent. Doctor Alnilam is thinking Cream will be giving birth very soon."

A voice comes over the PA system in the hospital. "This is Doctor Alnilam. Tails Prower and Sonic the Hedgehog please come to Room 463."

Sonic gives Amy a kiss. "It's time, honey."

Amy kisses back. "I look forward to good news Sonikku."

Sonic and Tails walk to Cream's room.

-Cream's Room-

The door opens to show Sonic and Tails. The two males enter the room, and Tails takes Cream's right hand.

A strong contraction hits, and Cream puts Tails' left hand in a death grip. "MILES PROWER! YOU DID THIS TO ME!"

Tails' eyes filled with tears as the pressure on his hand increases when the contractions hit. Sonic watches with concern in his emerald green eyes.

Doctor Alnilam puts on a pair of gloves and sits in front of Cream. "Okay Mrs. Prower, when I say push, you push as hard as you can."

Cream nods, and Tails almost begins crying when Cream squeezes his hand.

The doctor takes a breath. "Alright Cream. Push!"

The rabbit nods, takes a breath, then grits her teeth and pushes. The pain is intense, and tears stream from Cream's chocolate eyes.

For 10 seconds Cream pushes, screaming the whole time. "AAHHH!"

Doctor Alnilam has Cream stop to catch her breath.

Tails wipes Cream's face with a cool cloth. "You're doing fine Cream."

She smiles, and is asked to push again. 10 more seconds of pain, and the doctor has some good news. "You're crowning now Cream. One more push and you'll have your daughter."

Tails feels a nuzzle to his chest from Cream, then the rabbit is asked to push once more.

Tails gives his wife a smile. "You can do it."

Cream pushes as hard as she can, screaming loud enough to make Sonic cover his ears. Doctor Alnilam talks Cream through it. "Almost there... Come on, push... Got it. You're done, Cream."

Cream flops against the pillows. Tails looks at the doctor, then at the nurses who are leaving the room with the newborn.

Cream pants to her orange husband. "Miles... My baby! Where they taking my baby?"

Sonic and Tails follow the nurses and Doctor Alnilam.

-15 minutes later-

Sonic walks out to the lobby. Everyone stands, and Amy runs over to her royal blue stud. "Sonikku?"

Sonic's eyes turn to his rose-pink wife. Amy's face goes from hopeful to horrified when she sees the tears falling. "What happened?"

Sonic struggles to answer, and his voice is broken by his sobbing. "The child... It-It didn't make it."

Amy feels her own baby kick, then everyone gathers around the two hedgehogs. Sonic speaks a little louder so his friends can hear him. "Cream had a stillbirth.... The child was dead when Cream gave birth to it."

The shock races through the others, and tears flow unchecked from their eyes.

-Cream's Room-

Tails slowly walks into his wife's room. "Well, we tried for 15 minutes to help the child."

Cream nods, her eyes filling with tears. "What-What do you mean, Miles?"

The orange fox tried not to cry as he answered the rabbit, but failed. "You-You had a stillbirth C-Cream... Our child was dead when it came out."

Cream pulled Tails close and buried her face in his chest. "No... No, you're lying to me! You have to be lying to me!"

Tails shook his head. "You know I'd never lie to you Cream. I'm so sorry..."

Cream held tightly to Tails and cried harder than she ever did before in her life.

-The lobby, two days later-

Tails and Cream join Sonic and Amy in the lobby of the hospital. Doctor Alnilam is there as well. "Tails, Cream... I'm so sorry about your loss."

He turns away, and tries to keep from crying. Tails frowns. "That's all you have to say?"

The doctor whirls on him. "Dammit Tails, you don't understand! That was the first child I've ever delivered that was already dead! It's not any easier for me than it is for you."

Doctor Alnilam goes into his office, and he can be heard crying openly.

Sonic gently pushes Cream and Tails toward the exit. "Come on. There's no need for us to be here right now."

The Prower triplets and Dash follow their parents out of the hospital.

-Sonic and Amy's house-

The three hedgehogs enter their living room. It's 8 PM now, and Dash is sent to bed. Sonic locks the door and helps Amy up the stairs. When they get to their room, Sonic and Amy undress and climb into bed.

Amy wastes no time pulling Sonic to her. "Sonic I'm so scared. What if our child dies? What if I die?"

Sonic rubs Amy's back, gently talking to her. "Shh.... You won't die, and neither will our child."

Amy's tear-filled jade green eyes look into Sonic's emerald green eyes. "How do you know?"

Sonic smiles. "You've given birth to Dash, and I know you'll do the same with our next child."

Amy nuzzles Sonic's chest. "I trust you Sonic."

He smiles. "Good. Now let's get some rest, alright?"

Amy nods. "Goodnight Sonikku. I love you."

Sonic wraps his arms around his wife. "Goodnight Ames. I love you too."

Sonic and Amy are soon asleep, snuggled close together.

Will history repeat itself?

One week passes, and it's now September 28th. Amy was a little behind schedule with her second child, and Sonic was getting concerned. He was on the phone with Doctor Alnilam trying to figure out what was wrong. "She's two weeks past due, Doctor. What's going on with my wife?"

The doctor frowns on his end of the call. "There isn't anything wrong, Sonic. Yes, she's behind two weeks, but this means she'll be giving birth in the next 36 to 48 hours."

Sonic nods. "I see. So we should probably head over there pretty soon, right?"

Doctor Alnilam nods. "The sooner the better Sonic."

The call ends, and Sonic turns to find Amy looking at him. "Sonikku? Was that the doctor?"

Sonic smiles. "Yes babe. He recommends that we get to the hospital as soon as we can."

Amy helps Dash get ready for their stay, then rejoins Sonic. "Alright honey. We're ready."

Sonic joins hands with his wife and son, and then takes a breath. "Chaos Control."

The hedgehog family disappears in a flash of blue light.

-Station Square Hospital, 2 PM-

Sonic, Amy, and Dash appear in the lobby of the hospital, and they're immediately taken to Room 298.

Doctor Alnilam comes in a few minutes later, and nods to the hedgehog family. "Hello again. Mrs. Hedgehog, I'll need to examine you, so I'll give

you a few minutes to change."

Sonic closes the curtain so Amy can change. Dash sees a red skirt, matching sandals, and a pink maternity shirt hit the floor. A few minutes go by, then Sonic opens the curtain again. Doctor Alnilam sits in front of Amy, putting on a pair of gloves.

Dash gets curious. "What are you going to do, Doctor?"

The doctor smiles. "I'm just going to examine your mother to make sure your sister is okay."

The bluish-purple hedgehog turns to his parents. "She'll be okay, won't she?"

Sonic nods, ruffling Dash's quills. "Of course she will, son."

Doctor Alnilam begins his exam once Amy's ready. "Mrs. Hedgehog, you're at about 7.5 centimeters. You've got a little while to go, but you're getting close."

Amy screams as a contraction tore through her. Dash covered his ears and Sonic holds Amy's left hand.

Amy's green eyes flashed when she looked into Sonic's emerald eyes. "SONIC T HEDGEHOG! YOU DID THIS TO ME AGAIN!"

Sonic smiles and turns to Dash. "I'll have Tails come over so you have someone to play with."

Doctor Alnilam leaves the room after washing his hands, and Sonic sends a text message to Tails. 'I need you to come down to the hospital dude. Get Shadow and Knuckles to bring their families as well.'

Tails replies in a few seconds. 'I'm assuming Amy's in the hospital for her childbirth?'

Sonic smiles and replies. 'You got it.'

Tails' reply is quick. 'Be there soon.'

Sonic thanks the fox, then turns to Amy. "You feeling okay?"

Amy nods. "For now, honey. I can't wait for this to be over. I've carried this child for nine and a half months. I just want it to be over."

Sonic chuckles and kisses his rose-pink wife. "Very soon it will be, babe. You'll be holding our daughter in your arms in just a few hours."

Amy kisses her royal blue hedgehog stud. "Thank you for being here Sonikku. Your support is much appreciated."

Sonic smiles. "What kind of husband would I be if I wasn't? Of course I'd be here to support you."

They share a kiss, then Tails arrives with the rest of the group.

-Four hours later-

It's 6 PM now, and Doctor Alnilam is updating everyone on Amy. "Well, Amy's very slowly approaching delivery, and I mean very slowly. When I examined her four hours ago, she was at 7.5 centimeters."

Cream speaks up. "Where is she now?"

The doctor checks his clipboard. "Mrs. Hedgehog is at 7.75 centimeters now."

Shadow frowns. "Do you know how much longer it'll take?"

Doctor Alnilam shakes his head. "At this rate, I don't know. Going at $\frac{1}{4}$ of a centimeter every four hours, it could be another 24 to 36 hours. However, she's nearing three weeks past due. That bothers me, because she's nearing a dangerous point. If she doesn't get any closer to naturally delivering, I'll have to induce labor."

Cream starts shaking a little, and Tails gently rubs her back. Rouge comes over and hugs the rabbit. "Amy will be fine. I know she will."

Knuckles looks at Tikal. "You got anything?"

Tikal nods. "This will be a very painful delivery. Sadly, what happened to Tails and Cream still could happen to Sonic and Amy."

Doctor Alnilam nods. "You're right Tikal. Amy's first delivery was much easier than this one will be."

The doctor leaves to check on more patients, and Tails sighs. "I really hope this child comes out okay."

Everyone nods and goes back to waiting.

-September 29th, 1:30 AM-

Doctor Alnilam comes back into the lobby. Tails is the only one awake, and he looks at the doctor. "How's Amy?"

The doctor sighs. "No change. I'm going to give it another four to six hours. If there's no change after that, I'll have no choice but to induce labor."

Tails nods and gently wakes the group. "So far, nothing has changed, and labor will probably have to be induced."

Sonic walks into the lobby at this point. His quills are drooping, and his eyes are bloodshot. Shadow and Knuckles help him get to a chair, and Sonic rubs his eyes. "Thanks guys."

Knuckles rejoins Tikal and looks to the blue speedster. "How's Amy doing?"

Sonic yawns. "She's sleeping now. It's fitful because of her contractions, but at least she's getting some rest."

Rouge chimes in now. "Sonic, you need to get some rest as well. You look horrible."

Sonic nods. "I know, but I have to be awake for Amy."

Tails shakes his head. "Get some rest Sonic. Doctor Alnilam is giving it another four hours or so. Even just three hours of sleep would help you."

Sonic was eventually convinced to lay down on the couch. Tikal sighs. "Such a dedicated father, going almost sleepless for nearly two days."

Cream nods. "He'll certainly need every minute of sleep he's getting now."

Doctor Alnilam shakes his head at the sleeping form of Sonic. 'I really hope everything works out.'

He goes about his way, silently praying Sonic and Amy's daughter came out okay.

-Five hours later-

It's 6:30 AM. Doctor Alnilam enters the lobby and looks over the sleeping families. He gently wakes Tails, then goes to the sleeping form of Sonic. "Sonic, wake up."

The cerulean hedgehog rolls over, and slowly opens his emerald eyes. "What time is it?"

Tails answers. "6:30 AM. What's going on, Doctor?"

The doctor frowns. "Amy's just gotten to 8 centimeters. I didn't want to do this, but labor has to be induced. Tails, let everyone know. Sonic, come with me."

Sonic yawns and follows the doctor while Tails lets everyone know about Amy.

-Room 298-

Sonic and Doctor Alnilam enter Amy's room, and Sonic gently wakes Amy. "Ames? Wake up sweetie."

The pink hedgehog slowly opens her jade green eyes. "Hmm? What is it Sonikku?"

Sonic rubs Amy's head. "The doctor will have to induce labor."

Amy's eyes widened. "What does that mean?"

Doctor Alnilam sighs. "You're almost three weeks past due, Mrs. Hedgehog. That baby needs to come out, thus labor must be induced."

He gets on the bedside phone. "I need a nurse in Room 298 for childbirth please."

A nurse entered the room less than a minute later carrying some towels. Sonic takes Amy's left hand, giving her a kiss. "You ready?"

Amy nods. "Let's get this child out."

Sonic nods to Doctor Alnilam, who sits in front of Amy and breaks her water. Amy screams as the contractions hit, putting Sonic's hand in a death grip. Doctor Alnilam takes a breath, visions of Tails and Cream's child entering his head.

Shaking his mind clear, the doctor looks at Amy. "Okay Mrs. Hedgehog. Push."

Amy takes a breath and pushes. 10 seconds of pain passes, then Amy collapses onto the bed, panting heavily.

Doctor Alnilam looks at her machines. "Your heart rate's a little high, Amy. Try to stay calm."

Amy nods, and is told to push again. The sakura hedgehog screams with the pain, threatening to break her blue stud's hand as she pushes. 10 seconds later, she flops on the bed again, sweating profusely.

Sonic wipes her face with a cool cloth. "You're doing great honey."

Amy smiles. "Thanks. What's the status on my baby, Doctor?"

Doctor Alnilam frowns. "You're making progress, but it's very slow."

Amy gives Sonic a worried look. "Is the baby okay?"

Sonic looks at the baby's heartbeat, shown on Amy's machine. "So far, yes."

The doctor nods. "Push again Amy."

Taking a breath, Amy pushes as hard as she can, screaming as loud as she can. "AAHHH!"

Doctor Alnilam frowns. "Great. Your birth canal is closing."

Amy gets worried again. "What does that mean?"

The doctor gets some tools. "It means we need to get that baby out. Now."

Reaching between Amy's legs, Doctor Alnilam opens up Amy's birth canal just enough for the baby to come out. "Alright Amy, it's crunch time. Get this child out."

Amy takes a breath, and pushes for all she's worth. Sonic watches with his emerald eyes full of concern.

10 seconds pass, and Amy hits the pillows again. "What's taking this baby so damn long?"

Doctor Alnilam chuckles. "Well, I have good news. You're crowning now. One more push and your daughter will be here."

Sonic wipes Amy's face again. "You can do this, babe. I know you can."

Amy takes a breath, and pushes harder than she knew she could. Sonic winces as his hand is crushed.

Doctor Alnilam talks to Amy as she pushes. "Come on... Push, push, push."

Amy screams as she pushes. "AAAAHHHHH!"

The doctor nods. "Got it. You're done."

Amy hits the bed, gasping for breath. Sonic cuts the umbilical cord, and wipes Amy's face, neck, and shoulders off with a cold cloth. "Good job. I'm very proud of you, honey."

Amy pants to him. "Where-Where's my baby?"

The pink and blue hedgehogs look at Doctor Alnilam. He's cleaning the newborn. The nurse cleans Amy up, then they await the doctor.

He's looking at the newborn, performing CPR. "Come on dammit, breathe!"

Amy's eyes fill with tears. 'Please don't let my child suffer the same fate Cream's did.'

Doctor Alnilam hangs his head and stands. He looks at Sonic and Amy, tears filling his eyes. Amy pulled Sonic to her and cried into his blue shirt and dark green shorts. Sonic let a few tears fall as well.

Then out of nowhere, a thin, high-pitched wail is heard, making everyone listen.

Doctor Alnilam's tears of sadness become tears of joy. "I-I can't believe it. She's alive."

Amy stutters. "Wh-What? She's alive?"

The doctor nodded and gave Amy her newborn daughter. Sonic nearly fell to the floor from relief.

He gives Amy a gentle nuzzle, and hugs Doctor Alnilam. "You have no idea how much this means to me and Amy. Thank you so much."

The doctor hugs back, being careful about Sonic's sharp quills. "You're very welcome. This is also personal redemption after what happened with the Prowers."

Sonic rejoins Amy and wipes a few tears from her eyes. "I can't believe she's finally here."

Amy nuzzles Sonic's abs. "Me either. I was so scared when I didn't hear her crying."

Sonic nods. "Me too Amy."

Sonic sends a text message to Tails. 'She's here Tails. Tell everyone they can come see her, but they have to be quiet.'

In a few moments, a gentle knock is heard. Sonic opens up the door to find Dash, the Prower triplets, Samuel, and everyone else staring at him.

The royal blue hero chuckles. "Like I said, be quiet."

Sonic leads everyone to his rose-pink wife, who smiles at everyone. "We haven't named her yet. Does anyone have any ideas?"

Several names were suggested, but none sounded good. Amy looks at her husband. "Do you have any names, Sonikku?"

Sonic shook his head. "I think it's only fair that you name our daughter, Ames. Besides, I named Dash."

Amy nods and thinks for a few minutes. Everyone waits patiently, then Amy smiles. "Our daughter will be named... Lily."

Everyone nods their approval. Amy looks down to Lily, who opens her eyes. They were a bright emerald green color, perfectly matching Sonic's eyes. Her fur was a lilac color, just a few shades darker than Amy's fur. She was much a much lighter color than Dash, who was more of a lavender color. Three quills stuck out from Lily's forehead, and there was no doubt she would get the rest of Amy's looks when she was older.

Amy smiles at her daughter. "Hello Lily. I'm your mother, Amy. This is Sonic, your father."

Amy passes Lily to Sonic, and he gently speaks to her. "Hey Lily. I'm your father, Sonic. Welcome to the world."

Sonic turns to show Lily to the other three families. "The black one is Shadow, and the white one is his fiancée Rouge. Next to them are Knuckles and Tikal. Next are your Aunt Cream and Uncle Miles, but he goes by Tails. In front of them are their triplets, your cousins. Beside Knuckles and Tikal are their quadruplets. The brown squirrelhog is Samuel, Shadow and Rouge's son."

The emerald green eyes of the newborn simply stare at everyone, then turn back to Amy. She nods, her jade eyes shining.

Sonic gives Lily back to Amy, and she calls Dash over. "Dash, come see your new sister."

The bluish-purple hedgehog smiles at her. "What's her name Mommy?"

Amy chuckles. "Her name's Lily."

Dash's green eyes look into Lily's emerald eyes. "Hey Lily. I'm Dash, your older brother."

Lily yawns, giving a high-pitched squeak. Amy smiles. "Nap time for Lily, everyone."

Sonic and Dash hug everyone as they leave, then rejoin Amy. Dash gets a chair and is soon asleep. Sonic ruffles Dash's quills, then puts a chair beside Amy and Lily.

He sits in the chair, and Amy gives him a tender kiss. "Thank you so much, Sonic. I'm glad you were here."

Sonic kisses Amy back. "I wouldn't have been anywhere else, Amy. I love you."

Amy sighs happily. "I love you too Sonic."

It doesn't take very long for Sonic and Amy to fall into a much-needed sleep.

-Three days later, 9 PM-

Sonic, Amy, Dash, and Lily enter the house. Lily's birth made front page headlines all over the world, just like Dash did when he was born. The hedgehog family had a little trouble with reporters and news media, but otherwise the trip home was uneventful.

Sonic shuts the door and hugs his family. "It's great to be back home."

Amy giggles. "I agree. After what happened with Lily at the hospital, I just wanted to get back here."

Dash yawns, and Sonic chuckles. "Go on and go to bed, Dash. Your mother and I are right behind you."

Dash hugs his parents, then bolts up the stairs. Sonic locks the door, and takes Lily upstairs to their room. Lily's crib is at the foot of the king size bed, since it would be a little easier to get to the lilac newborn hedgehog. After putting Lily in her crib, Sonic undresses and climbs under the blue silk sheets. Amy joins him in a few moments, undressing and snuggling up to her cobalt husband.

Sonic wraps his strong arms around his pink wife, making her sigh contently. "Ahh... It's so nice to be back in a soft bed and in your arms, Sonikku."

Sonic kisses her. "Believe me, I feel the same way."

Amy's green eyes meet Sonic's emerald eyes. "Do you want a third child, my love?"

Sonic chuckles. "I think we're fine with two children, honey. However, I have no objections continuing to perform the mating ritual with you."

Amy closes her eyes, smiling. "Good. Now, let's get some rest."

Sonic nuzzles Amy and closes his eyes. "Fine with me. Goodnight Amy Rose Hedgehog. I love you so much."

Amy nuzzles Sonic's chest. "Goodnight Sonic T Hedgehog. I love you very much too."

Soon, Sonic and Amy are asleep. At 2:15 AM the next day, Sonic and Amy begin the parenting cycle once again when Lily wakes up to nurse.

A Sonamy Story Threequel

Ten years later

-Flashback-

A flash of blue light radiates in the lobby of the spa, revealing Sonic, Amy, and Lily. All of the females stop what they're doing when they see Sonic and immediately charge at him, fan girl squealing and all.

Amy summons her red-and-yellow Piko Piko Hammer and jumps in front of her cobalt husband. "Back off, he's mine!"

The women all give pouting looks to Sonic, and he chuckles. "You ladies are about 10 years too late. Besides, I'm a one-woman guy, and Amy is that woman."

The women glare at Amy and then go back to work. One female approaches Amy. "Here for another massage Mrs. Hedgehog?"

Amy growls. "No, I'm here to file a complaint."

The woman (who happened to be the manager) frowns. "I see. Well, what's the problem?"

Amy told the manager about the rough massage and the subsequent search for her wedding ring. The manager's brown eyes flash and she calls the masseuse in question to the lobby. After a short discussion the masseuse is put on a two month leave of absence without pay starting immediately for substandard work.

After the masseuse leaves the manager looks at the pink hedgehog. "I'm very sorry for your poor massage Mrs. Hedgehog. Is there anything I can do to make up for it?"

Amy nudges her blue stud, and he rubs the back of his head. "Well, I'm in need of a job. I'm not getting enough money from my other job, and apparently I have a natural gift for massaging."

The manager nods and then Amy speaks up. "I'll put it this way. He puts your people to shame."

The manager chuckles. "Really. Alright, I'll tell you what. How would your husband like to work here? He'd be on a two month trial period at first, but if the customers like his work, then he'll be hired much sooner than that."

Amy looks at Sonic, and he smiles. "When should I be here?"

The manager thinks for a minute. "Tomorrow morning at 9:30. I'll get you a uniform and see how things go."

Sonic shakes the woman's hand, retrieves Lily, and teleports back to his house.

-End Flashback-

-Present day, downtown Station Square, 10 years later-

Our story resumes at a very nice resort spa. It's November 10th and inside the spa we see a blue figure dashing around. It's Sonic the Hedgehog, world hero-turned-masseuse and current owner of the spa. His 42nd birthday was approaching, and even though his age hadn't shown in his speed, it was starting to show in his quills. Tiny flecks of silver were showing in the normally cobalt blue fur, and Sonic had recently gotten glasses to help him see a little better. However, that fact hadn't slowed down his lifestyle.

On this particular Thursday Sonic was awaiting a very special customer: His own wife, Amy Rose Hedgehog. The rose-pink hedgehog, now age 38, was also showing her age a little. Underneath her jade green eyes, wrinkles were starting to form and she also wore glasses to help her see. Right at 11 AM Amy entered the building and smiled when she saw her husband waiting for her.

Swaying her still-curvy hips Amy kissed Sonic once she got to him. "Hey stud. I'm in the mood for a hot massage and maybe a little fun afterwards."

Sonic smiles and picks Amy up bridal style, making her giggle. "One extra-sensual massage and a hot mating ritual coming right up."

Sonic bolts into the closest massage room and began the "special massage".

-Station Square University-

In the massive brick building, several dozen students are talking in the halls. Among them was the offspring of the famous Sonic team. Dash, Zachary, Nathaniel, Lucas, and Matthew. Dash was the son of Sonic and Amy and looked just like his father other than the bluish-purple fur and jade green eyes.

Zachary and Nathaniel were the two sons of Knuckles and Tikal. Their sisters, Monica and Delilah, were on the cheerleading squad. Lucas and Matthew Prower were two of the three triplets Tails and Cream had produced. Their sister, Jenna, was also on the cheerleading squad.

Samuel Acorn, the child of the long-deceased Sally Acorn and an unknown father was also at the university, but didn't have any classes with Dash, or any other of the Sonic team descendants. Lily, Dash's younger sister, had just entered her sophomore year of high school.

Jenna, Delilah, Monica, and cheerleader captain Melannie were seen walking down the hallway, causing the other students to move to either side of the area. Everyone moved except Dash, Samuel, Nathaniel, Zachary, Lucas, and Matthew.

They were busy talking until Melannie got their attention. "Um, you're supposed to move when we're walking."

Samuel goes to his next class, but this remark made the remaining five guys chuckle. Melannie, a green hedgehog, frowned at them. "What's so funny?"

Nathaniel, who was known for being the reigning weightlifting champion (along with Zachary) answered. "You are Melannie. Just because you're the cheerleading captain doesn't mean you own the school."

Delilah speaks up. "Nate, don't be an asshole. You should have more respect for us."

Nathaniel rolls his eyes. "No one even listens to you cheer anyway. They're too busy watching Luke and Matt score touchdowns."

The two male Prower triplets chuckled. It was true, both of them were tied for the school record of touchdowns scored in a season. Lucas and Matthew were both wide receivers on the football team but put their studies before their sports.

Melannie looks at Dash. "Anything you'd like to add Hedgehog?"

Dash growls and gets right in Melannie's face. "First, don't ever call me by my last name. Second, Nate is right. No offense to Jenna, but cheerleading isn't all you make it look like it is. Now get the fuck out of here you snot-colored trailer trash ho-bag."

Needless to say, Melannie was upset. Her green eyes filled with tears, and she sniffled. "What did I do to you to make you talk to me that way?"

Dash saw this and sighed. He hated to see a woman crying, just like Sonic did. "Sorry. I'll try to be a little nicer when I tell you off next time."

Melannie ran off, bawling loudly and large tears falling from her eyes. She was faking of course, even though Dash's words did hurt. What she really wanted was Dash's love, but she wouldn't admit it. Jenna and Delilah followed her, shaking their heads at Dash's harsh words.

Monica took a moment to speak to Dash. "Nice job Dash. I like a man who can hold his own."

Dash blushes a little. "Thanks Monica. I didn't mean to make her cry, but she's not queen of the school because she's the captain of the cheerleading

squad."

Monica nods. "I'll see you later Dash."

Delilah growls at her sister once she gets done talking to the speedy track star. "What are you doing? You know I've had a crush on him for the last 11 years."

Monica nods. "Yes, but keep in mind who you're going against when fighting for his affection."

Delilah frowns at her twin sister. "Who would I be going against?"

Monica looks around. "You don't have to worry about Jenna since she's Dash's cousin and that kind of thing is wrong. At the moment you need to worry about Melannie and me."

Delilah is shocked. "What? You, my own sister, would try to get with the man I've loved for over ten years?"

Monica shrugs. "The choice is ultimately his own."

Delilah chuckles. "You know the traditional pick goes to the oldest daughter, and by rights Dash should choose me."

Monica nods. "If Dash is anything like I've heard his father was, he'll buck all the rules and make his own choice."

The twin echidna sisters go on their way. Meanwhile Dash was busy staring at Monica. Nathaniel got his attention by flicking his nose. "Hey! Dash!"

Dash snaps back to reality. "Huh? What is it Nate?"

The big male echidna growls at the bluish-purple hedgehog. "If you hurt either one of my sisters, you're dead."

Dash frowns. "You say that to everyone."

Zachary speaks up now. "The ancient civilizations we're descendants of set the traditions our family lives by. According to these rules, if you wish to be with one of our sisters, the oldest must be taken first."

Dash nods. "That would be Delilah, but what if I want Monica?"

Nathaniel again. "If you go against the rules then you'll be forever cursed."

Dash chuckles. "What, is your mommy going to say a spell and curse me?"

Zachary nods. "Yes, since she knows how to do that kind of thing."

The two male echidnas walk off after giving Dash a few punches to his stomach to help them get their point across. Matthew and Lucas help Dash off the ground and shake their heads.

Dash sighs. "Thanks. Ultimately the choice will be mine, and if I want Monica, then I'll choose Monica."

Dash goes to his next class, and Lucas looks at Matthew. "The rest of the Hedgehog line is so screwed."

Matthew laughs and nods. "He's just like his father. Sonic broke the rules most of the time, and it looks like he passed that down to Dash. I just hope he knows what he's really in for."

The football stars go to their next class, P.E., where this week's focus was basketball. Dash made a mental note to himself as he walked to his class to ask what other rules he'd have to abide by. 'I know it runs in the family to go against the odds, but I'm not sure I want my family line to be forever cursed... What am I thinking? Curses don't exist... Do they?'

-That afternoon, Sonic and Amy's house-

The royal blue and sakura hedgehogs enter the house with Amy in Sonic's arms. It was 4 PM and they'd just gotten back from their extended "massage". Sonic puts Amy down and shuts the door.

Amy presses against Sonic and wags her tail. "Even after 20 years together you're still a sex machine. Mmm..."

Sonic chuckles and wags his own tail. "Thanks babe. You still have some awesome moves yourself."

Amy blushes and playfully hides her face in Sonic's chest. "Awww Sonikku... Heehee..."

Sonic lifts Amy's head and kisses her. "You know I'd love to stay but I have to get back to work."

Amy pouts, using the Puppy Face. "But I want you to stay. Please Sonikku?"

Sonic winks. "I'll give you another special massage if you let me leave."

Amy giggles. "That's an immediate yes."

Sonic and Amy kiss, then Sonic teleports back to the spa using Chaos Control. Amy sighs and sits on the couch when the phone rings. Frowning, she answers it. "Hello?"

Dash's deep voice replies. "Hey Mom."

Amy smiles. "Well hello Dash. How are you?"

Dash sighs. "I need to know what Knuckles and Tikal's rules are for being with their daughters."

Amy chuckles. "Well, you'd have to talk to them. Angel Island is floating just offshore. Perhaps you could go visit them and find out. I really don't know what their rules are, but I'll ask your father if he knows anything when he gets home from work."

Dash nods. "Thanks for the advice Mom. I'll see you guys soon."

The call ends and Amy goes into the kitchen to make dinner for Sonic and Lily.

-One hour later-

15 year old Lily enters the house wearing a lilac shirt and matching khaki pants. Other than the color Lily looked exactly like Amy and even wielded a Piko Piko Hammer like her mother.

Amy had just finished making dinner and she smiled at her daughter. "Hello Lily. How was school?"

Lily puts her book bag down and sighs. "It was tough. I have a lot of boys staring at me and it's hard to concentrate."

Amy chuckles and brings Lily a plate of roast beef. "Don't worry, I know how you feel."

Lily looks at Amy. "You do?"

Amy nods. "I sure do. I had a lot of men staring at me, but I ignored them because I loved only one person... Your father."

Lily smiles. "So you're telling me to ignore all the guys that say they love me?"

Amy laughs. "Not quite. Most guys will say they love you for the wrong reasons. Sonic had loved me from the very beginning, but he never said he did."

Lily frowns. "So how are you two together?"

Amy's eyes fill with tears of joy, thinking back to that night in the hospital over 20 years ago. "I didn't find out until my wedding, but according to Tails, Sonic confessed his feelings and kissed me while I was in the hospital. Sally Acorn, Samuel's mother, decided to team up with Sonic's archenemy to try and take me from him. She beat me with a pipe while Robotnik trapped Sonic and held me in place. Sally was arrested and was later put in jail, where she died from STDs. Anyway, while I was recovering Sonic told me he loved me and kissed me for the first time. After

that, our relationship blossomed and 20 years later, we're probably the happiest couple around."

Lily nods. "So Daddy confessed his feelings to you in the hospital and so on and so forth until today? What happened to Robotnik?"

Amy chuckles. "Sonikku killed him on our first date, which was at Twinkle Park. I found that out by watching the news the next day."

The 15 year old lilac hedgehog nods again. "I wish I could find a man like that..."

Amy smiles. "In time, you'll find the one you're meant to be with. Now go on and eat. Your father will be here soon."

Lily goes to the kitchen and starts eating. Right after she did Sonic appeared in a flash of blue light, standing in the middle of the living room. "I'm home Ames!"

Amy runs to her cobalt stud, glomping him and kissing him all over his face and muzzle. "Yay! My Sonikku is home!"

Sonic kisses his pink wife back and smiles. "Something (kiss) smells (kiss) really (kiss) good (kiss) honey."

Amy giggles. "I made roast beef today and there's plenty for you."

Sonic rubs noses with Amy, making her blush. "Thank you babe. I'm absolutely starving right now."

The two hedgehogs get up and go to the kitchen where Sonic cuts some roast beef for Amy and then gets some for himself. Walking into the dining room Sonic hugs Lily. "Hey Lily. How was school today?"

Lily tells Sonic the same thing she told Amy. Sonic nods and agrees with what Amy had already told Lily. Amy looks over at Sonic. "Honey, do you know anything about Knuckles' traditions in romance?"

Sonic thinks for a minute, chewing on some of the roast beef. "Well, I do know his civilization was very strict about keeping to their traditions, but I don't know anything other than that. Why do you ask?"

Amy eats some of her dinner. "Dash called earlier today asking about it."

Sonic nods. "That means he's fallen for either Delilah or Monica. I think his only option is to find out for himself."

Amy nods. "I thought so too. How will he be able to tell the girls apart? They're twins aren't they?"

Sonic nods again. "They are, but Dash says he knows how to tell them apart. Something about how they wear their... Um... I guess we can call it hair."

Lily laughs. "You don't know what to call it Dad?"

Sonic chuckles. "Well, take us for example. We have quills. Knuckles has dreadlocks but I don't know if that applies to Tikal or their daughters."

Amy smiles. "We'll have to remind Dash to ask about that too."

Sonic sighs. "I really hope he doesn't break the rules like I did when I was growing up."

The hedgehog family resumes eating and talking about various things. After 45 minutes Lily stands up and stretches. "That was awesome roast beef Mom. Thank you."

Amy smiles. "You're welcome Lily. I'm glad you enjoyed it."

The lilac hedgehog goes upstairs to do her homework, and when she did Amy looked at her cerulean husband. "Hurry up and finish eating honey. I want my second special massage."

Sonic grins and eats slower, making Amy growl. "Sonic."

Sonic laughs and looks at his pink wife. "I'm almost done Amy. Two more bites and then we can go."

Amy waits as patiently as she can, and when Sonic finishes his dinner Amy makes quick work of putting the dishes away. Sonic smiles and walks to Amy, swaying his hips. "How much do you want your "special massage"?"

Amy gives Sonic a seductive growl. "Come here big boy. You're not going in to work tomorrow."

Amy pounces on Sonic right there in the kitchen, but eventually the two hedgehogs make it to their room upstairs, where the "massage" lasts for nearly four hours.

-With Dash, 10 PM-

The lavender hedgehog is in the Station Square park talking to Monica. He was wearing a green shirt with blue jeans and his blue hover shoes. Monica was dressed in a red shirt with a red skirt and pink shoes.

Her amethyst eyes looked into the jade eyes of Dash. "If my brothers saw me out here with you they'd be really mad."

Dash chuckles. "So why did you come?"

Monica smiles. "I wanted to talk to you about the decision you'll be facing when you choose a mate."

Dash raises his eyebrows. "Alright. I'm listening to what you have to say."

Monica nods. "You'll be having three girls coming after you. Melannie, Delilah, and me."

Dash is surprised. "Three women? Why?"

Monica giggles. "Delilah has loved you for the last 11 years. Melannie thinks you're sexy, and I find your eyes to be the best feature you have."

Dash smiles. "Well thank you."

As they talked, Monica got much more bold about her feelings toward Dash, and she let him know. "You know Dash, if the other girls loved you as much as they say they did, they'd prove it to you."

Dash frowns. "What are you talking about-?"

Monica's soft lips cut off his talking as she kisses him, wrapping her arms around his neck. Dash was so surprised that he almost pushed Monica away, but he soon recovered and kissed her back, putting his hands on her hips. Fireworks went off in their heads, and Monica began playing with Dash's tongue. Dash smiles and does the same thing, making Monica shiver. The kiss breaks after a few seconds and Monica pants, looking at Dash.

Dash looks at Monica. "Wow..."

Monica nods. "That was awesome Dash."

Dash smiles. "Before I make a decision on my mate, I'd like to get to know all three of you."

Monica smiles. "I know you'll make the right decision, but keep in mind what's at stake with your decision."

The male hedgehog and female echidna continue their walk, talking about various things and getting to know each other.

-Station Square University, midnight-

Dash is back in his dorm room thinking about Monica and everything she told him. 'I feel like I know Monica really well, but it's only been one night. I think it's only fair that I give Melannie and Delilah a chance. This is going to be harder than I thought.'

Dash undresses and climbs in bed, falling asleep in 15 minutes.

The big decision

A few days later Dash is seen at the shoreline staring at Angel Island floating just offshore. It was Sunday afternoon, and Dash frowns. "How am I supposed to get over there? I don't have a hover board, and I can't do Chaos Control."

A deep voice came from behind him. "I can help you since I have to go there anyway."

Dash looks behind him and his eyes widen. "Shadow? Where did you come from?"

Shadow chuckles. "I came from my house."

Dash rolls his eyes. "Anyway, how do you plan to help me?"

Shadow walks over, the only sign of aging a pair of black glasses. "I've been doing Chaos Control for years, so getting both of us over there is no problem."

Dash nods. "Alright. Let's go. I have to talk to Knuckles."

Shadow grabs Dash's right arm in a tight grip. "Chaos Control!"

Both hedgehogs vanish and reappear on Angel Island in a flash of green light. Dash takes a few minutes to recover from his first Chaos Control experience. "Whoa..."

Shadow chuckles. "Take a few minutes to get your body back under control Dash."

Dash's response is vomiting. Shadow walks off to talk with Knuckles and Tikal about the Master Emerald's protection from Rouge. Dash finishes "recovering" after a few minutes and walks to where Shadow and Knuckles are talking.

Knuckles nods and looks at Shadow. "Okay, thanks for telling me. I'll get Nathaniel and Zachary to start working on the security system Tails developed."

Shadow nods and sees Dash. "So you finally recovered?"

Dash nods. "Yeah. I'll have to get used to that Chaos Control thing though. That was wild."

Knuckles smiles. "Don't worry. I'll lower the bridge down to the mainland when you leave."

The lavender hedgehog chuckles. "Thanks Knuckles."

The red echidna, now 42, had contacts instead of glasses to help him see. Dash and Knuckles watch Shadow vanish and then hear two female voices behind them. "Hi Dash."

Dash turns around and sees Monica and Delilah. "Hey girls."

Knuckles nods. "Dash, Sonic called me and told me that you might be looking to be with one of my daughters."

Dash nods. "I hope he said that I also need to know what the traditions are for your civilization."

Knuckles puts a strong hand on Dash's left shoulder. "You came to the right place Dash. Come with me."

Knuckles leads Dash to the Master Emerald with Delilah and Monica staring at Dash's butt. Tikal sees Knuckles walking over with Dash and she nods to them. "Welcome, Dash. It's nice to see you again."

Dash smiles at the pinkish female echidna, now age 41. "Hello Tikal. I'm sure you know why I'm here."

Tikal nods. "The Master Emerald has told me why you're here. Both Monica and Delilah are in love with you, but you can only choose one."

Dash nods. "Yes, but what does the Master Emerald have to do with me?"

Tikal looks at the massive green gem. "It's not much, but it's telling me that either of the girls you choose will have rough consequences."

Dash looks at the Master Emerald. "I feel it doing something... Like it's becoming part of me."

Tikal nods. "That's the Master Emerald getting used to what your presence is like. If something happens to either you or one of our daughters, we'll know because the Master Emerald will tell us."

Knuckles looks at Dash. "Are you ready for the tradition rules?"

Dash nods. "I'm ready."

Knuckles looks directly into Dash's eyes. "It's quite simple really. You just have to choose my oldest daughter, Delilah."

Dash nods. "What if I want to be with Monica instead of Delilah?"

Knuckles looks at Tikal, who then looks at Dash. "You're just like your father, taking on all odds no matter the risk. If you do take Monica over Delilah, then the rest of the Hedgehog line will be cursed. Now, that curse can be removed, but it's very hard to do."

Dash sighs. "Why does this choice have to be so hard now?"

Tikal looks at him. "I'm not done. Should you choose neither Delilah nor Monica, then you will remain single and no children will you have."

Dash sits down, the realization of how big this choice really was hitting him. "Damn... I don't feel so good anymore."

Knuckles sits beside him. "Take your time when deciding. You have four months to decide, but make sure you're confident in your decision."

The lavender hedgehog nods. "I will Knuckles. Thank you."

Dash and Knuckles walk to the edge of the floating island where Knuckles lowers a bridge so Dash can get back to the university. Knuckles' amethyst eyes look right into Dash's jade green eyes. "Remember what's at stake here."

Dash nods. "I will. Thank you again Knuckles."

Dash speeds down the bridge and reaches the university in about five seconds. Knuckles raises the bridge and sighs. 'I hope you make the right decision Dash... For everyone's sake.'

Knuckles takes one more look at Station Square before walking back to his family and helping with securing the massive Master Emerald.

-With Dash, 5 PM-

Dash was in the cafeteria eating the school's version of food when someone sat down beside him. "Hey Dash."

Dash looks over and smiles at Melannie. "Hey Melannie. How was your weekend?"

Melannie smiles. "It was alright. I practiced some cheerleading stuff for basketball season next year."

Dash nods. "I've been thinking about basketball, but I'm leaning toward staying with track. I can't use my full speed, but it helps keep me in shape. I might also try soccer if I feel like it."

Melannie looks at him. "Either one would work for you, but you might want to try football like your cousins Luke and Matt. The three of you would be unstoppable."

Dash shrugs. "I'll think about it, and I'll also have to talk to Luke and Matt to see what they say."

Melannie nods. "That's a good plan. Make sure you talk to the coach too."

The bluish-purple male hedgehog looks at the green female hedgehog. "Thank you for the reminder. Also, while I'm thinking about it, sorry for telling you off like I did."

Melannie giggles. "Thank you Dash. Your apology is accepted."

Dash smiles. "Great. Now, I have to ask you something."

Melannie looks at him. "What is it?"

Dash takes a breath. "What makes me attractive to you?"

Melannie blushes. "W-Well... It starts with your eyes. There's just something about that jade green color."

Dash nods. "Go on."

Melannie swallows hard. "I've seen how nice and laid back you are, but you can hold your own in the face of adversity. I want a man like that, like you, because that tells me you'll protect the people closest to you."

Dash nods again. "Anything else?"

Melannie smiles. "I'll tell you once I've come up with something."

Dash finishes eating and stands. "Thank you. I'll have a decision by the time mates are chosen."

Melannie watches Dash leave, getting those special feelings. 'Don't you worry Dash. You will be mine.'

Melannie leaves a few minutes later, forming a plan in her mind.

-Two hours later-

Jenna Prower is seen walking with her cousin Dash and brothers Lucas and Matthew. She looks at Dash. "Have you figured out what you plan to do for sports Dash?"

Dash looks at Lucas and Matthew. "Well, if I don't try out for track next year, what do you two think about me playing football?"

Matthew smiles. "I think that would be a good idea Dash. You're big and fast, maybe you could be a wide receiver on offense."

Lucas speaks up. "I don't know Matt. I think we have that covered with you and me, but maybe he can play more than one position. He could be a backup receiver, but I actually see Dash as a running back or a special teams returner."

Matthew nods. "I see what you mean Luke. If not offense, then maybe linebacker or cornerback on defense."

Lucas nods. "We'll let Coach make the final decision, but I like those positions for him."

No one knew that Delilah was watching Dash. 'So Dash might play football? Hmm... This might work to my advantage.'

Delilah returns to cheerleading practice with her competition, the captain Melannie, and her own sister Monica.

-11 PM-

Dash enters his dorm room and finds three envelopes under his door. Picking them up Dash chuckles at what they all say. 'In case you're having trouble, these pictures might help you decide.'

The lavender hedgehog opens the envelopes and finds pictures of Monica, Delilah, and Melannie all in very erotic clothing. Dash has to hold a bunch of tissues to his muzzle to keep his nosebleeds from getting too bad. Shaking his head Dash calls all three girls and asks them why they sent him these pictures of them. The replies he got were all the same, that they wanted to help Dash with his decision. Dash tells the girls not to pressure him into making his decision and let him choose on his own. They agree but keep planning to win Dash over.

After calling all the girls Dash lays on his bed and sighs. "Now I know how Dad felt when he had all those fan girls after him."

Dash's phone rings and he answers it without really caring who was calling. "Hello?"

Sonic's voice is heard. "Hey Dash. Have you talked to Knuckles yet?"

Dash nods. "Yes Dad, I did that today. It's getting serious really fast."

Sonic frowns. "Why?"

Dash sighs. "Knuckles told me everything that was expected of me."

Sonic frowns on his end of the call. "Is it really complicated?"

Dash chuckles. "Surprisingly, no. Knuckles said all I had to do was choose to be with Delilah."

Sonic almost laughs. "Is that all?"

Dash frowns. "Tikal said that if I don't pick either of their daughters, then the Hedgehog line after me will be cursed. She also said either daughter I choose will have rough consequences."

Sonic sighs. "Well, I know you'll make the right decision Dash. I'll talk to Knuckles and see if there's another way to do this."

Dash smiles. "Thanks Dad."

The call ends and Dash goes back to thinking about who he'll choose to be with.

-Four months later-

It's now March 18th, just before spring starts. Dash, now age 21, was once again standing in the hallway talking to Jenna, Lucas, and Matthew. "I hate how this place makes whoever you choose as your mate a public decision."

Jenna nods. "So do I. They just can't keep anything simple anymore."

10 AM comes around and the dean of the university is heard over the P.A. system. "Students, the time has come to choose your mate. Remember, the person you choose can refuse you and then be available to someone else."

Dash, Jenna, Lucas, and Matthew shake their heads. The students go in alphabetical order, and Dash can feel the pressure building. 'Who do I choose? I don't want to be single for the rest of my life, but I don't want to curse the rest of the Hedgehog family line. Oh no...'

Jenna sees Dash turn green and she frowns. "Is everything okay Dash?"

Dash glares at her. "Does this face look like everything is okay to you?"

Jenna growls and slaps him, but the bluish-purple hedgehog smiles at his younger cousin. "Thanks. I really needed that."

Since Dash was the only male who had more than one female after him, he had to do something else. He had to kiss the female of his choice. He didn't like it, but it was either that or he gets kicked off the track team. In his heart, he knew who he'd choose, but the risks far outweighed the reward.

As the choosing continued the pressure and anxiety began building again. Matthew looks over at the sweating hedgehog. "You know, you're worrying too much Dash. All you have to do is kiss the woman you want to be with."

Dash frowns. "If your entire family line was at stake, you wouldn't be all smiles like you are right now."

Matthew sighs. "Do you seriously believe you'll get cursed? That kind of thing doesn't exist."

Dash puts his head on his knees. "I don't know what to think anymore. I don't want to believe it's true, but I can't help but think it is."

Matthew nods, and after two hours Dash was finally called to make his decision. He was going last because of his special situation.

When his name was finally called the lavender hedgehog stands and takes a breath. 'I'm so happy Zachary and Nathaniel are at a weightlifting competition.' He looks around and sighs. "I need Melannie, Monica, and Delilah to come forward please."

The three cheerleaders do so, and Dash looks right in their eyes. "Over the last four months I've gotten to spend time with all three of you. Melannie, you're about as sweet as it gets when I talk to you. You're gorgeous and I feel really happy when I'm around you."

He looks at Delilah. "Delilah, what can I say? You've got the body every man dreams about. All those curves and a laid-back demeanor really make me feel warm and fuzzy inside."

Delilah giggles, and Dash goes to Monica now. "Monica, all I can say is that you're basically Melannie and Delilah combined. It was really easy to get to know you and I really enjoyed the time we spent together."

Dash looks at the other students, most of which have already picked a mate. "This decision is the hardest I've ever made. I know what's at stake with it, so please don't give me any grief."

Dash looks at the three cheerleaders again. "Here we go."

Monica, Delilah, and Melannie close their eyes and nervously wait for Dash's kiss. All three wanted it, but only one would get it. After a few more seconds of tense thinking Dash takes a breath and kisses the female of his choice.

Now, rumors had circulated about what could possibly happen depending on who Dash chose. All eyes widened and everyone gasped when they saw that Dash had kissed...

The curse is cast

A pair of eyes opens. They're green and they belong to Melannie. Looking to her right she gasps and runs off. "I can't believe you took her over me!"

Another pair of eyes opens, and this pair is an amethyst color. They move to the left and see Dash kissing his choice. The owner of the eyes growls and smacks Dash hard enough to send him to the ground. "How DARE you take my sister over me! I trusted you!"

The female echidna runs off, crying loudly. Dash sighs and looks at the woman he kissed... Monica. "Damn your sister hits hard."

Monica helps Dash off the floor. "Are you alright?"

Dash nods. "Well, other than feeling really bad for breaking Melannie and Delilah's hearts, yeah."

Dash gives Monica another kiss and looks into her eyes. "Will you go out with me Monica?"

Monica smiles. "Of course Dash, and not because you chose me. I'm saying yes because I love you."

Dash winks. "I love you too Monica."

Monica giggles, and then the dean comes over the P.A. system. "Thank you to everyone for not killing each other when your mate was taken. School is now dismissed."

Everyone leaves the massive brick building to go spend time with their new partners. Melannie and Delilah were nowhere to be seen. Monica looks at Dash. "I need to get to Angel Island and fast."

Dash picks Monica up bridal style. "Hold on."

In a lavender and crimson streak, Dash and Monica reach the shoreline in about 8 seconds. The bridge was already down, so Dash put Monica down and let her run to her parents. Knuckles was watching Tikal chant while Delilah ranted about Dash. "He took Monica over me! He knows I've wanted him for 11 years! I want him cursed until his bones rot!"

Monica hears this and growls at her twin sister. "Just because he took me over you means nothing! His heart told him I was to be with him and THAT SHOULD BE ENOUGH FOR YOU!"

Delilah tackles Monica to the ground and starts beating her. "YOU SLUT! YOU HAD SEX WITH HIM AND THAT'S WHY HE CHOSE YOU!"

Knuckles and Nathaniel separate the two girls. Zachary has already run down the bridge and was fighting with Dash. The two males were very evenly matched, and this fight wasn't pretty. Zachary won this time though, putting Dash on the ground and making sure he needed a hospital visit.

Monica sees this after breaking free from Knuckles' grip and runs down the bridge, cut and bleeding from Delilah's beating. "Zach, enough! Please! You're going to kill him!"

Zachary growls. "He hurt Delilah and bucked the tradition he agreed to abide by Monica."

Monica shakes her head. "He never agreed to that! Even if he had, his heart would have made him leave Delilah anyway!"

Zachary goes to push Monica out of the way, but she kicks him in the face, sending him to the ground unconscious. Looking at Dash, Monica goes over to him. "Dash, honey? Are you okay?"

Dash can only nod. Monica picks Dash up, but with great difficulty since he was heavier than she was and also because of his injuries. With Monica's help, Dash is taken to the hospital.

-With Sonic, 30 minutes later-

The blue hero is just going on his lunch break when Doctor Alnilam calls him. "Yes Doctor?"

Doctor Alnilam sighs. "Sonic, I'm calling about your son, Dash. He's here at the hospital. Monica is also here, and she's told me Zachary really put a beating on him. I need you to - Hello?"

There's no answer because Sonic hangs up and teleports to the hospital. After finding Dash's room Sonic runs in and over to his bedside. "Dash? Are you alright?"

Dash doesn't answer because Zachary put such a beating on him. He's suffered a broken nose, broken neck, eight broken ribs, and he's on a breathing machine. Monica comes in from the bathroom and looks at Sonic. "Dash is in bad shape, but the doctors say he should recover in a few weeks."

Sonic looks at her. "Which twin are you?"

Monica smiles. "I'm Monica, Dash's girlfriend."

Sonic chuckles. "Nice to see you again. You're his girlfriend now? How did that happen?"

Monica goes through the day's events, and as he listened Sonic frowned. "I knew he'd turn out like me, going against the odds. What about this curse? Surely that's not real."

The female echidna hangs her head. "I'm sorry Mr. Hedgehog, but it's real. I don't know when Mom will put the curse on him, but I fear for what might happen to him."

Sonic nods. "Do you think talking to Knuckles will work?"

Monica looks at him. "I don't know, but it's worth a try."

Sonic thanks Monica and teleports to Angel Island. Zachary and Nathaniel attack him, thinking he's Dash, since they didn't know Dash was at the

hospital. However, Sonic grabs their heads and bashes them together. The two male echidnas crash to the ground, rolling around and groaning in pain.

Sonic chuckles to himself. 'Way to use your heads guys.'

Knuckles hears the commotion and runs over. "Sonic? What did you do to my boys?"

The cerulean speedster frowns. "I helped them use their heads when they attacked me."

Knuckles actually smiles, shaking his head. "I'm glad someone finally did, even though I'm sure that pun wasn't intended."

Sonic sighs. "I'm here to see if there's any way Dash won't be cursed."

Knuckles frowns. "I'm sorry Sonic, but Tikal is already making the spell. Delilah should have been taken, not Monica. Dash knew what was at stake, but he bucked the rules."

Sonic shakes his head. "You should have known he'd do that Knuckles. He's a younger version of me, and he's going to act just like me. Why can't you just let him live in peace?"

Knuckles looks at his occasional enemy. "You know just as well as I do that I have to follow my civilization's traditions."

Sonic punches Knuckles as hard as he can, breaking his nose and knocking a few teeth loose. Knuckles hits the ground, knocked out cold. Sonic turns and then sees Nathaniel and Zachary running toward him. Shaking his head, Sonic punches Zachary and kicks Nathaniel to the ground.

The two echidnas hit the ground again, and Sonic laughs. "Please try again when you've learned to fight better."

Sonic lowers the bridge and runs to his house where he lets Amy know what's going on.

-Three weeks later-

Dash and Monica are seen leaving the hospital with Sonic, Amy, Lily, Shadow, Rouge, and Tails' family right behind them. Dash still needs help getting around, but he's fine overall.

Sonic looks at everyone. "I've tried several times to get Knuckles and Tikal to change their minds, but it's no good. They won't budge."

Dash nods. "Thanks for trying Dad. I just hope this curse isn't too bad."

Cream looks at Tails. "What curse? You told me curses didn't exist."

Tails looks back at her. "They aren't supposed to. It defies logic to think it would happen or that curses exist."

Monica frowns. "Mom knows how to make spells that are curses, and she's just finished the one for Dash. It has to sit for a few days to reach maximum strength. I don't know what she has planned for him, but it's going to be bad."

Shadow looks at Rouge. "This is why traditions are never broken."

Rouge smacks him. "Way to kill the mood Shadow."

The group of people go their separate ways with Shadow trying to plead his case but getting no response from anyone.

-With Dash and Monica-

The hedgehog-echidna couple walks down to the park. It's 2 PM and the mid-April air really brought out the smell of the flowers blooming in the area.

Dash picked a daisy for Monica, who put it in her hair and kissed Dash on the cheek. "Thank you Dash."

Dash smiles. "You're welcome Monica. You know, you look even cuter with that flower in your hair."

Monica blushes and Dash takes advantage. "Aw, did I make you blush Monica?"

The 20 year old echidna blushes even more. "Dammit. You made it worse Dash."

Dash chuckles. "It's just so adorable too."

This time Monica hides her face in Dash's strong chest. "You're evil, you know that?"

Dash laughs. "Only because you blush so easily."

The young couple resumes their walk, blissfully unaware of what Tikal's curse was going to do to Dash.

-Angel Island, 4 AM-

Tikal was putting the finishing touches on her curse when Knuckles walks over, yawning. "Are you coming to bed soon? It's hard to sleep when you're busy chanting."

Tikal looks at Knuckles. "I'm almost done. I just have to mix everything together again to make sure it's perfect, and the curse will be complete."

Knuckles watches his wife continue chanting and mixing the strange liquid until it became a red color. Tikal finally opens her eyes and nods. "Give this to Dash as soon as possible. When he drinks it, let me know."

Knuckles nods. "What's in this stuff?"

Tikal walks over to him after putting out the fire she was using. "If I told you, I'd have to kill you."

Knuckles sweat drops. "I'll let you know when he drinks it."

To his credit Knuckles had been thinking about what Sonic had said, but couldn't find it in him to break the traditions his civilization had lived by.

Sonic made it seem so easy though. He broke tradition like he broke the sound barrier when he went running.

Hanging his head Knuckles sighs and looks at the red liquid. 'I'm sorry Sonic. We've been through a lot, but I can't break this tradition.'

Knuckles put the liquid in a bottle and hid it in a place only he knew about before joining Tikal in bed. The female echidna snuggled up to Knuckles and smiled evilly. 'When you need your abilities the most Dash, you won't have them. That'll be the least of your worries. Enjoy your time not being cursed.'

The two echidnas fall asleep cuddled close together.

-The next afternoon, 3 PM-

Dash is practicing for track tryouts, speeding around the cross country course. All the people at the university were watching, including the scorned Melannie and Delilah. They took every opportunity to throw stuff at him whenever he ran by.

Delilah also yelled at the bluish-purple hedgehog. "THIS IS WHAT YOU GET FOR TURNING ME DOWN!"

This plan backfired each time because Dash always avoided the fruit and vegetables she and Melannie threw, but the scorned hedgehog and echidna cheerleaders didn't care.

After Dash got done with his warm-up run he saw Knuckles walking toward him with a bottle of red liquid. He didn't know Tikal was watching nearby. Knuckles sighs and hands Dash the bottle. "Here you go Dash. This drink is specially designed to help you perform your best during your tryout today."

Dash nods and drinks the liquid, which tasted rather good. Knuckles nods to Tikal, and she runs over, putting her hands on his head. Her voice sounded like she was in a trance. "When you need your speed the most, you won't

have it. The same goes for the rest of the skills you know you have. Your family line is hereby cursed for the rest of eternity."

Dash screams as loud as he can as the curse works its way through his system. Monica hears this and looks over, gasping and running to her family. Once she reaches them she pulls Tikal's hands off Dash's head. He collapses and pants heavily, feeling very sick and weak.

Tikal growls to her daughter. "You dare to interrupt my work?"

Monica nods. "Yes, I do. You shouldn't curse him because he didn't go with the tradition. He only went with his heart. Is that so bad?"

Delilah almost screams at Monica. "Let Mom finish her work and give Dash what he deserves!"

Monica helps her boyfriend off the ground, and Tikal looks at both of her daughters. "Even though you interrupted me, the curse will still take effect. Dash will be slow, weak, and he'll be forced to be a creature of the night. The disease he has will make sure of this."

Dash growls. "What disease did you give me?"

Tikal smiles. "Necrosis. Your fur and skin will slowly rot and fall off until you're nothing but bones."

Even Knuckles is horrified by this, but then he sees something on Tikal's hands. "You've got something on your hands."

Tikal looks down. "Oh no! Monica's interruption has given ME necrosis too!"

Monica shrugs. "Well, you kind of deserve it."

Tikal frowns. "I'll deal with you later."

She runs off back to Angel Island to make an antidote. Nathaniel and Zachary push Monica aside and take the opportunity to beat Dash senseless. Thanks to the curse this only takes about five minutes.

Once they get done they join Delilah in dragging Monica back to Angel Island with her struggling the whole way. "Let me go! Get off of me! You're nothing but dirty bastards!"

Delilah laughs. "I'm female Monica."

Monica spits in Delilah's face, but this gets her nowhere as she is dragged back to the massive floating island, leaving the unconscious Dash lying on the ground. Monica sees Melannie run over to him and kick him a few times before people surround him and call an ambulance.

A nocturnal rendez-vous

It's now May 15th. Tikal has cured herself of the necrosis and is on the recovery. Dash on the other hand has been forced to leave Station Square. He couldn't bear to see and hear everyone laughing at him. The curse did exactly as Tikal said it would, slowly rotting his fur and flesh. The lavender hedgehog now looked like he'd suffered a vicious attack from rabid dogs. Whatever fur and skin he'd lost was now wrapped in thick bandages, and he only came out at night.

Monica had come to visit him in the Mojave Desert as often as she could. She told Dash that she was trying her best to find an antidote to the curse, but nothing had been found just yet. Dash had been seen by only a few people, Monica included. Sonic and Amy were busy helping Tails to try and convince Knuckles to change his mind, but it was no good. Not even beatings from Shadow made Knuckles break from his tradition and reverse the curse.

On this particular night Monica had gone to see Dash again. Sonic had agreed to go with her since he wanted Dash cured as fast as possible. Monica found Dash sitting by a fire he'd made eating some food Sonic and Amy had brought him earlier that day. "Dash? How do you feel?"

Dash looks up and smiles at his girlfriend, but his eyes betrayed the sadness and pain he suffered. "Hey Monica. I'm doing well considering 15 percent of my fur is gone."

Sonic joins them. "Don't worry Dash. We'll get this situated soon enough."

Amy calls Sonic on his cell phone. "Sonikku, how is Dash doing?"

Sonic sighs. "He's in good spirits considering he's lost 15 percent of his fur."

Amy gasps. "Oh my goodness. What can we do to help him?"

The blue hero looks at Dash and frowns. "I don't think there's anything we can do Ames. I think Monica is the only one that can help him, but we can

keep trying to get Knuckles and Tikal to change their minds."

Amy nods. "Tails says he might have a way to get them to change their minds."

Sonic smiles. "Really? What's the plan?"

Amy giggles. "I'll tell you when you get home."

Sonic chuckles. "I'll be there soon honey. I love you."

The sakura hedgehog smiles. "I love you too."

The call ends and Sonic turns to Dash and Monica. "Amy needs me at home. There may be hope yet."

Dash nods. "Don't worry about us Dad. I'll take Monica home after she's done with me."

Sonic smiles. "Alright. I'll keep you updated son."

Sonic vanishes in a flash of blue light, and Dash looks at Monica. "How long are you planning to stay?"

The 20 year old female echidna sits next to the 21 year old bluish-purple hedgehog. "Until you get tired of me or until my family comes to find me."

Dash cuddles Monica to him but is careful not to touch her with his rotten flesh. Monica curls up in a ball in Dash's arms and nuzzles his chest, one of the few places that hadn't yet gotten infected.

Dash wraps Monica in his bandaged arms and purrs, making Monica smile. "I love hearing you purr Dash. It makes me feel so safe and warm and happy."

Dash blushes and kisses Monica. She kisses him back, taking a grip on the remaining quills Dash had on his head. Dash holds Monica closer to him, twirling some of her hair in his fingers. Their tongues meet and both lovers shiver as chills race through their bodies.

After a few seconds the kiss breaks and Monica's amethyst eyes look into Dash's jade green eyes. "Dash? I know we've only been together a month, but I've been wondering if we can... You know... Mate?"

Dash chuckles. "You mean have sex?"

Monica nods and Dash kisses her. "Well, I have wanted a family for a while, but what will our parents think? Besides, I'm a little worried that Tikal's necrosis curse has eaten away at a very vital part to the mating process."

Monica frowns. "Can you check?"

The hedgehog laughs and stands up. "Just a second."

He checks to see that his member is still there and smiles when he sees it. Turning back to Monica, Dash nods and zips up his faded jeans. "You have nothing to worry about. The necessary organ is just fine."

Monica smiles and kisses Dash, shoving her tongue inside his mouth. She gives soft moans as Dash rubs her back, and Monica tangles her fingers in Dash's remaining quills.

Dash breaks the kiss and sighs. "Are you sure you want to do this? I don't have any condoms."

Monica giggles. "I'm on birth control so you don't have to worry."

She was lying of course, but Monica didn't let Dash know she was. Besides, Monica had decided that getting pregnant would help her parents reverse the curse on her hedgehog lover. What she didn't know is that Sonic, Amy, and Tails were making a plan with Rouge to steal the Master Emerald.

Dash looks at Monica. "Well, I guess a little practice won't hurt. I have to admit though, I'm a little nervous. This is my first time."

Monica purrs into Dash's ears. "This is my first time too, so don't worry."

Dash winks. "Well, let's get started then."

Monica lifts her head and sighs softly. "Take me Dash."

Dash puts his hands on Monica's hips and nibbles on her exposed neck. Monica moans softly and holds Dash to her neck, shivering as Dash's sharp fangs tickled their way across her neck and shoulders.

Monica moved her hands down Dash's frame, smiling when she counts eight abs. "Mmm, I love your abs Dash."

Dash looks into Monica's eyes. "I love your toned body too Monica."

After a few minutes Monica takes off her red shirt and bra, giving Dash a seductive look. "Do you like what you see?"

Dash gives his girlfriend a good looking over. The red female echidna had a flat, toned stomach with 38D breasts and seeing this made Dash smile. "I certainly do. Now it's my turn."

Dash takes off his bandages and then his shirt, showing the abs and chest he inherited from Sonic. Monica drools and sways her hips as she walks to the lavender hedgehog, her large breasts bouncing freely with her steps. "Rawr."

Dash chuckles. "Same to you Monica."

Monica gets to Dash and looks at his rotting flesh. "If Mom won't reverse your curse, then I'll do it."

Dash looks at her. "You can do that?"

Monica shrugs. "I'm sure I can. My mother can do it, so why can't I?"

Dash smiles. "I appreciate that. Now, shall we continue?"

Monica takes off her jeans and underwear. "Once you're undressed, then we can continue."

Dash winks. "I think I might need a little help."

Monica kneels in front of Dash and takes off his jeans and boxers. Her amethyst eyes widen when she sees the size of Dash's member. "Wow. Dash, your penis is huge!"

Dash chuckles. The organ was 8.5 inches long and 3 inches thick. Monica was already feeling her juices drip down her legs, but she wanted to wait a little longer. Locking eyes with her lavender boyfriend Monica took Dash's appendage into her mouth and began sucking on it. 'I'm so happy the necrosis hasn't gotten here yet.'

Dash shivered and moaned as Monica's soft tongue twirled around his thick manhood. "Oohhh Monica."

Monica starts stroking and bobbing her head along Dash's thick shaft, making Dash twirl his fingers in her hair. After a few minutes Monica stops sucking on Dash and lays on her back, opening her legs. "Your turn."

Dash gets between Monica's legs and licks the outer areas of her soaking virgin flower. Monica arches her back and almost screams as her lower region is teased for the first time. "AH Dash! That feels incredible!"

The bluish-purple hedgehog moves to the inner parts of Monica's opening and puts her legs on his shoulders. The crimson echidna's legs are shaking with the pleasure and she digs her claws into the ground. "OH DASH! PLEASE DON'T STOP! UH! UH!"

Unfortunately for Monica, Dash did stop and started kissing his way up her toned stomach. Monica moans with each kiss and giggles a little when Dash kisses around her belly button. Dash reaches Monica's 38D breasts and softly licks Monica's light pink nipples.

Monica arches her back again and holds Dash to her breasts as they're also teased for the first time. "UH! DASH! YES!"

Dash finally stops his teasing and looks into Monica's eyes. "Are you ready?"

Monica cups Dash's slightly rotted left cheek. "I've heard the first time hurts."

Dash nods. "So have I, but after a while it starts feeling great."

Monica smiles. "I'm ready Dash. Claim me as yours."

Dash nods and positions himself. Monica closes her eyes and waits for Dash's entrance. Dash nuzzles Monica and enters her waiting womanhood. Monica gasps in pain and digs her claws deep into Dash's shoulders. Dash winces from the pain of Monica's claws in his shoulders and waits for her to recover.

Monica slowly relaxes and looks at Dash. "Okay. I'm ready Dash."

Dash kisses Monica and begins thrusting deep into her woman parts. The female echidna sighs softly as the pain slowly becomes pleasure. "Mmm Dash. I'm so happy we're together."

Dash gives a deep chuckle. "So am I."

Dash pinches Monica's nipples and speeds up a little. Monica arches her back as tingles flood through her body from head to toe. "AH! DASH! YES! MORE! MORE!"

Dash kisses Monica again and battles with her tongue for dominance. Monica's loud moaning was muffled but she held Dash close and battled with him. Dash smiles and lets Monica "win", rolling over so she's on top.

Monica giggles and breaks the kiss. "I take it I won our tongue battle?"

Dash chuckles and stokes the fire giving them more light and heat. "I let you win."

Monica lays on top of Dash and nibbles on his neck and shoulders, making him purr. "Whatever you say honey. Whatever you say."

Monica sits up and starts riding Dash, rubbing and pulling his nipples. Both lovers moan as Monica humps Dash's huge appendage. Monica made the

most noise though. "Oh! Oh! Ah!"

Dash spans Monica, making her toss her head back. "Dash honey! Yes! Spank me more!"

Dash does so, making the red 20 year old echidna ride him faster. Dash pinches Monica's nipples again and Monica screams. "OHHHH YESSS! UH! UH!"

Monica digs her claws into Dash's chest as she through her first orgasm. Dash holds Monica's hips and waits for her to recover. Once she does Monica lays down on top of her lavender lover. "Dash... That was amazing. (panting) What just happened?"

Dash rubs Monica's back, making her sigh happily. "From what Mom and Dad told me when they gave me my sex talk, you just had an orgasm."

Monica climbs off of Dash and gets in the doggy style position. "Give me another one, and put your cum in me this time."

Dash is confused. "How did you know it was called cum?"

Monica chuckles. "I got a sex talk too you know. Now, get going."

Dash smiles and gets behind Monica, entering her again. Monica tosses her head back and almost begs for Dash to continue. "AH! So big! So thick! Fuck me Dash! Fuck me hard!"

Dash gives a deep chuckle. "I love your sounds Monica."

Dash moves his strong hips back and slams his 8.5 inch shaft deep into Monica's flower. He goes so deep that the tip of his member touches the edge of her womb. Monica feels this and instantly starts screaming. "SHIT! OH FUCK YEAH! POUND THAT PUSSY DASH! TEAR IT APART!"

Dash is going at half of his full speed, and Monica loves how deep he's going so much that she puts the upper half of her body on the ground. This results in Monica's soaked womanhood opening up more and making Dash able to penetrate even deeper inside her. The male hedgehog reaches under

Monica and grabs her large breasts, squeezing the light pink nipples between his fingers.

Monica begins moving her hips toward Dash's hips in perfect motion with his thrusts, giving him even more penetration. Monica looks behind her to Dash, panting and screaming. "DASH! (panting) OH FUCK! (panting) I'M GOING TO HAVE ANOTHER ORGASM!"

Dash goes to his full speed. "OH MONICA! DAMN! I'M GOING TO HAVE AN ORGASM TOO!"

Monica nods. "PUT YOUR CUM INSIDE ME DASH! FILL ME WITH YOUR SEED! AAAHH!"

Monica shakes violently as her final orgasm tore through her. Dash stops his thrusting and holds as his massive load enters Monica's womanhood. "MONICA!"

Monica pants and smiles when she feels Dash's seed enter her. Dash pulls out of Monica and smiles at her. "Whew. That was awesome, but I'm exhausted."

Monica lays on her left side and snuggles up to him. "Mmm... My love, we have to do that again really soon."

Dash nuzzles Monica and nods. "I'm all for it, but what about my necrosis?"

Monica smiles and kisses her hedgehog lover. "Let me handle that."

Dash thanks her and sits up. "Come on, we have to get you home."

Monica pouts at Dash. "But I want to stay with you tonight Dash. Please honey bear?"

Dash hangs his head. "Do you have to use the Puppy Face on me?"

Monica giggles. "It's the one true weakness women know men have, other than being kicked in their man region."

Dash nods. "Well, I guess you can stay, but what are we going to sleep on?"

Monica frowns. "Where do you usually sleep?"

Dash shrugs. "Since I'm not in the university I've just been sleeping wherever I can find a comfortable spot."

Monica nods. "What about your parents' house? Would Sonic let you stay there?"

Dash thinks. "Well, we can try. It's very late now, and I'm sure he's asleep already."

Monica stands up and gets dressed. "Is anything coming out?"

Dash frowns. "Why would my seed leaking out be a concern to you?"

Monica giggles. "I just wanted to brag about it to my family and everyone at the university."

Dash chuckles and shakes his head. "I don't see anything, but I wouldn't brag about it. Word gets around you know."

Monica nods. "Alright fine. Now, let's go to your house."

Dash stands up, puts his bandages back on, and picks Monica up bridal style. "Hang on."

Dash runs to Sonic's house, but unknown to him, Monica was plotting her own plan to get Dash's curse reversed. 'Don't worry Dash. Soon your problems will be all over.'

Dash smiles when he feels Monica nuzzle his chest and he runs just a little faster to the blue hero's house.

The plan comes together

Dash arrives at Sonic's house just after 1 AM and sees Rouge and Tails leaving the two story house. Sonic sees Dash and Monica and smiles. "Well hello there you two. What are you doing here so late at night?"

Dash chuckles. "If you don't mind Dad, we'd like to stay here tonight."

Sonic chuckles. "For how long?"

Dash looks at Monica, now sleeping in his arms. "At the moment, just for the night."

Sonic lets them in and locks the door. "Alright. You know you guys are welcome anytime, not just for one night."

Dash nods. "I do know that, and we both appreciate it."

Sonic lets them sleep in the spare bedroom and goes upstairs to his bedroom. Amy's waiting for him and purrs in a seductive way. "Sonikku... Come get some special loving."

Sonic smiles and gets in bed, pulling Amy to him and beginning another mating session. Two hours later the pink and blue hedgehogs are still going at it. Dash finally gets frustrated and goes to their room. "Seriously guys. You've been doing this for-HOLY SHIT!"

Dash's jade eyes widen when he sees Sonic really pounding Amy. Monica comes upstairs and finds Dash frozen stiff. "Dash? What are you-Oh wow..."

Sonic and Amy are too busy to notice Dash and Monica staring wide-eyed at them. Monica recovers first and gently pulls on Dash. "Come on honey. Let them have their privacy."

Dash finally comes back to reality. "Y-Yeah, that's a visual that's burned into my memory now."

Monica giggles. "If you want I can help you forget that visual for a while."

Dash chuckles. "That's an immediate yes."

They go back to their room and have their second mating session of the night. Lily was a heavy sleeper and luckily didn't hear the loud screaming and moaning.

-2 PM-

Lily has long since gone to school when Dash wakes up. His hips are sore, but he believes it was well worth it. Monica was sleeping on top of him with a content smile on her face. Last night's second mating session lasted three hours and Dash blew Monica's mind. He gave her ten orgasms and made her fall more in love with him.

Sonic and Amy are eating lunch when Dash walks in. "Mmm that smells good. What's for lunch?"

Amy smiles. "We're having some leftover pancakes from dinner last night. We decided to have breakfast for dinner."

Dash takes some pancakes and sits down. "Thanks Mom."

Monica comes in a few minutes later and sniffs the air. "Something smells awesome. May I have some?"

Sonic nods. "Certainly Monica."

The red female echidna sits down and eats some of the pancakes while Dash looks at his parents. "You guys kept me up last night, and I kind of walked in on you guys..."

Amy looks at Sonic, who looks at Dash. "Was it just you or did Monica see us too?"

Monica sighs. "We both saw you, but it wasn't intentional. I went up to get Dash when I saw you and Mrs. Hedgehog really going at it."

Sonic and Amy blush, and Amy replies. "If Dash inherited any of Sonikku's bedroom skills, you're really going to love mating together."

Monica and Dash blush heavily, and Monica answers Amy. "Um... Well, we kind of already are mating."

Sonic and Amy give wide-eyed looks to each other and Dash chuckles. "Monica's on birth control, so we won't have to worry about her getting pregnant."

Sonic nods. "Alright. As long as you guys are taking precautions."

After lunch Dash takes Monica to Angel Island while Sonic and Amy go to Tails' workshop.

-The Mystic Ruins-

Sonic and Amy arrive outside the heavy steel door and knock on it. A hatch opens and a pair of ocean blue eyes looks at them. "Sonic. Amy."

The hatch closes and the door opens. Sonic holds Amy's hand and the two hedgehogs walk inside. Both hedgehogs are wearing red shirts, blue jeans, and red shoes. A single light is on and it's pointing to a table in the middle of the room. A slender figure appears, wearing an aquamarine tank top and blue jeans.

This woman is Rouge, and Sonic chuckles. "You finally gave up the body suit?"

Rouge smiles and shows Sonic a 20 karat diamond ring. "I'm a married woman now Sonic. I feel I should at least look the part."

Tails joins them, wearing an orange shirt and matching shorts. "Alright guys. Let's go over the plan again. Sonic, you and Amy are going to ask Knuckles if you can go visit the Sky Sanctuary with him and Tikal. Meanwhile Rouge and I are going to crack the security system around the Master Emerald. Rouge, you get to fly off with it."

Rouge smiles. "Doing what I do best. Cool."

Sonic frowns. "What about Delilah, Nathaniel, and Zachary?"

Tails nods. "Way ahead of you. Shadow has volunteered to tie them up for a bit."

Amy frowns. "What does he mean by that?"

Sonic chuckles. "I guess we'll see."

Rouge speaks up. "The Master Emerald weighs 200 pounds. What if I can't lift it?"

Tails looks at Sonic. "If that happens, either Sonic or Shadow will have to use Chaos Control."

Sonic nods. "Alright."

Tails nods. "Okay. Does everyone understand the plan?"

Tails sees nodding and smiles. "If we pull this off, we can use the Master Emerald as leverage to get Knuckles and Tikal to reverse Dash's curse."

Rouge speaks up again. "Why did you hedgehogs dress the same way?"

Amy frowns. "Couples do that on occasion."

Rouge shrugs. "If you say so."

Tails looks everyone in the eyes. "Okay, everyone understands the plan. When do you want to do this?"

Amy thinks. "I say a week from now. I'm sure there's more work to be done."

Sonic nods. "We'll have to find out what kind of security system is on the Master Emerald first. After that, Tails can come up with a gizmo to crack the system."

Tails nods. "Rouge, you want to check out that system?"

Rouge nods. "Certainly. It's been 25 years since I did any reconnaissance missions."

Tails chuckles. "I'll join you on that mission since I need to know what I'll have to crack."

Sonic nods. "It's settled then. One week from now, we strike."

The other three members of the group nod and go their separate ways. Amy looks at Sonic. "Do you think this will work?"

Sonic smiles. "If beatings and reason don't work, then stealing Knuckles' precious Master Emerald will."

-The next day, 2 AM-

Tails and Rouge fly over to Angel Island and land behind the Master Emerald. Knuckles is just going to bed and has no idea the fox and bat are on the floating island.

Rouge turns on a flashlight she's wearing on her head. "Okay Tails. Let's get to work."

Tails turns on his own light and nods. "It looks like a really high-end security system."

Rouge nods. "I recognize this system. It's government issue only."

Tails frowns at her. "If that's the case, how did Knuckles get it?"

Rouge chuckles. "He had a short stint with myself and Shadow at GUN four years ago. Remember?"

The twin-tailed fox nods. "I do, but why did he wait this long to install it?"

The white bat smiles. "You should know Knuckles by now. Things don't occur to him very well."

Tails laughs a little and the two partners in crime resume their work. Tails realizes this system will be tough to crack, and then they found out the system has a second system built in. The backup system aims several infrared lasers at the Master Emerald and magnetically seals it to a neodymium plate.

Tails shakes his head. "If we can make this work, we'll go down in history."

Rouge nods. "How will you get through the backup system?"

Tails thinks for a second. "It took five seconds for the backup system to kick in. We'll have five seconds to lift the Master Emerald and get flying before an alarm goes off."

The white jewel thief chuckles. "I'm glad you're helping me. I don't know if I'll be able to lift that emerald by myself."

The orange fox nods. "No problem. Now, let's get out of here. There's no telling who might show up."

Rouge nods and they fly off, unseen by anyone on Angel Island.

-Noon-

Tails is working on devices to beat the security system. Rouge has gone to see Sonic and Amy. Shadow is also there. "Rouge has told me of the offensive to steal the Master Emerald."

Sonic nods. "Have you guys found anything on the security system?"

Rouge nods. "It's government issue only."

Amy frowns. "How did he get his hands on something like that?"

Shadow shakes his head. "I still maintain GUN shouldn't have hired him. Four years ago they asked him to be in the agency when Tails and the faker declined to join."

Sonic frowns. "I still maintain that you're the faker, but continue the story."

Shadow chuckles. "Let's just say Knuckles almost cost GUN several high-risk missions. When he left, they gave him the security system as a joke."

Sonic nods. "I wonder why it's taken him this long to install the system on the Master Emerald."

Rouge smiles. "Tails asked the same thing. I told him things didn't occur to him very easily, and that's what almost cost GUN those high-risk missions."

Amy giggles. "That first part is so true."

Shadow speaks again. "Rouge has also told me that my job will be to tie up Zachary, Nathaniel, and Delilah. Does that mean literally?"

Sonic nods. "If you have to. Stealth is of the utmost importance for this mission, so literally tying them up may be the best option."

Shadow smiles, which he didn't do very often. "Excellent. What are you and Amy going to do?"

Sonic winks at Amy, making her giggle and blush. "Ames and I are going to distract Knuckles and Tikal by taking them on a picnic in the Sky Sanctuary."

Rouge looks at her husband. "Tails and I are going to crack the security system and steal the Master Emerald. However, it's a tough system to crack."

She goes over the system with the three hedgehogs, and Shadow nods. "So if you and Tails can't lift the Master Emerald, either me or Sonic will have to use Chaos Control?"

Sonic looks at the black hedgehog. "You'd have a better chance to help them than I would. The Sky Sanctuary is a long way from the Master Emerald."

Shadow nods and looks at the royal blue hedgehog. "Alright. Now that you mention it, since I'd be closer it would be easier for me."

Amy nods. "So it's settled. Six days from now, we take the Master Emerald."

The four partners in crime go over some last details before Shadow and Rouge go back to their house. The pink hedgehog looks at Sonic. "This sounds harder than it first did."

Sonic smiles. "I know exactly what will help you feel a little better."

Amy giggles. "I don't know how mating will help me feel better about this, but if it works, then great."

Sonic carries Amy upstairs where they have another of their legendary mating sessions.

-One week later, 3 PM-

Tails is at Shadow and Rouge's house showing Rouge the device he'd come up with. "I've tested this device for three straight days."

Rouge chuckles. "I know, since you've tested it on my house."

Tails laughs. "Hey, it works doesn't it?"

Rouge nods. "Well, once Sonic and Amy get here we can come up with a cheesy but obligatory name for this mission."

As if on cue Sonic and Amy walk in. "Did we miss anything?"

Shadow shakes his head. "Not at all. We were just about to pick a corny name for this mission."

Tails chuckles. "Before we begin, I told Cream about Dash's situation and she wants in."

Everyone gives their approval, so Tails nods. "Okay, onto the unnecessary name for this operation."

Shadow lets everyone else go first. Tails thinks for a minute. "Hmm... How about Mission: Almost Impossible?"

Sonic gives him a playful frown. "Tails, come on. This is a barely serious decision we have to make here. FOCUS!"

Amy speaks up. "What about Operation: Getting The Green?"

Rouge shakes her head. "That's too close to what we're doing. Sonic? Any ideas?"

Sonic thinks. "Operation: Rock The Cradle?"

Shadow shakes his head and looks at his wife. "Rouge, how about you?"

Rouge taps a finger on her huge oak table. "Mission: Completely Possible?"

Shadow sighs. "You guys took the silliness way too seriously. Here's my suggestion. Operation: Leverage. It's to the point and still fairly serious."

Tails nods. "That works."

Rouge nods. "Tomorrow, Operation: Leverage strikes."

The group goes their separate ways and gets ready for the mission.

Operation: Leverage

It's May 24th, 10 AM. The day of Operation: Leverage had arrived. Dash had been informed of the plan but had been asked to keep himself and Monica out of it. Monica smiled and held Dash close. At this point, 30 percent of his rich lavender fur was gone, and 20 percent of his skin was rotten. Thick bandages were all that separated Monica from a horrible disease. The hedgehog-echidna couple had also recently adopted a stray cat, and Monica developed an obsession for the animal.

Tails had perfected the security-cracking device, and he was ready. Sonic and Amy were getting a picnic basket ready for their picnic with Knuckles and Tikal in the Sky Sanctuary. Rouge and Shadow were getting some heavy chains ready for tying up Knuckles and Tikal's other children.

Cream was with Sonic and Amy helping them get ready. "Are you sure this is a good idea? Knuckles and Tikal will be really mad at you for stealing the Master Emerald."

Sonic looks at the 37 year old rabbit. "He's left us no choice Cream. If we want Dash's curse reversed, this is our only option."

Cream nods and continues helping them get ready. Just like her mother Vanilla, Cream had aged well. She carried her mother's figure and kind nature, always helping when she could. Cream had also made the food for the picnic they were distracting Knuckles and Tikal with. Tails had estimated that it would take about three hours to crack the security system, so the picnic shouldn't be rushed. Once all the preparations were made the group met up at the shoreline.

Sonic and Shadow look at each other and nod. "Chaos Control!"

The three couples vanish in a flash of bluish-green light.

-Angel Island, 10:30 AM-

The six thieves appear on the floating island and Tails looks at Rouge. "Ready?"

Rouge looks at the group. "Get to work guys. We'll meet at my house in four hours."

Tails and Rouge turn on their cloaking devices, vanishing from sight. Shadow nods. "Alright, time to find Zachary, Delilah, and Nathaniel."

He goes off to complete his task while Sonic, Amy, and Cream set off to find Knuckles and Tikal. They find the echidna couple near the teleporter that takes them to the Sky Sanctuary. Knuckles sees them and gives them a confused look. "Going on a picnic?"

Sonic chuckles. "Me, Ames, and Cream were hoping you two would join us. Also, Cream has never been to the Sky Sanctuary and she asked us if she could come."

Tikal smiles. "That's funny. I've never been to the Sky Sanctuary either."

Knuckles smiles. "Come on, let's have that picnic."

The teleporter is activated, and one at a time the group goes to the Sky Sanctuary.

-With Shadow-

We find the black hedgehog sneaking around the lush foliage looking for Knuckles and Tikal's children. Monica was busy with Dash, so it was just Delilah, Zachary, and Nathaniel. Shadow finds Zachary and Nathaniel wrestling with each other. Delilah was filming it for their college filming class. Shadow watches them carefully, waiting for his chance to strike. He doesn't have to wait long, because the big male echidnas call for a break. Shadow decides to play it cool and walks over to them.

Delilah sees him and frowns. "What are you doing here Shadow?"

Shadow shrugs. "I was looking for Knuckles but I stumbled on your wrestling match."

Zachary looks him over. "You look like you know a move or two. Want to help us out?"

Shadow nods. "Sure. I have a move you two might like."

Shadow has Delilah film his "wrestling move" and he tries not to laugh. 'I can't believe they're falling for this!'

Shadow gets Zachary and Nathaniel close together. "This move is called the Double Knockout. It's a surprise move, and it might be considered dirty. Anyway, it goes like this."

Shadow slams their heads together almost as hard as he can. The two male echidnas drop like logs, unconscious. Delilah is so shocked that Shadow has no problem making her faint. Once she does Shadow picks up the camera and chuckles. "We'll be right back after these messages."

Shadow fries the camera with a burst of Chaos energy, retrieves the heavy chains, and chains the echidnas to trees far away from each other. After he's done Shadow joins Rouge and Tails in trying to crack the government issue security system. "The three echidnas have been taken care of."

Rouge nods. "Great job hon. Help us with this system."

Shadow is given a cloaking device, and he helps the white bat and orange fox.

-Meanwhile, with Sonic, Amy, and Cream-

The hedgehog couple and rabbit are at the main entrance to the Sky Sanctuary with Knuckles and Tikal. Cream speaks the same thing Tikal is thinking. "It's beautiful..."

Sonic and Amy follow Knuckles and Tikal as they walk through the huge area. For Sonic it was a trip 27 years back in time. "All those years ago, when Robotnik was stealing the Master Emerald... I finally get to see the beauty of this place."

Knuckles nods. "To think it was so long ago... 27 years I believe."

Sonic nods. "Yes, that's right. I'm glad I can finally get a good look at this place."

Amy was awestruck at the same beauty Sonic was admiring. Like Tikal and Cream, she'd never been to this part of Angel Island either. Sonic held her hand as the group walked along, trying to find a good spot to have a picnic. It takes about 20 minutes, but eventually they find a spot near the middle of the Sky Sanctuary.

Amy lays out the blanket and Sonic puts down the basket. "I hope everyone's hungry. Ames and Cream packed enough for everyone."

The five friends sit down on the blanket and start eating. Amy and Cream had made ham and cheese subs with various soda to drink. Sonic looks at the three females. "How do you girls like the Sky Sanctuary?"

Tikal smiles. "It's gorgeous. I wonder why Knuckles hasn't taken me here before."

Cream nods. "Same with Miles."

Amy looks at Sonic. "Same with you Sonic. Why haven't you taken me here before?"

Sonic blushes. "W-Well, I guess I kind of forgot to ask you since we were raising a family when I wanted to take you."

Knuckles looks at Tikal. "I would have taken you here if you'd asked me to."

Tikal rolls her eyes and Cream speaks up. "I'll ask Miles to take me here more often. This is a beautiful place."

As they eat, Sonic, Amy, and Cream keep Knuckles and Tikal distracted. It's not easy to do for three hours, but somehow the pink and blue hedgehogs make it work. Cream is nervous the whole time but hides it well. Knuckles and Tikal never suspected anything was happening to the Master

Emerald. If something was happening, the security system would go off... Right?

-With Shadow, Tails, and Rouge-

It's been three hours since Operation: Leverage began. Tails, Rouge, and Shadow are just about to crack the system. Tails looks at Shadow. "When we say go, we've got five seconds to lift the Master Emerald away from the neodymium magnet. If me and Rouge fail to lift it, then you'll have to use Chaos Control."

Shadow nods. "Ready when you are."

Tails and Rouge get a running start from 20 feet away and everyone deactivates their cloaking devices. When they jump they shout the command. "NOW!"

Shadow cracks the system and Tails quickly wraps four ropes around the giant gem. Rouge grabs the ropes and begins lifting the Master Emerald right when Shadow's voice is heard. "Time's up!"

The magnet turns on and plants the Master Emerald back in its shrine. One of the infrared lasers hits Tails and the alarm goes off. Rouge freaks. "Shit! Tails, Shadow! Hurry!"

Tails uses another rope and helps Rouge try to lift the Master Emerald, but the magnet is too strong. Sonic, Knuckles, Amy, Tikal, and Cream come back from their picnic and Knuckles freaks. "The Master Emerald!"

Sonic punches Knuckles and Amy bashes Tikal with her red-and-yellow Piko Piko Hammer. Shadow runs over to the Master Emerald and holds onto it. "Chaos Control!"

Rouge, Tails, Shadow, and the Master Emerald vanish in a flash of green light. Sonic grabs Amy and Cream as Angel Island starts falling. "Chaos Control!"

Sonic, Amy, and Cream vanish in a flash of blue light. Angel Island crashes into the Pacific Ocean with a tremendous splash, waking Knuckles and Tikal.

Tikal sits up and looks at Knuckles, rubbing her head. "What happened?"

Knuckles sighs and shakes his head. "Our "friends" stole the Master Emerald."

Tikal hangs her head and sighs. "Well, what do we do?"

Knuckles growls. "We find the Master Emerald and get it back. After that, we kill them."

Tikal frowns. "Wait. Where are the children?"

Knuckles hears Delilah's voice. "Help us!"

Looking at Tikal, Knuckles runs into the lush foliage and finds Delilah, Zachary, and Nathaniel struggling to get free from their chains. Knuckles sighs. "Who did this?"

Delilah answers. "Shadow did."

Tikal finds a note that Sonic had written and Shadow had left there. "Honey, I found a note."

Knuckles reads it while Tikal works on getting the kids free. It says: 'We stole the Master Emerald to make you reverse Dash's curse. All he did was follow his heart, and you punished him for it. You left us no choice Knuckles. Now, the only way to get the Master Emerald back is to reverse Dash's curse. Until then, kiss your Master Emerald goodbye. Sincerely, Sonic and the gang.'

Tikal finishes helping the chained children and looks at her husband. "What does it say?"

Knuckles sighs. "Sonic and the rest of the team stole the Master Emerald so we'd reverse Dash's curse."

Tikal nods. "This island needs that Emerald. So, it looks like we have only one option."

Knuckles nods and looks at his family. "Yeah... There's no telling what could happen without the Master Emerald here."

The five echidnas make a plan to get the Master Emerald back.

-One week later-

Knuckles calls Sonic. "Sonic, it's Knuckles."

The speedster nods on his end of the call. "What is it?"

Knuckles sighs. "Tikal is working on the antidote for Dash's curse. It should be ready in a few days."

Sonic nods. "That's good. Let me know when it's ready so everyone can watch the curse get reversed."

Knuckles nods. "Alright. Talk to you soon."

The call ends and Knuckles walks over to Tikal. "How's it coming along?"

Tikal stretches. "The antidote has to sit undisturbed for three days. Put it somewhere that it won't be moved at all."

Knuckles nods and puts the antidote where the Master Emerald used to be. Tikal goes right to bed and Knuckles joins her. "Sonic and the others want to watch the curse get reversed."

Tikal nods. "That's fine. Dash will be happy that the curse has been reversed as well."

Knuckles smiles. "I'm sure he will."

The two echidnas fall asleep, letting the antidote settle.

Monica's secret comes out

June 3rd comes around. It's 4 PM and there's a small crowd gathered on Angel Island. Sonic, Amy, Tails, Cream, and Rouge are watching the echidna family. Dash isn't wearing his bandages anymore. Tikal had removed them and cleaned the rotten fur and skin as best she could. Monica stood on Sonic's left, nervously watching and waiting. 30 percent of Dash's flesh had rotted from the necrosis curse, but today this was going to be cured. Tikal comes out of her hut wearing a ceremonial outfit. All eyes turned to the lavender hedgehog and the pinkish echidna.

Tikal looks at Dash. "Are you ready Dash?"

Dash gets on his knees and puts his head down. Tikal nods and puts her hands on his head. "Drink the blue liquid and close your eyes."

Dash does so and Tikal recites her chant. "The curse is here by lifted. Your speed, strength, and everything else is restored. Rise and return to a normal life Dash."

Dash opens his eyes and stands up. He looks at his arms and all over his body. The necrosis was going away, and he looks at Monica. "What do you think?"

Monica runs over and gives him a detailed looking-over. "Honey, you're returning to normal. Well, your flesh is anyway. Your fur should grow back in time."

Sonic and Amy walk over to their son and nod their approval. Tails, Cream, and Rouge look him over as well and smile. Knuckles looks at everyone. "Are you all satisfied?"

Sonic sees nodding from everyone else and turns to Knuckles and his family. "Yes. Sorry we had to steal the Master Emerald, but we had no other choice."

Knuckles nods. "I understand, and I would have done the same thing. Sorry I allowed this to get so out of hand. I should have listened to you."

Sonic takes out a walkie-talkie. "Shadow, bring the Master Emerald to Angel Island."

In less than ten seconds Shadow appeared with the Master Emerald. Knuckles smiles and puts it back in the shrine. A rumbling was felt, and Angel Island began floating once again.

Knuckles rejoins everyone and sighs with relief. "Things should be back to normal before long."

Sonic holds Amy's hand and looks at the echidna. "I'm glad you came to your senses Knuckles."

Shadow chuckles. "Took you long enough didn't it Knucklehead?"

Knuckles sighs. "I'm just glad to have the Master Emerald back, but yes, it did take a long time."

Amy frowns. "It's been ten days. That's not that long."

Knuckles looks at Dash and Monica. "Come here you two."

Dash and Monica walk over and Knuckles looks right into their eyes. "I'm sorry for putting you two through all this. I was wrong to try and keep you apart, and I hope you can forgive me."

Monica hugs her father. "Of course Daddy."

Dash frowns. "It'll take a little longer for me to forgive you Knuckles."

Knuckles looks at the bluish-purple hedgehog. "I understand Dash. I don't blame you at all."

Sonic and Shadow teleport the group back to Station Square and take a few minutes to tell everyone that everything has been taken care of regarding Angel Island floating again. Meanwhile Dash and Monica to go Sonic's

house and get Dash's clothes. Once Dash has showered and dressed again they run to the university, where Dash is registered for classes starting in September.

Dash looks at Monica. "Now what?"

Monica giggles. "Have you decided what you're going to do for sports next year?"

Dash frowns. "No, I haven't. However, I know who might be able to help."

Thanking the dean of the university, Dash picks Monica up and bolts to Lucas and Matthew Prower's apartment.

-The Prower Place-

Dash skids to a stop outside the three-story building and screams. "YES! Aw it feels SO good to be fast again!"

Monica giggles and gets out of Dash's arms. "I'm glad you're healed Dash."

The bluish-purple hedgehog kisses the crimson female echidna. "Believe me, I am too."

Dash knocks on the door and waits a few seconds. Jenna opens the door and gasps. "Dash? Is that you?"

Dash smiles. "Nice to see you again Jenna."

The female fox-rabbit glomps Dash and hugs him tight. "Dash you're okay!"

Lucas and Matthew come down from their floors and smile. Dash sees them and shakes their hands. "Luke, Matt. Hey again."

Lucas and Matthew smile. "Nice to see you're all better Dash. Come on in."

Jenna stops hugging her cousin and follows him inside. Monica smiles at the Prower triplets as she follows her boyfriend in. Dash sits on the couch

and the triplets take the chairs. Monica sits on Dash's lap and snuggles him.

Jenna smiles at this and speaks first. "So Dash, what brings you here?"

Dash looks at Lucas and Matthew. "Well, I was hoping to talk to you two about the football team."

Matthew and Lucas look at each other and smile. Matthew looks at Dash. "We'd have to give Coach a call and you'd have to try out for the team."

Monica turns green and runs to the nearest trash can. Dash frowns and scratches his head. "That's not good."

Lucas nods. "I'll give Coach a call and see if he'll meet us at the school for your tryout."

Dash holds Monica's hair while Lucas calls the football coach. "Coach Sellers, it's Lucas Prower... I might have someone you can use on the team... His name is Dash Hedgehog... Okay, I'll tell him."

The call ends and Lucas looks at his cousin. "Coach Sellers is at the university Dash. He's waiting for us."

Dash helps Monica back to the couch and nods. "Alright. Let's do this."

Monica lays down. "Do well honey."

Dash rubs her back and kisses her. "Thank you babe. I'll be back soon."

Dash, Lucas, and Matthew leave. Jenna looks at Monica. "I think I know what's wrong with you."

Monica frowns. "What do you mean?"

Jenna gets up and gives Monica a pregnancy test. "You've bragged to me about you and Dash mating. I have a feeling this will help us figure out why you just vomited."

Monica shakes her head. "You can't be serious."

Jenna shows Monica her baby bump. "Everyone knows I'm carrying Samuel's baby, and one of the symptoms was vomiting at random times. Go take the test and come back."

Monica takes the test and comes back ten minutes later with tears in her amethyst eyes. "W-Well, here y-you go."

Jenna looks at the test. "Oh boy..."

-With Dash, Lucas, and Matthew-

The three cousins arrive at the football field behind the massive university. A man walks over to them. "Hey there guys."

Lucas looks at Dash. "Dash, this is Coach Sellers."

Dash shakes the coach's hand. "Nice to meet you."

Coach Sellers nods. "Same."

Matthew speaks up now. "He expressed interest last year about maybe joining the team, but he's not sure what position he should play."

Coach Sellers nods. "Well, you two are set at wide receiver, but before I make any conclusions I want to see what he can do."

Dash nods. "What's first?"

Coach Sellers takes out a stopwatch. "First is going to be the 40 yard dash. Run it as fast as you can."

Dash goes to the goal line while Coach Sellers goes to the 40 yard line. Lucas looks at his brother. "20 bucks says Dash does this in less than half a second."

Matthew chuckles. "I'll take that bet, but I'm saying he does it in less than a quarter of a second."

Lucas smiles. "You have a bet."

The brothers watch as their hedgehog cousin gets ready to run. Coach Sellers nods. "Ready... Go!"

Dash rockets to the 40 yard line in a flash. Coach Sellers blinks. "What just happened?"

Dash chuckles. "I ran 40 yards."

Coach Sellers sighs and looks at Lucas. "I need the electronic timer Luke."

Lucas gets the electronic timer and sets it up. Dash goes back to the goal line and runs the 40 yard dash again. Coach Sellers' eyes widen when he sees the time. "Three tenths of a second?"

Lucas looks at Matthew. "You owe me 20 bucks."

Matthew laughs. "I'll give it to you when we get home."

Coach Sellers looks at Dash. "Where did you learn to run so fast?"

Dash chuckles. "I inherited that speed from my father."

The coach frowns. "Who's your father?"

Dash smiles. "His name is Sonic."

Coach Sellers looks at him. "The world famous hero?"

Dash nods and Coach Sellers smiles. "That makes a lot more sense then. Well, based on your speed I could use you as a backup receiver if Luke or Matt get injured. You could also be a running back or even a fullback for short plays. If not that, then linebacker or safety or even cornerback on defense. If you think special teams is more your style then you can be the kick and punt returner. Either way, you're on the team."

Dash smiles. "Thanks Coach. I'll give it some thought and let you know what I decide."

Coach Sellers nods. "I appreciate that Dash. Thanks for trying out."

Dash goes back to the Prower Place with his cousins. As they walk they talk about what each position does in a football game.

-The Prower Place-

Jenna looks up when Dash, Lucas, and Matthew come in. Monica is sleeping and is wrapped in a blanket. Dash looks at Monica and then Jenna. "Is she okay?"

Jenna frowns. "She's got a stomach bug and she also has a fever."

Dash frowns and sits beside his girlfriend. "I hope she gets better."

Jenna nods, takes her brothers to another room, and sighs. "Monica is pregnant, but she asked me to keep it a secret from Dash. She lied to him when they had their first time and she's certain Dash will leave her when he finds out."

Matthew sighs. "What do you want us to do?"

Jenna frowns. "Pretend I never told you she was pregnant."

Lucas sighs. "It'll break his heart to find out."

Jenna nods. "Monica is going to tell him, but she isn't looking forward to it."

The three fox-rabbits rejoin the lavender hedgehog and crimson echidna. Dash is brushing Monica's hair back and nuzzling her.

Jenna sighs. "Dash, why don't you take her to Sonic's house. Amy might have some medicine for Monica's fever."

Dash gently picks Monica up. "Good idea. Thanks Jenna."

Dash runs to his father's house and after he leaves Jenna frowns at her brothers. "Better get ready for some fighting when Monica tells Dash she lied."

Lucas and Matthew nod and make sure they can handle Zachary and Nathaniel.

-Two days later-

Amy's medicine hadn't worked, and the pressure to hide her pregnancy finally got to Monica. It's 3:24 PM and everyone is gathered on Angel Island. All eyes are on the female echidna, now nearly three weeks pregnant.

Monica spoke in a quiet voice, barely loud enough to hear. "Thank you for coming everyone. I'm sure you're all wondering why I've asked to you come, so I'll get right to it. Dash, come here please."

Dash goes over to his lover with a confused look on his face. "Is everything okay Monica?"

Monica sighs. "No, everything isn't okay. I need to come clean about this."

Dash nods and Monica looks at him, tears in her eyes. "Remember when we had our first time and I said I was on birth control?"

Dash frowns. "Yes."

Monica sniffles. "I... I lied."

Dash blinks. "W-What?"

Monica hangs her head in shame. "I was going t-to use our b-baby to get y-your curse reversed... B-But then the Sonic team got that done by stealing the Master Emerald... (sniffle) So now I'm three weeks pregnant."

Dash takes a few steps back, shaking his head. "You're pregnant? You lied to me?"

Monica falls to her knees and cries. "I'm so sorry Dash. (sniffle) I-I should have told you from the beginning. WAHAHAHAHAHA!"

Dash feels a few tears in his eyes and feels his heart sink. "What did I do to make you do this to me?"

Monica gives no answer and keeps crying as loud as she can. Dash shakes his head and sniffles. "I can't be here right now."

He runs off before anyone can stop him. The disappointment shows on everyone's face and the only one to help comfort Monica was Jenna Prower. Monica felt all alone and never felt Jenna's embrace. "W-Where's Dash? (sniffle) I need him."

Jenna sighs. "He's gone, just like we figured he would be."

The rest of the people on Angel Island leave except for Knuckles, Tikal, Zachary, Nathaniel, and Delilah. Lucas and Matthew didn't have to fight off the big male echidnas, but several glares were exchanged. No one says a word as Monica continues to cry, her heart breaking more with each passing minute.

-With Sonic, Amy, and Lily-

The three hedgehogs get back to their house and find a note on the door. Sonic takes it and reads it. "I'm not sure where I'm going, but anywhere is better than being with that liar Monica. Tell that bitch that if I come back, I never want to see her again. Dash."

Lily gasps and looks at her parents. "We have to find him."

Amy nods. "I agree. It's not fair to Monica."

Sonic frowns. "She lied to him and broke his heart. She kind of deserves it, and since she hurt him, Monica is the last thing on Dash's mind. However, I agree with you. I hope he doesn't get into trouble before we find him."

Amy and Lily stay at the house while Sonic goes to see Tails.

Hunting for a hedgehog, part 1

A blue streak arrives at Tails' workshop and skids to a stop right outside the heavy steel door. Sonic bangs on it and waits a few seconds. The door opens and Cream smiles at Sonic. "Hello Sonic. How are you?"

Sonic sighs. "I wish I could say I was alright Cream. Dash has run off and no one knows where he went."

Cream nods. "Well, you can't say you're surprised. Monica lied to him about a very important thing."

Sonic nods. "No, I'm not surprised that Dash ran away, but I am surprised Monica lied to him. She seemed so responsible."

Cream nods. "We were all surprised Monica lied, Sonic. Anyway, I'm sure you want to see Miles to help you find your wayward son. Am I right?"

Sonic chuckles and nods. "His help would definitely be appreciated."

Cream smiles and moves aside so Sonic can come in. He does and Cream pokes her head into Tails' work area. "Miles honey? Sonic is here to see you."

Tails' voice is heard from across the work area. "Be there in a minute!"

Sonic sits on the couch and waits for his fox brother. Cream goes to the kitchen. "Would you like anything to drink Sonic?"

The speedster smiles at the rabbit. "Water is fine, thank you."

Cream gets two glasses of water and gives him one. "Here you go."

Cream and Sonic talk a little as they wait for Tails. He eventually shows, covered in grease, as befits his occupation as weapon designer for the Station Square Defense Department. "Well, it's nice to see you again so

soon Sonic. Let me guess. You're here to get a device that will track down Dash, right?"

Sonic smiles. "You know me really well Tails."

Tails chuckles. "I've known you for 33 years Sonic. I should know you really well."

Sonic nods. "How long do you think the device will take to make?"

The twin-tailed fox sighs. "It'll take a while, at least a month."

Sonic frowns. "That long?"

Tails looks at him. "It's not easy building one of those things Sonic. Yours took two months."

Cream speaks up. "Why not just change the Sonic Tracker to track Dash? That'll save you a lot of time."

Tails looks at his wife. "That's an awesome idea babe."

Cream blushes. "Thank you Miles..."

Tails kisses her and looks at Sonic. "Do you have the Sonic Tracker with you?"

Sonic frowns. "Sadly, I don't. That thing's up in the attic because it hasn't been used in over 20 years."

Tails nods. "I recall that I modified it so it could also track Amy and Dash as well."

Sonic looks at him. "That's true. After I saved Amy and Dash from Robot Alnilam I didn't feel there was any need to use it again. So, Ames and I put it in the attic."

Tails gets an idea. "Bring it by tomorrow with a sample of Dash's DNA. I'll get to work on it then."

The 42 year old hedgehog nods. "Thanks a lot Tails. I owe you big time."

Sonic leaves, never noticing the smirk that's on the 38 year old fox's face. However, Cream sees it and frowns. "What are you planning Miles?"

Tails chuckles. "Sonic just happens to be the owner of the resort spa downtown."

Cream nods. "Yes, but what does that have to do with Dash's tracking device?"

Tails looks at Cream. "That's how he can repay me for all the times I've helped him. He lets us use the spa for a weekend of our choosing, and it's free. Just the two of us."

Cream nuzzles Tails on his chest, one of the few places he didn't have grease. "You think he'll do it?"

Tails shrugs. "Only one way to find out."

Cream giggles. "I can't wait to see his face."

Tails kisses Cream and goes back to the work area to finish the latest defense weapon he'd been asked to make.

-With Sonic-

Sonic bolts back to his house and finds Amy and Lily talking to Monica in the kitchen. Amy looks at him and smiles. "Hi Sonikku. How are Tails and Cream?"

Sonic shrugs. "The usual. Tails is working on another defense weapon."

Lily hugs him. "Hi Daddy. Please tell me you've found Dash."

The blue hero sighs and hugs his 16 year old daughter. "I wish I could, but not yet. However, Tails is going to work on the old Sonic Tracker and make it so it could track Dash."

Amy frowns. "That old thing? We haven't used it for a very long time."

Sonic breaks his hug with Lily and nods. "Tails built it didn't he?"

Amy nods and Sonic continues. "Then it only makes sense that he can make it to track Dash."

Amy nods again. "Well, it's up in the attic when you're ready to get it."

Sonic nods and looks at Monica. "And why are you here?"

Monica, now 21, looks at the blue blur with tears in her amethyst eyes. "I'm here to apologize for disappointing you and letting a lie get so out of hand."

Sonic frowns. "An apology isn't enough Monica. Not only did you lie to me and Amy, but you also broke Dash's heart. You'll need to do more to make up for this."

Monica hangs her head. "What am I going to have to do to make this up to you and Mrs. Hedgehog?"

Amy looks at Sonic. "To be honest honey, I'd let them settle this themselves."

Sonic nods and winks at the sakura hedgehog. "I agree honey."

Amy blushes and Sonic looks at Monica again. "That's what you're going to do. You and Dash are going to settle this yourselves. I'll go along with you once the tracking device is finished, but once we do it's all up to you."

Monica snuffles. "Anything else?"

Sonic nods. "If I think you're sincere enough, THEN I'll accept the apology you gave me."

The echidna nods and looks at Amy. "Anything you'd like to add?"

Amy shakes her head. "The only thing I can add is not to put stress on the growing baby. Getting angry is the worst thing you can do other than

drinking and doing drugs."

Monica frowns. "Why would I do any of that?"

Amy shrugs. "I'm not saying you would. I'm just saying don't do it."

Sonic finally sits down and Lily looks at Monica. "You really care about Dash don't you?"

Monica nods as more tears start falling down her face. "It was hard enough telling him I lied to him Lily, but I told him because I cared. He had to know."

Sonic looks at Amy. "Has Knuckles said anything about this?"

Amy sighs. "He called earlier. He's upset with Dash for getting Monica pregnant, but he's even more upset with Monica for lying about it."

Monica nods and wipes her eyes. "He kicked me off Angel Island and my family has disowned me. I have nowhere to live and I don't know what to do."

Lily looks at Sonic. "Please let her stay here Dad. Please?"

Sonic looks at Amy. "What do you think?"

Amy nods. "If she stays here then she'll need to help out around the house."

The cobalt hero nods to his rose-pink wife's suggestion and looks at Monica. "Has Dash broken up with you, or has he just run off?"

Monica shakes her head. "I don't know. He didn't say he was breaking up with me, so I guess we're still together."

Amy nods. "Just like Sonic did over 20 years ago. He ran off when he found out I was pregnant with Dash."

Sonic nods. "Yeah and you were almost turned into road kill."

Amy giggles. "I know, and I make sure you know how happy I am that you came back."

Sonic winks, making Amy blush. Monica looks at the hedgehog couple after Lily goes to the movies with some friends. "How are you two so happy? Your relationship seems perfect."

Sonic shrugs. "It's nice and sappy but it wasn't like that at the beginning. Before me and Amy even started dating I had to fight for her. My ex girlfriend Sally Acorn decided to team up with Doctor Ivo Robotnik and beat Amy up to get me to surrender. Sally wanted to be with me again, and Robotnik just wanted me to surrender. Anyway, Sally wound up in jail, and I wound up killing Robotnik that same night."

Monica nods. "Sally Acorn... Samuel's mother?"

Amy nods. "Sadly Sally died of an STD she got in prison. Samuel was later adopted by Shadow and Rouge, and he's now expecting a family of his own."

Monica nods. "Jenna told me she was carrying his child. I can't imagine Mr. Prower being happy about it."

Sonic chuckles. "He's happy about becoming a grandfather, but he wishes Jenna had waited a little longer."

Amy nods. "We're happy about becoming grandparents too, but the way you broke the news could have been better."

She stands up and kisses Sonic. "I'm going to go ahead and get Monica started on helping us around the house. Okay Sonikku?"

Sonic kisses Amy back and stands up. "Alright Ames."

Amy leads Monica to start her work around the house and Sonic goes to find the Sonic Tracker.

-The next day, 11 AM-

Sonic is seen bolting to Tails' workshop with the Sonic Tracker. He arrives at the door and bangs on it. The door opens and Tails smiles. "Welcome again Sonic. You have the Sonic Tracker I see. Do you have a sample of Dash's DNA?"

Sonic shows him a hair from one of Dash's quills. "Here's some. You might want to make sure it's not infected with necrosis though."

Tails nods. "Thanks for the reminder. Come with me."

The blue hero follows the orange fox into his workshop and watches Tails put the DNA sample and the Sonic Tracker on his workbench. Tails turns to Sonic and crosses his arms. "Remember when you said you owed me big time yesterday?"

Sonic nods. "Of course."

Tails nods. "I know a way you can pay me back for all the times I've helped you."

Sonic frowns. "What do you have in mind?"

Tails smiles. "You shut down the resort spa for me and Cream on a weekend of our choosing. It's a free weekend, and it's just me and her there."

Sonic thinks for a minute. "Hmm... I might be able to do that. It depends on business though."

Tails looks at him. "Mine and Cream's 22nd wedding anniversary is coming up soon. Perhaps you could do it then."

Sonic smiles. "Alright, it's a deal. Just remind me about it since I might forget before then."

Tails laughs. "I'll make sure to do that Sonic."

Sonic nods. "How long will it take to convert the Sonic Tracker into the Dash Tracker?"

Tails shrugs. "It could take a while, maybe three weeks or so."

Sonic sighs. "Alright. Thanks Tails."

The orange fox gets to work on the Sonic Tracker. "Don't worry Sonic, we'll find him."

Sonic nods. "I know we will. I just hope he's okay."

Sonic bolts off to his house and Tails puts his concentration on the Sonic Tracker.

-Sonic and Amy's house-

Amy and Monica are doing laundry when Sonic arrives. "Ames! I'm back!"

Amy smiles. "In the laundry room Sonikku!"

Sonic goes in and kisses his wife. "Hey sexy."

Amy giggles. "Hey baby."

Sonic blushes a little. "Well, Tails says it'll be three weeks before the Sonic Tracker will be turned into the Dash Tracker."

Amy nods and looks at Monica. "Can you hold on for three more weeks?"

Monica sighs and nods. "I think so, but I'm sure I'll worry about if he's okay."

Sonic nods. "He'll be fine. I know he will."

The hedgehogs and echidna do the laundry and go about their normal lives as they wait for Tails to get done with the Dash Tracker.

Hunting for a hedgehog, part 2

Three weeks pass by quickly. Sonic continues worrying about Dash. No contact had been made, and Dash certainly hadn't come back. A few people had told Sonic they thought they'd seen Dash in the city, but weren't sure where he'd gone. Amy and Lily had posted flyers around town and even Knuckles helped out by gliding around in a 30 mile radius. No trace of Dash had ever been found.

It's now June 27th. Summer had just started and the citizens of Station Square were feeling it. Temperatures reached 95 degrees with ease, and the heat index hit 110 degrees just as easily. For Monica this was just adding insult to injury. Nearing two months pregnant the 21 year old female echidna cried each day that Dash didn't come back. Amy and Lily tried to keep her at least a little cheery, but nothing worked.

To make matters worse, she started showing signs of paranoia and hysteria. Amy had seen this and confronted Sonic about it. "Sonic she's getting worse by the day."

Sonic frowns. "What do you want me to do Amy? I can't go get Dash without knowing where he is."

Amy sighs. "I know, but Monica's distress is starting to wear on me and Lily. Also, I'm sure it's hurting the baby. Is the Dash Tracker finished yet?"

Sonic shakes his head. "I haven't heard anything out of Tails yet. It's been three weeks so it should be done soon."

Just then Sonic's phone rings. Looking at Amy, Sonic answers it. "Hello?"

Tails' voice is heard on the other end of the call. "Hey Sonic. I'm calling to update you on the Dash Tracker."

Sonic nods. "About time."

Tails rolls his eyes. "Anyway, I have to make a few more adjustments, but it should be ready tomorrow."

Sonic nods again. "Any idea what time?"

Tails nods on his end of the call. "Yes. Come by around 3 PM."

Sonic smiles. "If I was there I'd hug you right now."

Tails laughs. "Save it for when you get the Dash Tracker."

The call ends and Sonic looks at Amy. "Good news. Tails says the Dash Tracker will be done by 3 PM tomorrow."

Amy hugs Sonic and nuzzles his chest. "Finally. I'm so happy we'll be able to locate our son."

Sonic rubs Amy's back and nuzzles her, making her purr. "I'm really happy too. Now, which one of us gets to tell Monica and Lily?"

Amy's sparkling jade green eyes look into Sonic's shining emerald green eyes. "I'll tell Monica and you can tell Lily. After that, I believe mating is in order."

Sonic chuckles. "How are we going to mate with Lily and Monica in the house?"

Amy giggles. "Well, we do need groceries."

Sonic smiles. "I like that plan babe."

Amy winks and gives Sonic a naughty spank. "Good, now get to it mister."

Sonic nods and goes to Lily's room. This is when Monica comes down from Dash's room. "I heard you and Mr. Hedgehog talking."

Amy nods. "Yes. Sonic is going to get the Dash Tracker tomorrow afternoon."

Monica's eyes widen. "Y-You mean we can start looking for Dash tomorrow?"

Amy nods and Monica hugs her tightly. "That's the best thing I've heard in almost two months."

She starts crying again, but this time her tears are tears of joy. Lily does the same thing when Sonic tells her the news, and after a few minutes Sonic brings Lily downstairs. "Alright, now that you know the news, time for you to do some shopping."

Amy nods. "The grocery list is on the table in the kitchen. Be careful please."

Lily and Monica leave the house and immediately after they do Amy pounces on Sonic. "Get to it slave."

Sonic winks. "Yes Mistress."

Sonic and Amy don't even bother to leave the living room as they let their feelings take over.

-The next day, 3 PM-

Sonic has just gone inside Tails' workshop to get the Dash Tracker. He finds the orange fox making the last adjustments to the device. "Knock knock."

Tails looks behind him. "Oh, hey Sonic. Just give me a few more seconds... Done."

Tails gives Sonic the completed Dash Tracker. Sonic hugs Tails, who was surprisingly clean considering what he did for a living. "Thank you so much Tails."

Tails hugs the speedster back. "You're welcome Sonic. I'll have Cream tell you when to hold up your end of the deal."

The orange fox breaks the hug and sees scratches all over Sonic's neck. "Dude, what happened to your neck?"

Sonic chuckles. "Ames was pretty rough last night."

Tails smiles. "I see. How's Monica doing?"

Sonic nods. "She's just itching to find Dash. I doubt the feelings are mutual, but it's been almost a month. I'm hoping Dash has at least thought about forgiving Monica."

Tails shrugs. "Well, better go find him. That's the best way to find out if he has."

Sonic thanks Tails again and runs back to his house to get Monica ready to find Dash.

-9 AM, June 29th-

Sonic and Monica are getting ready for finding Dash. Amy has made sure they've got enough food to last a few days, just in case it took that long. After they set out Sonic turns on the Dash Tracker.

It points east, and Sonic looks at Monica. "You hold the Dash Tracker and I'll run."

Monica gets on Sonic's back, being careful about his sharp quills. Sonic holds the food and runs full speed once Monica's ready. Monica holds on as best she can as they travel east. Over the next several hours Sonic and Monica cover half of the United States. The Dash Tracker started beeping loudly and quickly.

Sonic stops and puts Monica down. "Whew. I haven't run like that in decades. Where are we?"

Monica looks for a sign and finds one. "We're in Nebraska. Why would Dash be here?"

Sonic chuckles. "I guess he's a Corn Huskers fan."

Monica giggles. "Well, this particular town looks kind of deserted. Perhaps Dash thought he wouldn't be found here."

Sonic shrugs. "Maybe, but he forgot about Tails."

Monica nods. "Well, the Dash Tracker is going crazy. He must be close."

Sonic nods and looks around. "Hey, look to your left."

Monica looks where Sonic tells her to and sees a plume of dust rising. Monica points the Dash Tracker at it and gets really excited. "It's him! It's Dash!"

Sonic nods and grabs Monica. "Hold on."

Sonic bolts off toward the dust plume as fast as he can.

-With Dash-

It's 7 PM and we find the lavender hedgehog being chased from a restaurant for trying to steal food. This wasn't the first time he'd stolen food. In fact, this was the third time this week he'd tried to steal a meal. Over the last three weeks Dash had successfully stolen 18 meals, and he was never caught by police because of his speed.

Once he'd gotten out of this particular city, which was Omaha, Dash stopped to catch his breath. "Whew. Running on an empty belly is hard."

A slight breeze stirred, and on the wind Dash heard a voice call to him. "Dash!"

Looking to his right Dash sees a figure rocketing toward him. Squinting his eyes Dash is able to make out a blue figure. "Dad?"

The sweltering 110 degree heat made the image shimmer a bit, but soon Sonic was seen running full speed to his son. However, Dash's heart sinks when his jade green eyes also see Monica.

Sonic skids to a stop in front of Dash and hugs him. "Dash. I'm so happy you're okay."

Monica gets off Sonic's back and waits. Dash feels really happy to see his father again and he hugs back. "It's nice to see you too Dad. Do you have any food? I'm starving."

Sonic laughs and gets the food Amy made. "Here you go son. Eat all you want."

Dash starts eating and smiles. "How did you find me?"

Sonic chuckles. "Tails reworked the Sonic Tracker so it could find you. It's not called the Dash Tracker. Monica has it at the moment."

Dash nods. "That's just like Uncle Tails, but why did you bring her with you?"

Sonic frowns. "Because you're 22 years old and you need to handle this yourself."

Dash's jade eyes turn to Monica, and he stands up, staring right into her amethyst eyes. "What do you want?"

Sonic steps back and Monica glomps Dash. "Oh Dash! I missed you so much!"

Dash pries Monica off of him and frowns. "You know I'm still a little upset with you for lying to me."

Monica sniffles. "Why? It's been almost a month since you left me and your baby behind! What reason could you possibly have for still being upset with me?"

Dash shakes his head. "It's because you lied. Lying about something that serious doesn't deserve to be forgiven that easily."

Monica shows him the Dash Tracker. "Do you see this? We've traveled 1800 miles to find your dumb ass! 1800 MILES!"

Dash shrugs. "So?"

Monica's tears went from happy tears to angry tears. "So? That's all you have to say to me?"

The crimson female echidna rears back and belts Dash with the Dash Tracker. He hits the ground hard and Monica screams at him. "HOW DOES IT FEEL? HUH? HOW DOES IT FEEL TO BE HURT BY SOMEONE YOU LOVE?"

Sonic finally steps in and puts his hands on Monica's shoulders. "Remember what Amy said about getting angry?"

Monica was shaking with rage, but she nods and takes a few breaths. "Yeah... Sorry... It's just that Dash doesn't seem to care at all."

Sonic looks at Dash and back to Monica. "Give him some time. Remember, he hasn't seen you in almost a month."

Monica nods. "Alright Mr. Hedgehog."

Dash gets up and turns to Monica as Sonic steps away again. "Was hitting me really necessary?"

Monica nods. "I think it was, yes. I was hoping it would make you see how stupid you're acting right now."

Dash sighs. He knew she was right. It was time to face the facts and admit it. Monica hangs her head. "I'm sorry I lied to you Dash. I shouldn't have done it. I'm also sorry for hitting you."

Dash looks at Monica. "I'm sorry too."

The 21 year old female echidna frowns. "For what?"

Dash looks at his feet. "For overreacting. I shouldn't have run away and I should have acted more maturely."

Monica slowly reaches out and touches his arm. "Do you want to know what you can do to make it up to me?"

Dash nods, still not looking up. "Yeah."

Monica gets closer to the bluish-purple hedgehog and lifts his head. "Come home. Come back to Station Square and help me raise our baby."

Dash sees the pleading look Monica is giving him and he nods. "Alright, but I'll need to get a job to help support our family."

Monica nods. "Yes you will, and I'll get one too."

Monica hugs Dash and is surprised to feel Dash hugging her back. Sonic smiles. "Way to go guys."

The hug breaks and Monica pulls something off of Dash's quills. "Dash? Did you know you had this on you?"

Dash frowns and looks at the object. "No, I didn't."

Sonic takes the object, which happened to be a peanut, and eats it. "My peanut."

Dash frowns at him. "Okay... Well, I'll come back but Monica and I have some work to do."

Sonic nods. "Glad to have you back son."

Monica gets close to Dash and looks into her eyes. "Are we still together?"

Dash nods. "Yes, since I never broke up with you when I left. However, don't expect any mushy behavior from me for a little while."

Monica nods. "I understand Dash. Thank you for coming back."

Dash smiles for the first time in over a month. "You're welcome. Now, can we go home? I'm still hungry."

Sonic picks up the empty sack of food and smiles. "Sure. This will take the last bit of my energy, but here we go."

He puts a hand on Monica and Dash and takes a breath. "Chaos Control!"

Sonic, Monica, and Dash vanish in a flash of blue light.

The torch is passed

The next day Dash and Monica headed out to find jobs to support their family. Dash had decided to see where his pharmaceutical associate's degree could land him. Monica had been studying sports medicine and was leaning toward massage therapy.

Once they left Sonic turned to Amy. "Ames, we need to have a talk."

Amy frowns, thinking it was something about their marriage. "What's wrong Sonikku?"

The blue blur looks at his sakura-colored hedgehog wife. "It's about the Sonic Team."

Amy nods. "What about it honey?"

Sonic shrugs. "Well, considering we haven't really needed to save the world for 20 years, I think it's time for the Sonic Team to be retired."

Amy frowns. "Really?"

Sonic nods. "Yes. We've all got families and we're all about to become grandparents. As I just said, the Sonic Team hasn't been needed for 20 years."

Amy nods. "Well, I think you need to have a talk with everyone else about this. It's a big decision to make honey, and it's only fair for everyone else to have their say in the matter."

Sonic nods. "I plan to talk to everyone else. I know it's a big decision, but I think the time has come."

Amy nods. "Whatever you decide, you have my full support."

Sonic kisses Amy and rubs noses with her. "Thanks babe."

-With Dash-

The lavender hedgehog is seen darting around town to the various locations that have a pharmacy. He's filled out several applications and even went to different cities to apply for a job. In one store he turned in an application and felt like he might have a job right there and then. This particular pharmaceutical store was in a city called San Pedro, just outside of Los Angeles. After turning in this application Dash calls his father.

Sonic answers after three rings. "Hello?"

Dash starts running at a moderate pace back to Station Square. "Hey Dad. I'm on my way back from turning in another application."

Sonic nods. "How far did you go?"

Dash smiles. "Everywhere from Sacramento to San Pedro."

Sonic chuckles. "That's a big area son, several hundred miles."

Dash nods. "I know it's a long way to travel for work, but I have to try."

Sonic smiles. "Monica would be proud that you're going all that way."

Dash frowns. "We may be seeing each other again, but we still have a few issues to work out."

Sonic nods. "I know, and I'm happy you're willing to work it out with her."

Dash shrugs. "I have a child coming Dad. I figure I might as well give that a shot."

Sonic chuckles. "I'm proud of you for stepping up Dash. When will you be back in Station Square?"

The bluish-purple hedgehog thinks. "About an hour. I've got a few more places to stop and then I'll be home."

Sonic nods. "Alright son. Be careful."

Dash chuckles. "Thanks Dad. I will, and I'll see you soon."

The call ends and Dash speeds to his next destination.

-With Monica-

The female echidna is seen walking into a large fitness center. She goes up to the secretary and smiles. "Hello, I'm looking for a place to get a job that needs a massage therapist for sports injuries. Can you help me?"

The secretary smiles. "In fact, I can. I just received word that there IS an opening here in town."

Monica's eyes light up. "Really? Where?"

The secretary taps a few keys on her keyboard. "It's for the resort spa owned by... Sonic the Hedgehog."

Monica frowns. "Are you serious?"

The secretary nods. "Yes. Do you know him?"

Monica nods. "Yes. He's my boyfriend's father."

The secretary chuckles. "Lucky you. Word is that Dash is just as good looking as his father."

Monica giggles. "I'm only interested in Dash. Anyway, where can I get an application?"

The secretary looks at the echidna. "You have to go to the resort spa. Sonic is looking for someone in your area of skill for a new project he's working on."

Monica nods. "Alright. Thank you."

She leaves the fitness center and heads down to the resort spa.

-The Resort Spa, 11:18 AM-

Monica walks into the spa and sees Sonic. "Mr. Hedgehog?"

Sonic turns to her. "Monica? What are you doing here?"

Monica smiles. "I heard from the fitness center that you're looking for someone who could be a massage therapist for sports injuries."

Sonic nods. "I put that ad out today. Yes, I'm looking for someone in that field. What I'm doing is adding a rehab facility to the spa for athletes who get injured."

Monica nods. "Well, I'm studying sports medicine and I have a degree in the area."

Sonic nods again. "An associate's degree I'm assuming?"

Monica nods again. "Yes."

The blue speedster thinks for a second. "Well, if I do hire you, you'll be on a one month trial period before you start getting paid. The reason for this is that I want to make sure the athletes are satisfied with your work."

The echidna smiles. "I understand. If I'm hired, will I be by myself?"

Sonic shakes his head. "No. You'll be with four other therapists to make a five person team. If more is required, then I'll hire more people."

Monica nods. "May I have an application?"

Sonic smiles and gets her one. "Here you go. Fill everything out and give it to me when you're done."

Monica takes it and hugs Sonic. "Thank you Mr. Hedgehog."

Sonic pulls Monica off of him. "Try not to do that again."

Monica nods. "Alright, thanks."

She leaves and Sonic goes back to his previous task, which was talking to a contractor about the addition to the resort spa.

-Three days later-

In the conference room at the spa we find Sonic, Amy, Dash, Tails, Cream, Knuckles, Shadow, and Rouge. They're talking about the Sonic Team possibly retiring.

Sonic looks at everyone. "Thanks for coming everyone. Well, you know why you're here, so let's get to it."

Tails speaks. "Well, with everyone about to become grandparents and considering the world hasn't needed saving for 20 years, I think I have to agree with Sonic. The crimes that are committed can be handled by the local police."

Cream nods, and Rouge gives her opinion. "What about our kids? Surely they'd like the idea of carrying on our legacy."

Sonic frowns. "Rouge, you weren't really ever part of the Sonic Team, and Shadow wasn't either, but you two did help us on a few missions, so I figured it was only fair to include you."

He looks over at Dash. "Dash is here to tell us what our children have said. He's talked to everyone about it."

Dash nods and stands up. "I've talked with Luke, Matt, Jenna, Samuel, Monica, Zachary, Nathaniel, and Delilah. I'm actually surprised I left Angel Island alive. Anyway, they'd rather wait until there's another world emergency or until after college."

Everyone nods and Dash sits down. Amy speaks now. "All those years ago, I didn't think we'd ever be talking about retiring the team."

Shadow just watches everyone and then Knuckles sighs. "We probably should have announced our retirement after we all got families."

Shadow finally says something. "I think it just shows laziness on you guys for waiting so long to retire from being world heroes."

Cream frowns. "You just can't get over yourself can you Shadow?"

Shadow shrugs. "Well, it's true if you think about it."

Rouge roughly elbows him. "Be nice Shadow. What you call laziness is what they call being responsible parents."

Sonic nods. "Thank you Rouge."

Amy looks around at everyone. "Well, I think we have only one option. Problem is, how do we tell the residents of Station Square?"

Knuckles speaks again. "I think we should tell the Station Square news station that the Sonic Team has an announcement to make. In one week we make that announcement in the park."

Everyone there just stares at Knuckles, who frowns. "What?"

Rouge chuckles. "I believe that's the smartest thing you've ever said in your entire 43 years of being alive."

Knuckles smiles. "I have my moments."

Sonic chuckles. "I'll take care of it. It only makes sense that I do this anyway."

Amy takes his hand. "I'll come with you to the news station. I feel it would drive the point home better if we were all at the announcement too."

The group nods and the meeting is adjourned. Amy takes Sonic aside and presses against him. "Sonikku, are you sure this is what you want to do?"

Sonic sighs. "The decision has been made Ames. There's no going back now."

The rose-pink hedgehog nuzzles her cobalt stud. "I understand honey."

Sonic and Amy are soon headed to the news station in town.

-Station Square News station-

Sonic and Amy walk into the huge news station. Everyone stops what they're doing and watches the hedgehog couple as they approach the news room. A woman walks over to them. "May I help you?"

Sonic nods. "Yes. The Sonic Team has an announcement to make."

The woman nods. "When will this announcement be made?"

Amy speaks now. "It'll be made one week from now in Station Square park."

The woman nods again. "Thank you. This will be a huge news story. I'll have the news team there and ready to televise your announcement."

The two hedgehogs leave and go to their house to get their retirement speech ready.

-One week later, Station Square Park-

A huge crowd is gathered in the massive park. Several dozen news stations have come armed with cameras and a few huge satellite dishes. Sonic and the rest of the team were behind a podium, wearing clothes that matched their fur. It's Friday, July 10th, noon. The temperature was 105 degrees. Sonic looked at the team and got only nodding.

Kissing Amy once, Sonic walks to the podium and speaks into the microphone. "Thank you for coming. I'll get right to it since it's really hot right now."

The 100 networks present were broadcasting to the entire United States and dozens of other countries. At the moment, 2.5 billion people were watching live.

Sonic clears his throat and speaks again. "Over the last 30 years it has been an honor and a privilege to be a world hero and keep evil geniuses seeking

world domination at bay. However, over the last 20 of those years there hasn't really been a need for a world hero, or even a group of heroes."

Sonic snuffles and wipes his eyes before speaking again. "Given this situation, the Sonic Team had a meeting one week ago to decide whether or not they should retire or continue being world heroes. Since all of us have families and are about to become grandparents, we came to our decision fairly easily."

Sonic once again looks at his wife and friends. His look said 'Are you sure you want to do this?'

Amy nods after looking at everyone. Her look said 'Go on Sonic.'

The blue blur sighs and turns back to the microphone. "Effective immediately, the Sonic Team is retiring from being world heroes."

The shock roared through the crowd of 500,000 people that had showed up to hear this announcement. Sonic looks at them and nods. "However, this is not all bad. Once they're done with college, our children will take over the role of world hero when the next need arises."

A person in the audience screams. "What if a world threat comes before then?"

Sonic smiles. "I'll let my son answer that."

Dash comes forward and faces the huge crowd. "Hello. My name is Dash, and I'm the son of Sonic and Amy Rose Hedgehog. When the next threat arises, myself and my relatives will be the ones to respond."

The crowd cheers and claps, making Dash smile. Sonic looks at Amy after he sits down. "Dash will make an excellent world hero IF the need ever comes."

Amy kisses Sonic's left cheek. "Do you feel better about your decision?"

Sonic frowns. "That remains to be seen. It's too early to tell just yet."

Tails looks at Cream. "I wonder how Sonic is feeling. That's probably the hardest decision he's ever had to make."

Cream looks at the former world hero and then back to Tails. "I think he'll be fine Miles. Just give him some time."

Tails nods and goes back to watching Dash answer questions from the crowd.

-That night-

Sonic, Amy, and Dash are at home now. Dash and Lily are already asleep. Sonic and Amy are in bed, wearing nothing but their birthday suits, just as they had been for many many years.

Sonic rubs his temples. "Looking back, I think making the decision to retire from being a world hero was the right one to make."

Amy nods and lays on top of him. "I agree. Now you can give all your attention to your business and more importantly, me."

Sonic chuckles and purrs, making Amy start purring. "That's true, but I've been doing that anyway."

Amy giggles and nuzzles Sonic's chest. "Of course you have."

Sonic snuggles Amy close and closes his eyes. "I have a busy day tomorrow. I need to decide who to hire for the sports therapy section of the resort spa."

Amy nods and closes her eyes. "I know you'll make the right decisions."

After their "I love you" to each other Sonic and Amy fall asleep in only a few minutes.

Dash and Monica move out

Following the retirement of the Sonic Team, their successors began training a little just in case something did need their help. Well, everyone except for Monica and Jenna because they were pregnant. Jenna was about to start her sixth month of pregnancy, and Monica had just started her second month. Dash was still waiting to hear from the places he applied to, but Monica had succeeded in getting a job at Sonic's resort spa. At the moment she was looking around her new workspace.

Sonic himself was giving Monica a tour of the area. "Here on the right will be the rehabilitation equipment. Stuff like treadmills and elliptical machines for injuries that don't require a massage."

Monica nods. "I see. This is a huge area for a rehab facility though."

Sonic chuckles. "I know, but it'll pay off. I don't plan to charge any more than a regular rehab facility would charge, but I plan to show them that people who know their stuff is what really matters."

Monica looks at Sonic. "Thank you for giving us a chance."

The blue hedgehog looks at the red echidna. "Us?"

Monica puts a hand on her belly. Sonic smiles. "Oh. Right. Sorry I forgot."

Monica giggles. "It's okay. Has Dash found a job yet?"

Sonic nods. "He has an interview today in San Pedro."

Monica smiles. "I know he'll get the job. Pharmacy is a lucrative job and with a full degree he'll make even more money."

Sonic chuckles. "Before he can get all that money, he has to be certified."

Monica nods. "Still, I know he can do it."

The tour continues as Sonic shows Monica all of the equipment she'll be using.

-With Dash-

The bluish-purple hedgehog is seen running out of San Pedro. He's screaming at the top of his lungs. "YEAH! I DID IT!"

Dash has just scored a pharmacy job in the city. He couldn't wait to tell his family. More importantly, he couldn't wait to tell Monica. Over the last couple of weeks they'd been working the kinks out of their relationship. Running full speed, which was about 650 miles per hour for him, Dash reached home after an hour of running.

Going into the house Dash finds Amy making lunch. "Hey Mom."

Amy looks over and smiles at her son. "Hi Dash. How was your interview?"

Dash hugs Amy. "I did it Mom. I got the job!"

Amy hugs Dash back. "Congratulations Dash!" She breaks the hug and calls Sonic.

He answers after two rings. "Hello?"

Amy almost screams from her excitement. "Honey, Dash got the job!"

Sonic almost drops the phone and is heard yelling as he runs around the spa. "YES! MY SON GOT THE PHARMACY JOB!"

Applause is heard and Sonic comes back after a few minutes. "Give him the phone Ames."

Amy does so and Dash speaks to his father. "Hey Dad."

Sonic and Monica speak at the same time. "Congratulations Dash!"

Dash smiles. "Thanks you guys."

As they talk Dash goes into detail about getting his own house in town. Sonic nods. "I think you should wait until you have some money first. I know you have a family on the way, but you also have school and work to balance."

Dash sighs. "I know, and I forgot about the football team."

Monica frowns. "Dash, I know you want to play football, but you have a family coming in a few months. To be honest, I think you should quit the team and focus on your main priorities."

The lavender hedgehog shakes his head. "Luke and Matt are already expecting me to play Monica."

Sonic speaks again. "Not to sound like I'm against you Dash, but I think Monica's right. Your family, work, and school need to come first."

While they're talking Amy goes to get the mail and comes back with a letter from the university. "Dash, the university sent you a letter."

Dash reads the letter and hangs his head. "I just got a letter from the university. They're removing me from the sports teams."

Monica gasps. "WHAT? Why?"

Dash shakes his head, a few tears in his eyes. "Apparently I'm too fast and it would be an unfair advantage to the teams."

Sonic frowns. "I'll go talk to the school board. That's really unfair to you."

Dash nods. "Thanks Dad."

The call ends and Sonic teleports Monica home before going to the university.

-Two hours later-

Sonic comes into the house and rubs the back of his head. His quills are drooping, a sign that something wasn't right. Dash, Amy, Monica, and Lily

look at him with hopeful eyes.

Sonic looks at them and sighs. "Sorry guys. I tried everything I could, but they won't let Dash back on the sports teams. What I don't understand is why they waited three years to do this."

Dash looks at Monica. "Seems like you'll get what you wanted."

Monica frowns. "I didn't want you to be kicked off the sports teams Dash. I was just hoping you'd see that sports shouldn't be what you need to worry about."

Amy rubs his back. "Monica's right you know."

The bluish-purple hero-to-be nods. "I know she is, but sports were really important to me."

Sonic sits beside him. "You have a promising career as a pharmacist Dash. That needs to be your focus now."

Dash nods. "Alright Dad. Still, I need to find a place for me and Monica to live."

Monica takes his hand. "One thing at a time dear."

He smiles. "Right. I can still look can't I?"

Amy nods. "Looking is fine, but I wouldn't agree to anything just yet."

Dash nods. "Alright Mom."

-Three months later-

Dash and Monica are seen leaving the real estate office in town. They're been looking at a house overlooking the ocean, but it was one story and made of red brick. The hedgehog-echidna couple comes into Sonic and Amy's house with pictures of the house they wanted.

Sonic, Amy, and Lily are waiting for them. Lily speaks first. "Did you go look at the house you wanted?"

Monica smiles and nods. "Yes Lily. Dash has the pictures of it."

Dash lets his family look at the many pictures of the house. "It's brick with hardwood floors, one story, and plenty of room for a child or children to live in."

Dash's parents and sister look over the pictures and nod their approval. Amy looks at Dash. "Can you afford it?"

Dash nods. "It's surprisingly cheap considering all the stuff it comes with. The realtors have it listed at \$1800 a month. With me and Monica combining our income we'll have more than enough to make the payments."

Sonic chuckles. "\$1800 a month? It better have a lot for that much money."

Dash smiles. "It also has an ocean view."

Sonic nods. "That usually does it."

Monica puts a hand on her belly. Now five months pregnant Monica was really excited to see how many children Dash had given her.

Lily, now 17, saw this. "When is your first sonogram guys?"

Dash rubs Monica's belly, making her smile. "It's tomorrow. Doctor Alnilam is expecting us at 3 PM."

Amy smiles. "Can we come?"

Monica giggles. "Of course. It's only fair that you see how many grandchildren you'll have."

The family resumes looking at the pictures of the house. It looked promising, and Dash and Monica couldn't wait to be in it.

-The next day, 3 PM, Station Square Hospital-

It's October 25th and Dash was holding Monica as they waited for Doctor Alnilam. Dash was almost 23, and Monica was now 22. Amy was 40, and Sonic's 43rd birthday was coming just a few weeks after Dash's 23rd birthday.

Doctor Alnilam comes into the lobby and smiles. "Well, Sonic and Amy. Nice to see you after all these years. Where's Lily?"

Sonic shakes the doctor's hand. "She's still at school, so we'll need printouts of the sonogram if you don't mind."

Doctor Alnilam nods. "Of course you can have some." He looks at Dash and Monica. "Dash, how are you?"

Dash smiles. "Doing great Doctor Alnilam. This is Monica, the woman carrying my baby."

The doctor's brown eyes look at Monica. "Nice to meet you Monica. You look like your father."

Monica shrugs. "Perhaps, but I don't talk to him anymore."

Doctor Alnilam blinks. "Um... Okay. Well, come with me everyone."

The hedgehogs and echidna follow the doctor to Exam Room 15. Once everyone is in Dash helps Monica get on the hospital bed.

Feeling her back muscles relax made Monica moan. "Oohhh that feels great."

Sonic and Amy hold hands as Dash holds Monica's hand. Sonic smiles at his wife. "Remind you of us Ames?"

Amy smiles. "It sure does Sonikku. I can't wait to see our first grandchild."

Doctor Alnilam walks over to Monica with the special jelly. "Okay Monica, you'll need to expose your belly so I can put this jelly on it."

Monica looks at Dash. "Jelly?"

Dash nods. "It'll help the sonogram machine see the baby more easily."

Monica nods and exposes her belly. Doctor Alnilam layers Monica's belly a few times and turns on the sonogram machine. After a few minutes he smiles and gives Dash the attachment. "How many children are you expecting to have?"

Dash and Monica look at each other and Monica answers. "Uh... One is fine. Why do you ask?"

The doctor smiles and turns the screen to show the group three babies growing in Monica's womb. "You're having triplets, and they're all girls."

Dash looks at Monica. "T-Triplets... W-We're having triplets..."

Monica nods and holds Dash's hand tightly. "They're so beautiful Dash..."

They share a kiss and watch Doctor Alnilam point out the various features. "These thin membranes are the umbilical cords. Each of the triplets will carry clear signs of their parents. One will have quills, one will have hair, and one will have a mix of both. The eyes will go through the same thing. One will have green eyes, one will have amethyst eyes, and one might have both colors."

Amy looks at Sonic. "Tell everyone you know."

Sonic gets right on it. "I think having a grandchild with two colors of eyes would be awesome."

Doctor Alnilam turns off the machine. "Monica may have to have a Cesarean Section like her mother did. If not, then wonderful. If she does, then the babies will have to stay a few extra days."

Monica nods. "Do you have any advice?"

The doctor washes his hands. "You'll have to start resting more. If you have a job, you'll need to work less."

The female echidna looks at Sonic. "You heard that, right Mr. Hedgehog?"

Sonic laughs. "Way ahead of you Monica. You'll be off work three days a week. I'll lessen your work time the closer you get to your due date."

Monica nods and Dash helps her off the bed. "Thanks Dad. We should be moving into the new house in a few days, so your help would be appreciated."

Doctor Alnilam escorts the group back to the lobby. "Since we're closed on Christmas, which is when the next sonogram would be, you'll have to come in a day or two early. How does 9 AM on Christmas Eve sound?"

Dash and Monica nod. "That should be fine."

Amy speaks up. "We'll make sure they're on time Doctor."

The doctor laughs. "Thank you Amy. See you all soon."

The family leaves the hospital with printouts of the three growing babies. Sonic sighs. "Well, Knuckles was the one that seemed like he was the least happy about becoming a grandfather."

Monica shakes her head. "I don't care what he thinks. He's not showed any support for me, so I'm not showing any to him."

Amy and Dash frown. Monica looks at them. "You can't tell me that if you were in my place you wouldn't do the same thing."

Dash shrugs. "I probably would."

Amy nods. "I understand what you're saying, but it's not really fair to him. He is your father Monica."

Monica shrugs. "We'll see."

The family walks back to the house with Sonic and Amy sharing stories of when they were younger.

-Four days later-

It's now October 29th, 10 AM. Sonic, Amy, and Lily are saying their goodbyes to Dash and Monica. The house they wanted was finally theirs and everything had been moved in.

Dash hugs his parents and sister. "Thank you for helping me and Monica move in. You have the address to the house. It's not far so you can get to us in no time."

Sonic nods. "I'm really proud of you son."

Dash smiles. "Thanks Dad."

Amy and Lily sniffle. "Oh Dash..."

That's all they can manage before hugging the lavender hedgehog. Dash hugs his family and then lets Monica hug them. Once they're ready Dash and Monica go to their new house.

Sonic wipes some tears from his eyes. "It's just like when he first went to college all those years ago."

Amy nods and wipes her eyes. "I miss him already."

Sonic kisses Amy and Lily. "I'd love to stay here, but I still have to go to work. See you all this afternoon."

He vanishes in a flash of blue light. Amy looks at Lily. "What do you want to do?"

Lily thinks. "Usually the best cure for sadness is shopping, so let's do that. Let's go shopping for baby stuff. Dash will need it."

Amy nods and takes her daughter shopping.

-With Dash and Monica-

The hedgehog-echidna couple walks into their new house. Dash puts Monica down and smiles. "Here we are. Our new home."

Monica licks Dash's neck and nuzzles him. "I'm so happy Dash. I'm carrying our family and we have our own place now."

Dash kisses the top of her head. "I know, and I'm just as happy as you are Monica."

The two lovers kiss again and start on their lives in their new home.

A step toward the future

It's now November, Thanksgiving in fact. The Hedgehog Residence is alive with sounds. Everyone was there: Sonic, Amy, Tails, Cream, Rouge, Shadow, Knuckles, and Tikal. All of the children were there too: Dash, Lily, Jenna, Lucas, Matthew, Samuel, Monica, Delilah, Zachary, and Nathaniel. The newest addition of the family was also there: Jenna and Samuel's son Caleb. With everyone accounted for, 19 people were present.

Amy, Cream, Tikal, and even Rouge had spent the entire night making all the food. The boys had gotten stuck with cleaning the dishes later. Three turkeys, mashed potatoes, green beans, carrots, spinach, hamburgers... You name it and it was there. After saying the blessing the group gets in line from youngest to oldest. So, it went Lily, Samuel, the Prower triplets, Knuckles and Tikal's quadruplets, Dash, Cream, Tails, Tikal, Amy, Sonic, Knuckles, Rouge, and finally Shadow.

Caleb was being held in Jenna's arms at the moment because he was only a month old. He had Samuel's blue eyes and Jenna's twin tails. The fur color was a mix of orange and brown, golden-brown you might say.

Amy had been nominated as photographer for the huge gathering. Chris and Helen Thorndike were coming later, along with their three children. It takes 10 minutes for everyone to get their food and find someplace to eat. This wound up with the children in the kitchen and the adults in the living room. Both TVs were on and everyone was watching the Thanksgiving marathon of football games being shown.

Currently playing were two hard-hitting teams known for being all about defense and making the other team turn the ball over. Plenty of hard hits were being given on both sides and three players had already been knocked out with injuries. The score was tied at 7, and it was looking like the game was going into overtime.

The group there at the Hedgehog Residence was divided between the two teams. Each of the two groups wanted their team to win so much it hurt. As

the fourth quarter wound down a game-winning field goal was attempted and missed wide left.

Dash runs into the living room. "I TOLD you there were going to overtime!"

Sonic and Tails laugh and playfully push him back into the kitchen. All eyes went back to the TV screens as overtime began. The first team to score would win the game. 15 minutes on the clock. As the game went on the group got second helpings of the delicious food. Amy took a lot of pictures and had to use more than four cameras to get all the pictures she needed for her Thanksgiving album.

With three seconds to go, the TV screen suddenly went to downtown Station Square. Chris and Helen hadn't made it because of the commotion going on. Someone was rampaging downtown and gunning people down.

Sonic frowns. "Dash, are you watching this?"

Dash's voice is heard from the kitchen. "I am. Guys, let's go. The city needs us."

The descendants of the Sonic Team ran out of the house and downtown to take care of the situation... Well, everyone except Jenna and Monica because they would be at the most risk.

Sonic looks at the remaining people in the living room. "I think we should go down there and make sure they're okay. I'm not comfortable letting them go by themselves just yet."

He goes to the kitchen with the rest of the adults behind him. "Jenna, Monica, stay here."

The two females nod and watch on the TV, worrying immensely about their partners.

-Downtown Station Square-

Dash and the new team of heroes arrive downtown to see the villain with a megaphone. He was yelling at the police and the frightened citizens. "My name is Igor Robotnik. My grandfather, Ivo Robotnik, was the greatest man to ever live. I've decided to follow in his footsteps and become the ruler of the world! I'm going to do whatever it takes to achieve this goal, so if you'll be nice I'll go ahead and start right now."

Dash looks at everyone. "This kid is all of 15 years old. However, if he's going to try and take over the world, we'll have to take him down at all costs."

The boy turns to them. "Who are you guys? My new minions?"

Dash growls. "We're your worst nightmare."

Igor points a gun at them. "Do you see this? This is an Uzi. You can't outrun one of these things. I've killed 12 police officers and I'm not about to let a wannabe freak like yourself get in my way. However, if you want to join me, by all means do so."

Dash runs forward in a flash and sends Igor flying with a hard uppercut to the jaw. The rest of the team follows suit, taking shots as they get them and dodging bullets from the Uzi. Sonic and the former Sonic Team arrive but stay out of the action as they watch their offspring beat the crap out of the "new world leader". A few people do get hit with stray bullets. Zachary and Delilah are hit in the legs and Matthew is shot in the left arm.

Dash kicks the gun free and pins Igor to the ground. "You're not going to win Igor. You're outnumbered even though you have an Uzi."

Igor growls. "I'm not finished yet hedgehog!"

The 15 year old kicks Dash off of him and picks up the Uzi. An ambulance makes its way through the crowd as the fight continues. Sonic looks at Shadow and Knuckles. "Get them into the ambulance as fast as you can."

Shadow and Knuckles do so and are almost hit themselves. Igor changes clips and keeps firing at the innocent civilians and the new team of heroes.

Dash is the last one standing and only because of his speed.

As the ambulance drives off Igor points the gun at Dash and fires off 10 shots. Dash dodges all of them... Until one tears into his stomach. Screaming in pain Dash hits the ground and curls into a ball.

Igor walks over to him, blood pouring from his mouth and nose. "I told you I wasn't finished, but you are."

He goes to pull the trigger, but a strong grip stops him. Looking to his left, Igor sees a pair of crimson eyes. The deep voice speaks only one word. "Boo."

Igor freaks and tries to shoot Shadow, but misses since Shadow used Chaos Control to disappear. Knuckles kicks the gun free again and nails Igor with a kick to the stomach. This is followed with a right hook to the nose.

Sonic yells. "Amy, get Dash and everyone else that's hurt to the hospital! Be careful!"

Amy nods and has the females help her get the injured into the ambulances. Dash is picked up by Amy and she rides with him to the hospital. Igor gets the Uzi back and goes on yet another shooting rampage, taking down Knuckles, Tails, and somehow Shadow.

Only Sonic remained and Igor had death in his eyes. "So, you're Sonic the Hedgehog? Grandpa always spoke poorly of you. Said you always got in his way. Now I'm going to take you down, once and for all."

The gun goes off, but Sonic is too fast. Igor throws the gun down. "DAMMIT! I missed, and that was my last shot!"

Sonic smiles and tackles Igor. "Now you face the consequences."

The beat down isn't pretty. Sonic has to be restrained by 15 police officers because he became Dark Sonic. In the 30 seconds it took the police to get to Dark Sonic, the dark blue hedgehog had nearly killed the 15 year old boy. It was only in defense of his family and son that were almost killed.

Igor is put in an ambulance and taken to a hospital with police right behind him. While Sonic calms down he is told that Dash was in surgery to remove the bullet that he was hit with. Sonic nods and takes a few breaths to chill out. Soon, Sonic becomes his normal cobalt blue color and he's allowed to go to the hospital.

-Station Square Hospital-

Samuel is in the waiting room holding Jenna and Monica back as best he can. Sonic arrives and Samuel immediately yells to him. "Sonic, help me!"

Sonic gets Monica and pushes her down into a seat. "Monica, you need to calm down."

Jenna kept struggling against her fiancé. "Let me go Sam. I need to see my brothers!"

Samuel held her back. "The doctors will tell us when we can see them. I'm just as worried as you are, but you need to stay calm."

Monica struggled against Sonic's grip. "That's my boyfriend in there Sonic! I WANT TO SEE HIM!"

Sonic shakes his head. "I'm just as worried as you are Monica, but you're not helping the babies."

Matthew comes out with his arm in a sling. Jenna is let go and she hugs him tightly. "Matt! Are you okay?"

Matthew nods and hugs Jenna back with his good arm. "I'm fine Jenna, just a scratch. The bullet went clean through."

Sonic sees him and goes over since Monica's calmed down a little. "How's Dash?"

Matthew sighs. "He's in the worst shape Uncle Sonic. That bullet went into his stomach and he's still in surgery. Everyone else is in the recovery rooms."

Lily, who was at home with Jenna and Monica, spoke up. "Who's doing the surgery?"

Matthew nods. "Doctor Alnilam is working on Dash. There's a huge team of doctors back there working to save everyone."

Monica gets up and runs through the doors, headed to surgery. "DASH! WHERE ARE YOU?"

Sonic runs her down and pulls her back to the waiting room. Monica screams the whole time. "LET ME GO! I WANT TO SEE DASH!"

Samuel helps Sonic hold Monica down in a chair. Amy comes in from the recovery rooms and sees Monica struggling. Going over, Amy looks Monica right in the eyes. "If you want your babies to die, keep struggling."

Monica instantly stops. Amy giggles and looks at Sonic. "That's all you had to do."

Sonic frowns. "I tried that and it didn't work."

Amy blinks and shakes her head. "Anyway, Doctor Alnilam has just finished surgery on Dash. He's in ICU Room 8 now. According to him, Dash's heartbeat had to be restarted three times."

Monica started crying, which made Lily start crying, which made Amy snifle. "Oh Sonic!"

Sonic holds his wife as she cries on him. Doctor Alnilam comes out and sighs. He looks tired, but he approaches the group. "Dash will live, but he'll be here for a long time. A month at least."

Sonic is shaking, but he keeps himself calm. "Thank you. Can we see him?"

Doctor Alnilam nods. "Yes, but one at a time."

Sonic nods and looks at his family. "Well, who's first?"

Amy wipes her eyes and sniffles. "I'll go first. Lily can go after me, then you Sonic, and then Monica."

Sonic nods. "That sounds fine."

Amy kisses Sonic and goes to see the lavender hedgehog. Sonic sits down and continues to comfort his daughter and Monica. Matthew, Samuel, and Jenna join them for moral support.

-With Amy-

The pink hedgehog enters the room and goes over to her son. He's currently sleeping and Amy almost cries when she sees him. His midsection was wrapped heavily in bandages and he was on several IVs to keep him alive. Amy looked at the clock and saw that it was only 3 PM.

Shaking her head she brushes Dash's quills back and hugs him. "Get well soon Dash. I love you."

Amy slowly walked toward the door, but a voice stopped her. "Mom..."

Turning around, Amy saw Dash looking at her. Immediately she hugged him. "Oh Dash! You had me so worried!"

Dash smiles despite his situation. "I can't move Mom. I'm not allowed to."

Amy nods. "That's fine Dash. I'm just happy you're alive."

Dash nods. "Can you get Dad and Lily in here? I need to ask them something."

Amy nods and gets Sonic and Lily to come into the room. Dash is instantly hugged by both of them. "Nice to see you too guys."

Lily cries. "Oh Dash, are you okay?"

Dash nods. "Well, Doctor Alnilam has told me not to move at all, other than to use the restroom and eat. Other than that and the fact I almost died, I'm doing okay."

Sonic hugs his son and sniffles. "I'm glad you're okay Dash."

The bluish-purple hedgehog sniffles too. "Thanks Dad... I wasn't sure if I'd ever see any of you again..."

A few more tears are shed, and Dash finally calms down. He looks at his family and smiles. "I need to ask you something, but you need to keep this from Monica."

Sonic, Amy, and Lily nod, so Dash tells them his plan.

-A few hours later-

Monica is visiting Dash for the second time that day. It was 7 PM now and Monica had once again left Dash's bed stained with tears. Knuckles had come in and apologized to Monica for kicking her off Angel Island and out of the family. Monica accepted his apology but said Dash had already gotten them a house and she would only go to Angel Island to visit. Knuckles understood and wished them the best with their future.

After he left Monica climbed onto the bed and snuggled up to Dash. "I wish you could move your arms Dash. I miss having them around me."

Dash nodded. "I know you do, but if I'm to get out of here on time, I need to do as the doctors ask me."

Monica sighs. "I hope you get out of here soon Dash. It's lonely at our house without you there."

Dash kisses her cheek. "Don't worry Monica. I'll be out before you know it."

Monica put a hand on her belly. Now six months pregnant, she'd been informed that she really put the growing children in danger by struggling and trying to see Dash instead of remaining calm.

As her eyes closed she said one thing. "I love you Dash."

Dash kissed her once more and closed his eyes. "I love you too Monica."

-Christmas Eve, 10 AM-

Sonic and the gang are in Dash's room talking with him. Everyone except Monica knew what was going to happen. Even Doctor Alnilam was in on it. He was there in the room currently performing the second sonogram on Monica.

He let everyone see the growing triplet girls. "Monica, you came really close to killing your children last month. You can still see the stress the baby girls went through. The umbilical cords are thinner, but they're growing back to normal size. Had you made them close off, your children would have died, and you'd have had a miscarriage."

Everyone in the room looks at Monica, who gasps. "I... I almost killed my children?"

Doctor Alnilam nods. "Yes. By struggling to see Dash, you nearly killed the growing babies."

Dash shakes his head. "Monica, you have to listen to people who tell you calm down."

Monica sighs. "I will... I won't struggle ever again."

Dash had asked Sonic, Amy, and Lily to pick out an engagement ring for Monica. He even told them what she liked on it. Dash was up off of the bed and had the engagement ring in his back pocket. Everyone knew he did, except for Monica.

Doctor Alnilam left the sonogram machine on and looked at Dash. "Dash, you're free to go, but you still can't do anything strenuous for a couple more weeks. The stitches still need to heal."

Dash nods. "Thank you Doctor Alnilam. Now, since you're all here, I figure I might as well leave the hospital on a good note."

Monica looks at him. "What do you mean?"

Dash takes the ring out of his back pocket and gets on one knee. "Monica, will you marry me?"

Monica gasps and feels her heart race. She looks over and her family, the same one that had cursed Dash, beaten him, even tried to separate them. All she saw were smiles.

Looking back to Dash, Monica hugged him as best she could and sniffled. "Yes Dash, I'll marry you."

Applause rang out in the room as Dash put the 3 karat diamond ring on her finger. Doctor Alnilam watches the babies on the sonogram machine. "Well, look at that. The babies are moving around a lot."

Monica suddenly gasps. "I think I just got kicked."

Doctor Alnilam nods and listens to the triplets' heartbeats. "That shouldn't happen until you reach the seventh month of pregnancy... Still, this doesn't mean it's bad. Just keep an eye on them okay?"

Dash and Monica nod, and Doctor Alnilam leaves to check on other patients. Everyone else leaves behind him, congratulating the newly engaged couple. After they leave Monica snuggled up to Dash. "How did you get this ring?"

Dash smiles. "I had Dad, Mom, and Lily get it for me."

Monica giggles and licks Dash's neck. "Thank you Dash."

Dash licks Monica's neck back and escorts her out of the hospital. "You're welcome."

As they walk the hedgehog-echidna couple talk about names they could use for their coming daughters. It wasn't easy, and several books had to be consulted once they got home. However, after an hour of talking about it, three names had been decided.

Monica kisses Dash. "I think they'll like those names."

Dash nods and kisses Monica back. "Me too. Now, it's time for some rest."

He helps Monica get into bed and lays down beside her. Soon the two lovers are resting comfortably for the first time in over a month.

A threat to the family

After Dash and Monica leave the hospital they return to their home to start planning their wedding. However, when they wrote down everything they needed, the gravity of the occasion hit home.

Dash shook his head and looked at Monica. "Wow. I had no idea a wedding needed so much work."

Monica nods and winces, putting a hand on her belly. "The triplets are definitely looking forward to us getting married, but yes, that's a lot of stuff."

The list went as follows: A place for the wedding was needed as well as someone to perform it. They also needed catering, maybe music, a place for the reception...

Dash rubs his temples. "What kind of theme are we going to have?"

Monica groans. "Well, I think we might need to ask someone to help us."

Dash nods and thinks for a minute. "Let's see what Mom and Dad can do. Who knows? Maybe they'll be able to give us some ideas."

Monica nods. "I think that's a good idea. Right now, you and me can work on the theme and a few other details."

Dash picks up a pencil and the two lovers begin writing ideas for their wedding theme.

-Prison Island-

On the isolated island prison that had tighter security than Alcatraz, we find a lone person in a cell. This person is Igor Robotnik, the newest threat to humanity. After his beat down in the middle of Station Square, Igor was not only plotting an escape, but also the termination of BOTH of the hero teams.

At the moment he was muttering to himself. "If I can find some way to take them down... I'll have done what no one else has ever done. I'll have taken down not only the Sonic Team but also their descendants..."

A guard comes by and slides a tray of food into the cell. "Eat up. At least we'll get some peace from your pointless yammering."

Igor growls and crashes against the neodymium bars. "I'LL GET OUT OF HERE AND YOU KNOW IT!"

The guard laughs. "Good luck with that."

The guard leaves Igor to continue planning his escape. "I'll get out. Just you wait and see."

An evil laugh resounds throughout the cell as Igor continues his plan.

-With Sonic and Amy-

The pink and blue hedgehogs were helping Lily figure out which college she wanted to go to. Since her grades were far better than the rest of her class, she'd been chosen for a full scholarship to any school she wanted.

Lily had a tough decision to make. She didn't want to go too far from home, but she also wanted to go to a school she knew would give her the best chance to get a good education. Lily had a year to make her decision and her parents ensured her that she didn't need to rush.

A knock on the door is heard and the three hedgehogs look over. Sonic goes and opens it up. "Dash! Monica! Come on in."

Dash and Monica hug Sonic and walk inside. Dash helps Monica sit down and hugs Lily and Amy. "I know it's only been a few days since we've seen you, but we need your help."

Monica puts a hand on her belly and looks at Sonic, Amy, and Lily. "Dash and I are beginning to plan our wedding, but we've just realized how much is really needed."

Amy nods. "Well, Sonikku and I had our friends help us out with finding a place for the reception and the actual wedding."

Lily looks over at her parents. "Where did you and Dad get married, Mom?"

Amy holds Sonic's hands as a dreamy look came to her eyes. "23 years ago, Sonic and I got married on the sandbar offshore. I was six months pregnant with Dash when it happened."

Lily smiles and looks at her brother. "Do you remember that day Dash?"

Dash shrugs. "Well, I was still in Mom's belly, so if I do remember anything, it's not much."

Sonic nods. "Ames is as beautiful now as she was then."

Amy's cheeks turn a dark red as she blushes. "Aw Sonikku..."

Sonic kisses her and looks at his son and future daughter-in-law. "We'll be happy to help you with planning your wedding. Where would you like to start?"

The lavender hedgehog looks at his crimson fiancée. "Well, what did you have in mind?"

Monica blinks. "You're asking me?"

Dash nods. "At the moment, yes I am."

Monica winces as she's kicked and then thinks a bit. "Well, I'm not sure we should copy your Mom and Dad's wedding, but I don't have any idea where else we could have it."

Lily has an idea. "Well, I see two options. You can either have it in the church downtown, or you can have it on Angel Island."

Monica frowns. "I'm not sure we should have it on Angel Island Lily. Dad and I are still on unstable terms."

Dash nods. "It's getting better between you two and you have plenty of time to get things straight."

Monica nods. "True, but you know how he is."

Sonic and Amy chuckle, which makes Dash sigh. "Yeah. He gave me the drink that wound up being the curse."

Lily nods. "That's all in the past Dash, and he's long since apologized for it."

The bluish-purple hedgehog smiles at his younger sister. "I know, and I appreciate him admitting he was wrong. Tikal has also apologized, but something like that isn't forgiven easily."

The lilac hedgehog nods and gets a pencil and some paper. "Alright, so we have either the church or Angel Island. That, of course, depends on if Monica and Knuckles work things out. Who will perform it?"

Sonic smiles. "Let me call Reverend Spolowicz at the church downtown and see if he'll perform it."

Amy looks at her husband. "Is he even still in that line of work?"

Sonic shrugs. "There's only one way to find out Ames. Besides, he might still have his catering company. If he does, then that also takes care of the catering."

Dash and Monica are impressed. Lily writes down Reverend Spolowicz possibly performing the wedding and catering. Amy looks at her son and his fiancée. "Dash, have you or any of your hero team heard anything about Igor?"

Dash frowns and nods. "Well, as with every villain, Igor claims he's putting something together to escape Prison Island. He also has a goal: to take down not only my hero team, but also the former Sonic Team."

Amy gasps and holds Sonic's hands tightly. "What are we going to do Sonic?"

The blue blur held his pink wife to him. "If need be, we'll help Dash's team but only as backup."

Dash nods. "Igor took Robotnik's last name to make it seem like Ivo had children. His real last name is Richardson, but he's almost as smart as Robotnik was. His I.Q. was measured at 190."

Lily shakes her head and Monica squeezes Dash's hand. "Dash, what do you plan to do?"

The lavender hero shrugs. "All we can do is wait. Prison Island has the best security measures known, and in its 30 year history only one prisoner has ever escaped. Even then they needed help."

Lily frowns. "Who escaped from Prison Island?"

Dash looks at his sister. "The only person to ever escape from Prison Island is... Dad."

Lily and Monica look at Sonic, who nods. "Amy, Tails, Cream, and Chris helped me escape when Shadow first showed up. I was put in jail because everyone thought I was him."

Monica blinks. "Huh?"

Amy chuckles. "Shadow was working for Robotnik because he didn't know better at the time, and he stole a few Chaos Emeralds from a few places. Sonic was accused of the crimes and put in jail at Prison Island. Me and the Sonic Team broke him out of jail and proved Sonic's innocence."

Dash decides to change the subject. "Anyway, Luke and Matt have been given permission to watch over him and sound the alarm if he does manage to escape."

Monica nods and gasps when the growing triplets kick her all at once. "AH! OW..."

Dash rubs Monica's belly and has Lily get some green tea. Sonic smiles. "After the girls are born, you will be on maternity pay until you're ready to

come back."

Monica smiles despite the triplets kicking her. "Thanks Mr. Hedgehog. OW!"

Lily comes in a few minutes later and gives Monica a glass of green tea. "This should help."

Monica quickly downs the glass and purrs as the kicking slowly goes away. "Oohhh that's much better."

Dash smiles and nods. "The natural herbs in the green tea are helpful it seems."

Monica looks at him. "What was your first clue?"

Dash blinks and Amy chuckles. "Dash, pregnant women have rapid mood swings. All you can do is grin and bear it."

Dash nods. "Trust me, I know Mom, but thanks for the reminder. Right now though, I need to take Monica home so I can go to work."

He helps Monica out of the chair and takes her to their house. Lily also leaves to spend time with her boyfriend in the park. Sonic smiles and cuddles Amy to him. "Well, it's just you and me again."

Amy nods. "Yeah, and all I want now is to cuddle here on the couch."

Sonic lays down on his back and Amy crawls on top of him, covering them both with a blanket. "I'll bet you were expecting me to want to mate with you again, weren't you."

Sonic gives a deep chuckle and rubs Amy's back, making her purr. "Usually that's what happens when we're alone."

Amy giggles and nuzzles Sonic under his chin. "Don't worry, that comes later."

Sonic smiles and nuzzles Amy back. "Great."

Amy and Sonic are soon sleeping on the couch with content smiles on their faces.

-Two weeks later-

Dash comes home from work to find Monica on the couch shaking. It's January 11th and fairly cold outside, so Dash checks the heater and finds it's working just fine.

Going over to the red female echidna Dash holds her in his arms. "Shh... I'm here now. What's going on honey?"

The only response is a shaky hand pointing to a letter from Prison Island. Dash reads it and stands up. "Monica, pack your things. While this is going on you'll have to stay with Mom and Dad."

Monica keeps holding onto Dash. "I'm so scared Dash."

The hedgehog looks his echidna fiancée in the eyes. "I know you are, but you need to stay calm. I'm doing this for your safety. If Igor can send letters to our house, then he can just as easily come here in person if he escapes."

Monica nods. "I know... I'm just so worried and scared."

Dash nods again. "I know, but you need to hurry. Pack what you need as fast as you can and I'll take you to Mom and Dad's house."

While she packs Dash answers multiple calls and text messages. This is how he finds out that Igor has become the second person to escape from Prison Island. No one knows how he did it, but Dash and the team were now on high alert.

Monica comes into the living room and nods. "Alright, I'm ready."

Dash hangs up his phone and shakes his head. "In the ten minutes it took you to pack I've had 30 calls about Igor. He's escaped from Prison Island."

Monica's eyes widen. "WHAT? How?"

Dash takes her hand and walks outside. "No one knows just yet. We'll find out in a few days. Right now, you need to get to a safer place."

Locking the door Dash gently picks Monica up and runs to Sonic and Amy's house. Neither Dash nor Monica knew that a pair of eyes was watching them. 'Good. He's received my letter. Now, to find out where Dash is taking Monica.'

-Sonic and Amy's house-

Dash puts Monica down and knocks on the door. It opens and Sonic drags them both inside. "We saw that Igor had escaped on the news and we figured you'd want Monica to stay here."

Dash nods while Amy and Lily help Monica get situated in Dash's room. "Until Igor is back in jail she can't be seen or talked about at all. NO ONE must know she's here."

Sonic nods. "She'll be safe here Dash."

The lavender hedgehog nods. "Thanks Dad. I'll keep everyone updated."

Opening the door Dash looks around before bolting back to his house. Sonic locks the door and peeks out the window after checking on Monica. He was only gone about a minute, but he saw a man staring at their house deep in thought.

Sonic looks behind him and sees Amy and Lily. "Stay away from the windows and behind me. Igor is watching."

Amy and Lily get behind Sonic and wait, feeling very scared. For 30 minutes Sonic kept himself invisible to Igor while the escaped criminal stared at the house. He hadn't seen Dash drop Monica off, but Sonic's family didn't know that. The sound of a police siren made Igor turn and run.

Sonic sighs in relief. "We may have to move in with Tails and Cream for a while."

Amy frowns. "What was he doing Sonikku?"

Sonic helps Amy and Lily off the floor. "He was studying our house and seeing who lived here."

Lily speaks. "Do you think he figured out who lived here?"

Sonic frowns. "I don't know Lily... I don't know."

-With Dash-

The bluish-purple hero is back in his house and in the basement. He's working out and training for the next encounter with Igor. He didn't want to be unprepared like the last time. To avoid being seen, he took the long way home. After a fierce three hour training session Dash showered and called Monica.

She answers and almost screams into the phone. "Dash? Are you alright?"

Dash chuckles. "Of course Monica. Are you okay?"

Monica frowns. "Considering I'm eight months pregnant how do you THINK I am?"

Dash hesitates. "Uh..."

Monica sighs. "Sorry. Had a mood swing there. Um, I'm doing alright. I wish you were here though."

Dash nods. "I know you do, but I can't put both you and the babies at risk by keeping you here."

The female echidna sighs again. "How long will this last?"

Dash rubs his temples. "I don't know, but the sooner Igor is back in jail, the better I'll feel."

Monica smiles on her end of the call. "I believe in you Dash."

He smiles. "Thanks Monica. I really needed that."

Dash and Monica say their "I love you" to each other and end the call. Dash picks up the letter and throws it away. Turning off the lights and locking all the doors, he goes to bed and sleeps the best he can.

The letter Igor sent said only this: *'I hope you're prepared Dash. This time around, you won't be so lucky. See you soon.'*

Dash's children arrive

February comes around and we find Dash and Monica's house alive with activity. Not only was it Valentine's Day, but it was also the day of Monica's baby shower.

Monica sat on the couch with Dash rubbing her feet. "Thank you for the foot massage Dash. I definitely needed it."

Dash smiles. "You're welcome Monica."

The gift from Sonic and Amy was three sets of clothes for each of the baby girls. Tails and Cream had gotten diapers and wipes for the triplets. Shadow and Rouge had gotten a collection of bedtime stories for Dash to read to his children when they were older. Knuckles and Monica had finally repaired their relationship and were on stable terms again. He and Tikal had made the cribs for the triplets to sleep in. Tikal had also prepared a special potion for the girls once they arrived.

Dash had decided to wear the sandals Tikal made for him when he was younger. The piece of the Master Emerald Knuckles had gotten him was on a necklace around his neck. Even though the atmosphere in the house was happy and joyful, not all was well. A pair of green eyes was watching the group. More specifically, they were watching Dash. 'Enjoy this time you have with Monica. You won't be spending much more with her after today.'

The mysterious figure leaves just before Sonic looks out the window. Amy sees him frown. "What did you see Sonic?"

Sonic looks at his wife. "I thought we were being watched."

Shadow frowns. "Who would bother to watch a baby shower?"

Cream looks at the black hedgehog. "Igor would."

Rouge nods. "That makes sense. Considering he's still on the run and after both the past and present hero teams, I'd be looking in a house too."

Dash frowns. "Okay, you're creeping us out."

Rouge blushes a little. "Sorry."

Tails looks at Dash and Monica. "So guys, how do you feel about becoming parents?"

Monica winces when she's kicked by the triplets but she smiles. "I never thought this day would come, but now that it's almost here I'm really excited."

Dash nods. "I'm looking forward to it as well, but I'm going to need some help getting started."

Sonic chuckles. "Don't worry Dash, Ames and I will help you get started on your parenting."

The rose-pink hedgehog nods. "Your father and I can get some parenting books on triplets if you want. While you're not at work you can spend some time reading the books."

Dash nods. "Sounds like a good idea Mom."

As the party continues Dash and Monica wind up looking at baby names for their girls while listening to suggestions from the guests. Eventually three names were decided on: Angelica, Dayna, and Crystal.

Lily smiles. "Those are pretty names guys. I think the girls will like them too."

Monica smiles. "Thank you Lily. I agree, those are very pretty names."

Dash looks at his younger sister. "Now, I can't guarantee that these names will stay, but it's possible they will."

-Three weeks later-

We find two people meeting in the shadows of Station Square park. One is a human, the other is a green hedgehog. The human is Igor, and he looks

around to see if anyone is around. It's after midnight, so no one is around.

Igor nods and looks at the green hedgehog. "Alright Melannie, what's this plan of yours?"

Melannie smiles. "Dash is currently at the hospital awaiting the birth of his triplet girls."

Igor blinks. "How do you know?"

Melannie frowns. "That's not part of our deal. I've waited over two years for him to finally show a weakness so I can get my revenge on him."

Igor crosses his arms. "What did he do to you?"

The 22 year old hedgehog growls. "He turned my love away and now I'm getting my revenge. I'm going to show him exactly what he's missing out on."

Igor nods. "Well, I need to get some revenge of my own. With the help of his father, Sonic, Dash defeated my last attempt to take over the world."

Melannie nods. "Sonic is none of my concern. Dash is the one I want. I'm going to make him pay for turning me down."

Igor chuckles. "What's in it for me?"

Melannie shrugs. "If you can get into Monica's room, kill her."

Igor smiles. "When I rule the world, you will receive a charming gift basket."

Melannie rolls her eyes and leaves, never once showing more than her eyes. She had something special planned for Dash. Igor went back to getting his latest weapon ready. It was specially designed to not only stop Dash, but get rid of the evidence as well. "This time Dash... You're mine."

-In the hospital-

In room 128 we find Dash reading the books Sonic and Amy got him. The one he was currently reading was called "Raising Triplets". Monica was sleeping in the bed next to the bluish-purple hero. There's a knock on the door and Amy and Sonic come in.

Sonic smiles and speaks softly. "How is she?"

Dash puts the book down and stretches. He stands up and checks on Monica. "She's sleeping peacefully right now. Doctor Alnilam says it could be another 12 to 24 hours before Monica goes into labor."

Sonic nods. "Well, you have a visitor downstairs. A friend of yours."

Dash frowns. "What's his name?"

Amy giggles. "Her name is Melannie."

Dash rubs his head. "Really. Well, what does she want?"

Sonic shrugs. "She didn't say. However, she wants to see you."

Dash nods. "Mom, will you come with me? I might need someone to knock her flat if she gets too crazy."

Amy summons her hammer. "Alright, let's go."

Dash and Amy go downstairs and see Melannie wearing a trench coat with high-heeled black boots. The pink and lavender hedgehogs approach the green one, who looks at them. "Hello Dash. Who's the unnecessary hostage?"

Dash blinks. "Huh?"

Igor takes Amy's hammer away from her and belts her with it, sending her flying and knocking her unconscious. Igor now points the modified .44 at Dash's head. "Guess who."

Dash growls. "Igor..."

Melannie smiles. "You know Dash, Igor and I both have something in common. We both want revenge."

Dash is tackled by Melannie, who takes off the trench coat, revealing her perfect figure. "Now that I have you, I'm going to have my way with you, and then Igor is going to kill Monica after he kills you."

Sirens are heard in the distance and Igor growls. "Hurry up Melannie. The cops are coming."

Melannie nods and quickly goes to work. Dash resists until Igor places the gun on his head. "You resist anymore and I'll make you watch me kill Monica."

Dash sighs. "So you're trying to cause me heartache and make me lose my family?"

Melannie smiles and purrs in Dash's ears. "Once Monica finds out you've cheated on her she'll break up with you and all that sad breakup stuff. It's all part of my revenge. But first, it's time to make you see what you've thrown away by not choosing me to be with you."

Before she can go through with her plan though, the police arrive and Chief Parkinson's squad aims their guns at Igor and Melannie. "Let the hedgehog go guys."

The 16 year old Igor laughs. "Why? I can finally have my revenge. Besides, Melannie isn't done with him yet."

Chief Parkinson shakes his head. "Take them both down!"

Two shots ring out and everyone ducks for cover. Melannie is soon arrested for public nudity and being an accomplice in an attempted murder. Igor is lying on the ground with a bullet wound in his left leg. Two figures arrive from the darkness. One is Shadow, who had arrived to help out with catching Igor. He talked with Chief Parkinson while the other figure, who was Sonic, went over to Amy and picked her up.

Sonic sees Dash run into the hospital, and then Amy groans. "Ow... What happened?"

Sonic carries her inside. "You're at the hospital Amy. Igor has been arrested once again, thanks to Shadow."

Amy nods. "Igor hit me with my own hammer."

Sonic gently kisses the bruise on Amy's head. "You'll be okay, but you'll have to rest for a while. Anyway, Dash will explain everything since Monica was freaking out about him leaving."

Shadow finishes with the police and joins the pink and blue hedgehogs. "Igor missed Dash by half an inch. He'll be in a much more secure prison, but Melannie will be in a normal jail for a few years."

The three hedgehogs get back to room 128 and find Dash explaining what happened to him. Amy is treated for a concussion and Monica hugs Dash. "I'm glad you're okay honey. Just don't go near her again."

Dash nods. "I never will Monica."

Sonic thanks Shadow for his help and goes back to the lobby with Amy. Once there she curls up in his lap and goes to sleep. Sonic keeps a lookout for the rest of his friends.

-14 hours later-

It's 3 PM on March 15th and Monica suddenly sits bolt upright. "AAH!"

Dash wakes up from his nap, takes one look at Monica, and picks up the bedside phone. "I need Doctor Alnilam in room 128 please."

The doctor soon arrives with a nurse and sees Monica going through her labor breathing. Getting to Monica's feet Doctor Alnilam puts on a pair of gloves. "Alright Monica. Push."

The 22 year old echidna instantly crushes Dash's hand as she pushes the first baby toward birth. Dash holds the pain in as best he can, but it's no

good and he soon has tears falling down his face.

Doctor Alnilam has Monica rest for a few seconds and looks at Dash. "She's giving birth and yet you're the one crying. Perhaps you need the shot of morphine?"

Dash rolls his eyes and Doctor Alnilam has Monica push again. The doctor smiles as a lavender baby comes out. "Here's daughter number one."

Dash cuts the umbilical cord and takes Monica's hand again. "You're doing great Monica."

The sound of crying makes both parents smile, but then Monica screams as baby number two starts her journey down the birth canal. She squeezes Dash's hand so hard that it almost breaks. Dash actually has to sit down and almost faints because of how badly his hand hurts. After the second baby is born, Dash cuts the cord and is given a shot of morphine to dull the pain in his hand.

Monica pants but smiles when she hears the second baby cry. Doctor Alnilam looks at the young couple and smiles. "Just one more to go guys."

Dash wipes off Monica's forehead and face with a cool cloth. "You're doing great Monica."

The female echidna smiles at her bluish-purple fiancé. "Thanks Dash. AAAHH!"

The final baby begins her journey and Monica succeeds in breaking Dash's left hand. He doesn't feel it, but Doctor Alnilam knows he'll be feeling it in a few hours.

Monica continues to push and scream until Doctor Alnilam nods. "That's it Monica, you're done."

Monica gives a sigh of relief and lays down. Panting and sweating a lot. Dash cuts the third baby's cord and sits beside Monica as the babies are cleaned and weighed. Dash is also given a sling for his broken hand. Once

the babies return Monica takes the lavender and purple babies and nurses them while Dash holds the red baby in his good arm.

Giving Dash a tired but content look, Monica whispers to him. "Now that they're here, what name goes to which baby?"

Dash looks at the red baby, which has three quills sticking out of her forehead and also has Monica's hair. "This one will be named Dayna."

Monica nods and looks at the lavender baby. "The lavender one will be Crystal, and the purple one will be Angelica."

Crystal finishes nursing ten minutes later and Dash gives Dayna to Monica so she can nurse. Taking Crystal into his arms Dash very gently burps Crystal and is rewarded with a tiny burp a few minutes later.

Monica smiles. "Already you're showing signs of being an excellent father."

Dash chuckles. "Thanks Monica."

Angelica finishes nursing next and Dash burps her. Once done he sits down with them in his arms. 20 minutes later Dayna finishes nursing and Dash allows Monica to burp her. A knock is heard on the door, so Monica covers herself and Dash opens the door.

Sonic is standing there with the rest of the group, and Dash smiles. "Come on in guys."

Sonic comes in first, followed by Lily, Amy, Rouge, Shadow, Tails, Cream, Jenna with Caleb in her arms, Lucas, Matthew, Zachary, Delilah, and Nathaniel. Samuel had to work but sent his congratulations to the new father and mother.

Lucas and Matthew smile. "Igor is being put in a new, much more remote prison this time. One where if he does escape, he'll have miles to cover before reaching anyone, or anything."

Dash nods. "What about Melannie?"

Matthew sighs. "She's being released, but has been ordered to stay away from you."

Dash nods and smiles. "As long as I don't have to worry about them. Anyway, here they are, the baby triplets."

A group "Awwwww" was heard as Dash introduced the new baby girls. Dayna was first, and she has Dash's jade green eyes which contrasted strongly with her red fur. Angelica had Monica's purple eyes that made a perfect match to her purple fur. She also had Monica's hair style. Crystal had Dash's quills, but it was her eyes that drew the most attention. Her right eye was purple and her left eye was jade green.

Suddenly Dash falls to his knees, clutching his left hand. Monica blinks and blushes. "Heh... Sorry Dash."

Sonic chuckles. "Did she break your hand son?"

Dash nods. "Yeah. Doctor Alnilam gave me a shot of morphine, but apparently that morphine doesn't work very well. Ow ow ow!"

He gets back in his chair, and Monica kisses his broken hand. "Better?"

Dash nods. "Better."

Dash allows Sonic and Knuckles to hold their new grandchildren and introduce everyone in the family. Pictures are taken for the next 30 minutes as Dayna, Crystal, and Angelica are introduced.

After everyone leaves Dash gets an empty hospital bed and lays beside Monica. "Our family is finally here, and the babies are all perfectly healthy. I'm really proud of you Monica. You did a wonderful job."

Monica kisses Dash and snuggles close to him. "Thank you Dash. I'm glad you were here."

The newborn triplets are laid between Dash and Monica, who surround them in a protective manner and fall asleep.

The wedding is finalized

The next morning Dash opens his eyes and finds Monica already awake. She has already nursed Dayna and Crystal and was currently nursing Angelica. The bluish-purple hedgehog sits up and smiles. "Good morning Monica, and Dayna, and Crystal, and Angelica. Did everyone sleep well?"

Monica leans over and kisses Dash. "Yes we did, and good morning to you too."

Dayna and Crystal reach toward their father, who picks them up. "Hello my beautiful girls. How are you two?"

Dayna and Crystal reach their tiny arms out and touch Dash's face, making various happy cooing noises. Monica watches all this and smiles. "They missed you holding them when they woke up this morning."

Dash kisses the babies and nuzzles them with tears in his eyes. "I'm so happy they're finally here Monica. I'm finally a father."

Monica smiles and starts burping Angelica. "I'm just as happy as you are Dash. I've wanted this since... Well, since we first met. Now, ten months later, it's happened."

Dash nods and smiles. "Yeah... It's hard to believe it's been almost a year since we got together."

The female echidna sighs contently. "It doesn't seem like it's been that long at all. Now, all we have to do is get married."

Dash nods. "Yes, but we'll do all that after we leave the hospital."

There's a knock on the door and Doctor Alnilam pokes his head in. "Hey guys. There's a man here by the name of Reverend Spolowicz."

Monica covers herself and Dash nods. "Let him in."

The doctor nods and lets the reverend in. Now in his 70s Reverend Spolowicz used a cane to help him get around. "Hello. You must be Dash and Monica. How are you?"

Dash shakes his hand. "Nice to meet you Reverend. I guess my dad called you and told you about our wedding?"

Reverend Spolowicz nods. "Yes. Sonic gave me a call and told me you might want me to perform the wedding."

Monica finishes burping Angelica and smiles. "It's nice to meet you Reverend. Yes, we'd like you to perform the wedding. Mr. Hedgehog also said something about you having a catering company. Do you still have it?"

Reverend Spolowicz scratches his bald head. "Well, unfortunately I just got rid of it. I can see if I can get one more project in, but no guarantees. Let me go ahead and get a list of what you would like at your wedding. Just in case I'm unable to cater the event, I'd have someone else on standby."

Dash and Monica nod, so Reverend Spolowicz gets out a pencil and a small pad of paper. "Okay. What kind of cake would you like?"

Monica thinks. "Um... I think we should have a chocolate cake Dash."

He nods. "That should be fine. I also think it should have three tiers with white frosting and purple decorations on top of that."

The reverend nods. "A combination of your colors I suppose. Alright. What else do you want there?"

Dash scratches his head and gives Dayna and Crystal to Monica. "Anything else that can be prepared. Meat, pasta, everything."

Monica blinks. "That sounds expensive Dash."

The hedgehog nods and looks at the echidna. "I know it does, but this is a special occasion. Maybe Reverend Spolowicz can give us a discount since he also performed and catered Mom and Dad's wedding."

The reverend chuckles. "We'll see, but your fiancée is right Dash. This is shaping up to be fairly expensive."

Dash sits on the chair he's using and nods. "I figured it would be..."

He looks at Monica. "Do you think Knuckles and Tikal will let us have the wedding on Angel Island?"

She thinks for a moment. "It's possible. They'll need time to decorate the island, but they should be okay with it."

Reverend Spolowicz nods. "That would be another first for me. Sonic and Amy had an offshore wedding, which hasn't been done since. Well, to my knowledge anyway."

Monica smiles. "In that case, I'll see if Mom and Dad will have the wedding on Angel Island."

Reverend Spolowicz stands and gives Dash and Monica a small piece of paper. "That paper has my number on it. Call me when Angel Island is available for the wedding please."

Dash takes the card shakes the reverend's hand. "Thanks for coming by. It shouldn't be too long before we call you."

Reverend Spolowicz smiles and leaves while Monica calls her parents.

-Angel Island-

Knuckles and Tikal are awakened from their slumber near the Master Emerald by the phone ringing in their hut. Tikal goes over and answers it. "Hello? Oh hi Monica... Are you doing okay with Dash and the triplets?... Good, I'm glad to hear that... I see... Ask your father... Hold on a second."

Tikal gives the phone to her husband. "Knuckles, it's Monica."

Knuckles takes the phone. "Hey Monica."

Monica smiles on her end of the call. "Hi Dad. Dash and I are planning our wedding and we'd like to have the wedding on Angel Island."

Knuckles blinks. "You want to have the wedding on Angel Island?"

Dash is heard saying something and Monica speaks again. "Yes, and if we can we'd like to have the wedding done in front of the Master Emerald."

Knuckles smiles. "I'd be honored to have the wedding on Angel Island. Do you and Dash still need a theme?"

Monica and Dash talk for a minute and Monica speaks again. "Knowing you, there's some kind of tradition isn't there?"

Knuckles nods. "There is. If you have the wedding on this island, you have to wear the tribal outfits that are chosen for you."

Monica nods. "I had a feeling. Alright, Dash and I will be over soon to try out the tribal stuff."

Knuckles smiles. "Alright, see you soon."

-Station Square Hospital-

Monica hangs up the phone and looks at Dash. "Angel Island will be the site of our wedding. However, we'll have to wear tribal outfits for the wedding."

Dash nods. "Tradition I guess. At least this doesn't involve curses."

The female echidna giggles and kisses her hedgehog fiancé. "Yeah. We need to visit the island to be fitted and all that. My family will give us the outfits we're going to wear."

Dash smiles. "We will, but first we need to settle into being parents first."

Doctor Alnilam comes in and smiles at the family. "Hello again. I'm just here to give Monica a last checkup before she's released."

Monica gives the sleeping triplets to Dash and waits for Doctor Alnilam to finish his post-labor checkup. He smiles and gives a nod of approval. "Alright Monica. Everything looks good. You still need to take things easy for a few days though."

Dash signs Monica out of the hospital and takes two of the children into his arms. "Ready when you are babe."

Monica smiles and gets up with Dayna in her arms. Her pregnancy belly was gone thanks to a heated blanket being used during the night. The new family thanks Doctor Alnilam and leaves the hospital to start the next phase of their life.

-Two months later-

A group is gathered on Angel Island. Reverend Spolowicz, Sonic, Amy, Tails, Cream, Shadow, Rouge, Jenna, Lucas, Matthew, even Samuel was there. Dash and Monica were trying out different tribal outfits to wear during the wedding. Of course, they weren't allowed to see the outfits they chose to wear until the day of the wedding.

Nathaniel and Zachary were in their hut with Dash getting him set up. Zachary thinks for a minute. "Do you still have the chunk of the Master Emerald on the necklace?"

The lavender hero nods. "Yes, it's at my house. I also have the reed sandals Tikal made me."

Nathaniel finds a midnight blue kilt-like object and gives it to Dash. "This will go around your waist. That kilt type thing also comes with a matching headband that has some tribal patterns on it like what would be found in Dad's civilization."

Dash nods and lets Zachary put the headband on while he puts on the kilt. "Dash, you'll have to wear this outfit without a shirt."

Dash blinks. "What about underwear?"

Zachary chuckles. "You can't wear that either. You are to wear this outfit, the reed sandals, and the part of the Master Emerald you have."

Dash nods. "I think I can handle it."

Once he was done being fitted Dash changes back into his blue shirt and blue jeans. Nathaniel nods. "Alright, now go help Dad find a place for your honeymoon hut to go."

The bluish-purple hero nods and does just that. Zachary stands beside his brother. "Things sure have changed Nate."

Nathaniel nods. "Looking back, I feel bad for you and me treating him so badly. I don't plan to tell him that though."

Zachary laughs and goes to help Dash and Knuckles find a place for the honeymoon hut.

-With Monica-

Delilah and Tikal are getting Monica looking pretty for the wedding. They already know what Dash is wearing, but they don't tell Monica that. Monica had her pre-pregnancy figure back, but her swollen breasts were the problem. They were measured at 38DD because she was nursing and the tops she tried on were too tight.

Tikal sighs. "I think we're going to have to custom make a top for Monica's outfit."

Delilah nods. "I agree. There's no way Monica can be comfortable with what we have. She'd pass out."

Monica frowns. "I'd like to be conscious for my wedding if you don't mind."

Tikal rolls her eyes. "You'll be fine Monica. Besides, with what you've chosen to wear, it's Dash you need to worry about keeping conscious."

Monica looks in a mirror and smiles. Her red veil complemented her fur and her skirt had several high cuts in it. This skirt was guaranteed to make her irresistible to her husband-to-be.

Delilah chuckles. "Dash is going to have a hard time not jumping you when he sees you during the wedding."

Monica giggles. "What if I want him to jump me? Hm? What if that's exactly what I want to have happen?"

Delilah laughs. "Then get ready for a hard hit when you land on the ground."

Tikal had gone to her old clothes and came back with a red lace top. "This should be perfect. It's loose fitting and it matches your fur and veil. It's see-through but not to the point that everyone can see what's underneath."

Monica blinks. "Alright, if you say so."

With her outfit complete Monica left her sister's hut to help with planning the catering with Reverend Spolowicz, Amy, and Cream.

-Two weeks later-

The invitations have gone out, the catering was almost done, and the honeymoon hut has been built. Dash and Monica were currently relaxing on the couch in their house. Dayna, Crystal, and Angelica were sleeping and the hedgehog-echidna couple was glad for the break.

Dash held Monica close and purred. "The big day is almost here. Ten days from now, you and I will be Mr. and Mrs. Hedgehog."

Monica smiles and nuzzles Dash. "You have no idea how much I've wanted this Dash. I'm so excited about becoming your wife."

Dash and Monica kiss and go back to making their final wedding preparations.

The knot is tied

As the months pass Dash and Monica adjust to being parents. Of course, the worst part for them was waking up at ridiculous hours of night to feed and change the triplets. At the moment Monica was nursing Crystal and Dash was burping Angelica. Dayna had already nursed and been changed.

Monica yawns and looks at the clock. "2:18 AM? Geez these kids wake up at strange times."

Dash nods. "Yeah, but it's necessary. Besides, the girls are only five months old. They'll grow out of it soon."

Monica giggles. "I hope so. I don't like losing sleep."

Dash smiles. "Neither do I, but once the children are old enough they'll be waking up at normal times."

Crystal finishes nursing and Monica starts burping the lavender hedgehog-echidna baby. Angelica gives off a tiny burp and snuggles against her father. Dash smiles and pets Angelica, smiling as she quietly purrs.

Monica hears a burp from Crystal and she looks at her lavender fiancé. "Time to change the other two children Dash."

Dash laughs and nuzzles his crimson fiancée. "You're changing Crystal, and I'll change Angelica."

Monica giggles. "Alright, fine."

Dash helps Monica out of her chair and kisses her. Monica kisses back and goes into the girls' room. Dayna is still sleeping and Dash and Monica quickly change the stinky diapers and lay Crystal and Angelica in their cribs. Once this is done Dash climbs back in bed and Monica snuggles up to him. The two parents purr and nuzzle each other as their fur and skin is felt.

Monica purrs into Dash's ears. "I can't wait for our honeymoon Dash. It's going to be the best two weeks of your life."

Dash chuckles and purrs back to Monica. "Just you wait. I'll make you have so many orgasms your legs won't stop shaking until we get home from the honeymoon."

Monica kisses Dash and lays her head on his strong chest. "You'll have to prove it honey."

Dash nods and closes his eyes. "Don't worry, I will."

-Two weeks later-

It's now July 23rd. Sonic and Amy have just gotten back from their 24th wedding anniversary cruise. Angel Island was alive with sounds and fully decorated. Zachary, Nathaniel, and Delilah were acting as the bouncers to keep everyone who wasn't invited away from the island. It was a sight to see: Heaps of food lay on several tables. Everything from turkey and ham to the huge wedding cake was there. In fact, there was so much food the tables were threatening to break.

Sonic and Knuckles had been chosen as the Best Men, and Amy and Tikal had been chosen as the Maids Of Honor. Considering this was another world hero wedding, the media was all over the shore trying to get pictures. However, the bouncers weren't letting them get by. The bridge was also retracted so it was even harder to get to Angel Island.

Around 5 PM Monica appeared at the end of the aisle and began walking toward the altar, her purple eyes sparkling in the late afternoon sunshine. Shadow and Tails stood behind Sonic and Knuckles. Rouge and Cream stood behind Tikal and Amy. Samuel and Jenna Acorn had been put in charge of watching the children. Chris couldn't make it because he and Helen were at a science convention but sent their best wishes to Dash and Monica.

Caleb was walking around a little bit, and Dayna, Crystal, and Angelica were crawling. Dash smiles when he sees Monica in her tribal outfit for the

first time. 'Wow... Monica looks beautiful...'

Monica blushes when she sees Dash basically drooling over her, and she can't help but do the same to him. 'Gosh, look at that body... He looks so sexy in that outfit... I wonder if he'll wear it during our honeymoon...'

Once she arrived at the altar Reverend Spolowicz begins the wedding. "Ladies and gentlemen, we are gathered here today to join Dash and Monica in holy matrimony. If anyone can show why these two should not be married, speak now or forever hold your peace."

No objections are heard, so the reverend looks at Dash. "Dash, time to recite your vows."

The bluish-purple hero nods and looks at Monica as he repeats after the reverend. "I, Dash the Hedgehog, take thee Monica, to have and to hold, in sickness and in health, for richer or poorer, through everything life throws our way, as long as we both shall live."

Monica wipes a tear from her eyes and repeats after the reverend. "I, Monica the Echidna, take thee Dash (sniffle) to have and to hold, in sickness and in health, for richer or poorer (sniffle), through everything life throws our way as long as we both shall live."

Dash smiles and watches as Tikal comes over with a hot urn filled with a gold-colored liquid. "This is a potion for both of you to drink. The ancient civilization used it as a bedroom enhancer, if you know what I mean."

Dash and Monica blush amid giggles from the other people there. Tikal frowns and mumbles. "It certainly helped Knuckles... Anyway, Dash is to drink first and then you Monica. This potion will last your entire honeymoon, beginning with your first round of foreplay and ending the night of the honeymoon."

Dash and Monica knew they didn't need the libido enhancer, but it was tradition so they decided to go along with it. Dipping the leather-wrapped cup into the potion, Dash drank half of it and Monica drank the other half.

Once this was done Knuckles comes forward with a necklace similar to the one Dash wore.

Placing it around Monica's neck Knuckles touches the pieces of the Master emerald on both necklaces together and closes his eyes. "Wherever you are, you'll know where the other is at all times. No matter how close, no matter how far away, the distance is irrelevant. The necklace will glow if one is needed. If Dash is needed, his necklace will glow a red color. If Monica is needed, her necklace will glow a lavender color."

To make this official, Knuckles recites a chant in the ancient civilization's language, a language only he knew. The pieces of the Master Emerald on the necklaces glowed as the huge gem itself lit up behind the red echidna. The glow stops when Knuckles opens his eyes, and he returns to his place in front of Sonic.

Reverend Spolowicz steps forward and looks at Sonic. "May I have the rings please?"

Sonic steps forward and gives the rings to the reverend before returning to his place. The rings were gold with the gems also from the Master Emerald. They will also glow in case either Dash or Monica was needed.

Reverend Spolowicz gives Monica's ring to Dash. "Dash, put the ring on Monica's finger."

He does so and Reverend Spolowicz looks at him. "Dash, do you take Monica to be your lawfully wedded wife?"

Dash looks at Monica and smiles. "I do."

Monica takes Dash's ring and puts it on his finger as the reverend looks at her. "Monica, do you take Dash as your lawfully wedded husband?"

Monica looks in Dash's eyes as tears of joy fall from her own eyes. "I do."

Dash smiles and Reverend Spolowicz nods. "By the power vested in me, I now pronounce you husband and wife. Dash, you may kiss the bride."

Dash never gets the chance because Monica glomps him and plants a nice French kiss on him. Reverend Spolowicz smiles at everyone. "Ladies and gentlemen, I give you Dash and Monica Hedgehog!"

Cheers and claps erupt from the island as Dash finally gets up. "Wow... I don't think we've ever shared a kiss like that before."

Monica giggles and hugs her new husband. "That's because I'm just so happy to be your wife."

The group goes over to the multiple tables of food and start eating. They were only located about 100 feet from the wedding site, but it was easier than going onshore and facing the media.

After 20 minutes Knuckles stands up to give his speech. "As the father of the bride, I get to speak first. Over the last 16 months I've gotten to earn a new respect for Dash. At first I wasn't so sure about letting him become part of the family, and I'll admit that I did some things that I'm not proud of. However, as time went on, I learned to get over myself and accept that Dash was going to be marrying Monica. Congratulations to Dash and Monica and I hope you have a happy life together."

Once the clapping stopped Sonic stood up. "I'm not sure where Knuckles got the idea about going before me, but I'll let it slide this time."

There are a few chuckles before Sonic continues. "Instead of a speech, I'm going to show a slideshow of some of Dash's finest, and most embarrassing moments."

The slideshow plays and Dash just hides his face, which is completely purple from embarrassment. Some of the pictures include Dash sleeping with a stuffed animal, his proposal in the hospital, and several others that made the bluish-purple hero shake his head. "I can't believe you included what you did Dad."

Amy giggles. "It's part of the wedding Dash. Don't worry, it'll be over soon."

Dash shakes his head and Monica tickles him a little. "Aw, Dash slept with a stuffed animal. How cute."

Dash laughs and then tickles Monica. "Payback time."

Monica squeals and laughs. "Not fair!"

After the tickle fight Dash and Monica take the triplets to nurse and be changed before coming back to the reception. Jenna smiles at them. "Congratulations guys. I had a feeling you two would wind up together."

Monica raises an eyebrow. "You could have told me that sooner you know."

Jenna giggles. "Maybe, but I didn't want to spoil it or look stupid if I was wrong."

Dash hugs his cousin and takes Monica to the center of the reception area for their first dance as a married couple. The song they chose was "Your Song" by Elton John. Dash sang to Monica as they danced and Cream played the song on the piano nearby.

"It's a little bit funny, this feeling inside. I'm not one of those who can easily hide. I don't have much money but boy if I did, I'd buy a big house where we both could live.

If I was a sculptor, but then again, no. Or a man who makes potions in a travelling show. I know it's not much but it's the best I can do. My gift is my song and this one's for you."

Dash had seen the movie "Moulin Rouge" and decided to mix that version with the original. He spun Monica around as he went into the next part of the song.

"And you can tell everybody this is your song. It may be quite simple but, now that it's done. I hope you don't mind, I hope you don't mind that I put down in words... How wonderful life is while you're in the world."

Cream plays a little bit while Dash and Monica danced close together. Monica felt like she was in heaven. She was dancing with the one she loved

and he was singing to her. 'This is the most perfect day ever.'

Dash spun Monica again before continuing the song.

"I sat on the roof and kicked off the moss. Well, a few of the verses they've got me quite cross. But the sun's been kind while I wrote this song. It's for people like you that keep it turned on.

So excuse me forgetting, but these things I do... You see I've forgotten if they're green or they're blue. Anyway the thing is, what I really mean... Yours are the sweetest eyes I've ever seen."

Dash repeats the chorus and then shares a passionate kiss with his new wife. "I love you Monica, and I always will."

Monica smiles and snuffles. "Thank you Dash. I love you too, and I always will."

-An hour later-

The guests are all gone and Dash and Monica are talking with Knuckles and Tikal about their honeymoon hut. Knuckles smiles at Monica. "You'll like where your honeymoon will be."

Monica looks at Dash. "It better not be in the city or something. It has to be a place I've never been."

Tikal whispers to Dash and he nods with a smile on his face. "Thanks Tikal. I had a feeling and I know I made the right decision now."

Monica blinks. "Where is our honeymoon? Come on honey! I want to get going!"

Dash laughs. "Alright. First, you have to close your eyes."

Monica does so and Dash picks her up bridal style, stepping onto the teleporter near the reception site. Knuckles smiles. "Have a good honeymoon you two."

The teleporter activates and the newlywed couple gets teleported to their honeymoon spot.

-The Sky Sanctuary-

Dash and Monica are teleported up to the ancient ruins and Dash carries Monica to their hut. Putting his wife down Dash holds her hand. "Alright, open your eyes."

Monica's amethyst eyes open and the sight she sees makes her gasp. "Oh Dash this is so beautiful! Where are we?"

Dash smiles. "Tikal had said you'd never been to the Sky Sanctuary, and I haven't been either, but I decided to have our honeymoon here because it's secluded and we'll have our privacy. Our hut is right in the middle of these ruins, and the teleporter is right there."

Monica looks around and then stands beside the hut. Far below she could just barely see Angel Island floating offshore. Dash walks over to her. "We have everything we need for our two week honeymoon."

The female echidna is carried bridal style into the hut and Dash lowers the beads on the door to show the hut was occupied. No expense had been spared for this occasion. The bed was a king size with satin sheets and lace curtains. Candles are lit and they give off an erotic mix of lavender mixed with apple-cinnamon.

Monica wraps her arms around Dash's neck and purrs into his ears. "Let's get our honeymoon started."

Dash purrs back and puts his hands on her hips. "Ready when you are."

The libido-enhancing potion kicks in full force as Dash and Monica begin their honeymoon.

A steamy wedding night

Dash rubs Monica's back and nibbles on her ears. Monica purrs and lightly drags her claws on Dash's chest and abs. "Mmm... Nice and slow..."

Dash chuckles and moves to his wife's neck and shoulders. Monica moans and takes off her lace top, shivering as her husband's fangs trace a slow and sensual path around the area. The lavender hero puts his hands on Monica's skirt and yanks it right off.

Monica gasps and shivers when Dash spansks her. "Oh! Dash honey... Just take me right here. Forget the bed and everything."

Dash gives a deep chuckle and allows Monica to undress him. "If I did that, this wouldn't be any fun."

Monica pouts to Dash. "Please honey?"

Dash picks Monica up and puts her legs on his shoulders. "In time I will. Right now I'm going to take things nice and slow."

Monica is put against the wall by the bed and screams when Dash buries his face in her womanhood. "AH! OH DASH! YES!"

The lavender hedgehog buries his tongue deep in Monica's hot flower and very slowly licks all around the inside. Monica arches her back and pants as her opening is teased and her juices flow freely. "HAH! DASH! UH!"

Dash purrs, which makes his tongue vibrate. Monica's hands reach around Dash's head and pull on his quills as he makes her orgasm for the first time in this session. "AAAHH DASH! AH! OH! Ohh..."

Dash cleans Monica's soaked flower and smiles up at her. "Already orgasmed? Wow. I guess that potion does help."

Monica giggles and pants for a minute. "Whew... That was the strongest orgasm you've ever given me."

Dash winks and nibbles on her clitoris, making Monica's lower region shiver and twitch. He feels Monica's legs start shaking and he flicks her clit with his tongue. Monica moans loudly and begins squeezing her nipples to try and give herself more pleasure, but it does nothing.

Dash's tongue is too much and she orgasms again. "Dash! Oh fuck! Uh! Uh!"

Monica smiles and pants as she recovers. "Oh Dash (panting) this is so wonderful. (panting) I could be here all night."

Dash's muzzle is covered with her juices and he puts Monica down. She almost falls from her shaking legs, but she kisses Dash and moans as she tastes her own juices inside and on Dash's lips. "Mmm..."

Dash rubs Monica's curves as he kisses her back, battling with her tongue. This time Dash wins the battle and Monica smiles at him. "I let you win."

Dash chuckles. "Stop using my excuse."

Monica laughs and gets on her knees. "Now it's my turn to please you."

Dash nods and purrs as his crimson wife licks his 8.5 inch appendage all over and gives it some gentle squeezes. Her soft tongue twirls all around the thickness and Dash decides to take dominance. "Suck on it."

Dash being dominant was exactly what Monica wanted and she does just that. She puts the tip in her mouth, flicks it a few times, and then bobs her head along his length. Monica looks into Dash's eyes while she does this, telling him that she was going to be submissive to him.

Dash smiles and takes handfuls of her hair. "Since you're going to be submissive to me, at least for a while, I'll start by doing this."

The bluish-purple hedgehog holds Monica's head in place and mouth-bangs her hard. Monica's eyes widen but she allows Dash to assault her mouth with his massive member. He grunts with his efforts and feels his groin hitting her Monica's lips, meaning she was taking all 8.5 inches into her

mouth. Monica purrs, making her body vibrate and twirling her tongue around Dash's thick shaft.

Dash gives a few more thrusts and holds as he has his first orgasm. "Ohhh Monica..."

Monica takes the entire load of his seed, which was larger than normal because of the potion they drank. Dash pants and looks at his wife, who swallows the whole load and smiles. "Yummy. Is there something else my master wants me to do while I'm down here?"

Dash nods and smiles. "Yes. Use your breasts this time and make me cum."

Monica smiles and wraps Dash's thick member between her 38DD breasts. The newlyweds moan as the pleasure is received by both of them. Dash moans and smiles. "I love how your breasts feel on my cock Monica."

The echidna smiles. "Thank you master. I love how your penis rubs my nipples too."

Dash purrs. "Speed up."

Monica nods and does as her master commands. Her pink nipples turn red from rubbing against her husband's appendage but it felt so good Monica didn't care. The bluish-purple hedgehog feels his shaft grow a little bit and he purrs. "Mmm, lick the tip and go faster."

Monica nods and licks the top of Dash's member when it appears from between her breasts. The echidna herself was so turned on that her opening was forming a puddle between her feet.

Dash clenches his hands and screams as he orgasms for the second time. "Ah! Ohh Monica! MMM!"

Another huge load of his seed sprays all over Monica's face and breasts and Monica purrs. "Mmm... You're so fertile Dash. I love it."

Instead of cleaning herself off Monica sways her hips and walks to a nearby water fountain. Dash comes outside and watches Monica clean herself off.

With her fur wet the 23 year old echidna gave Dash a naughty wink. "Come over here honey. I have something for you."

Dash, also 23, smiles and joins Monica in the waterfall. "You look beautiful, even more so when wet."

Monica smiles and presses against her husband. "So do you my sexy stud."

She lifts her legs and wraps them around Dash's hips. "Will you finally fuck me honey?"

Dash nods and purrs into his wife's ears. "How hard?"

Monica licks Dash's neck and nibbles on his shoulders. "Tear my pussy up. Make it overflow with your thick, hot cum."

Dash frowns. "What if you get pregnant again?"

Monica smiles. "Mom said the potion keeps me from becoming pregnant again. Besides, my body isn't ready for it yet, and neither am I. So just enjoy it and fuck me like crazy."

Dash inserts his huge manhood into Monica's hot and dripping flower. Monica sighs happily and lays her head on Dash's left shoulder. "Show me what you've got Dash."

The hedgehog laughs. "Yes Mistress."

Monica giggles. "Good, you caught on that I'm being dominant now."

Dash smiles and thrusts mercilessly fast into his wife. Monica gasps and tosses her head back. "AH! YES SLAVE! TEAR THAT PUSSY UP! OH FUCK YEAH!"

Dash chuckles. "So much for me being dominant."

Monica growls. "Don't talk! Fuck me!"

The hedgehog nods. "Yes Mistress."

He rubs Monica's breasts and slams his thick organ completely into Monica's womanhood, feeling her womb with each powerful thrust. Monica gasps and pants with Dash's rhythm as she gets mercilessly pounded. "UH! UH! DASH! (panting) OH DAMN! I LOVE YOU SO MUCH!"

Dash smiles. "I love you too Monica!"

He speeds up, much to Monica's delight and he also sucks on her now erect nipples. Monica tries to hold back her orgasm as best she can, but she caves in and shakes a little as her third orgasm ripples through her stunning body. "DASH! AAHHH!"

The tightness of her flower makes Dash have his third orgasm as well and he fills Monica's opening with his thick load. "MONICA!"

The female echidna feels Dash unload inside her and she makes sure Dash is alright. "Dash honey? (panting) Are you alright?"

The lavender speedster nods and nuzzles his wife. "At the moment (panting) I couldn't be better."

Monica climbs off of Dash and gets against the side of the waterfall, still in the water. "Doggy style now baby."

Dash chuckles. "Beg for it."

Monica looks behind her and gives Dash the Puppy Face. "Please fuck me in doggy style Dash. I can't live without you pounding me with your huge cock."

Dash nods. "Good girl."

Rubbing Monica's twitching womanhood for a few seconds and getting several hot moans, Dash slams his thick shaft all the way into the soaked orifice. Monica tosses her head back and Dash grabs her hair, keeping her in place.

More hard thrusting comes from the hedgehog hero and Monica's eyes roll back in her head from the pleasure. "YES! YES! FUCK ME DASH! FILL

ME UP AGAIN!"

Dash gives Monica's healthy backside a strong spank and speeds up. His thrusting makes Monica's breasts and nipples slide along the side of the waterfall and Monica pants heavily. "UH! UH! FUCK! OH YEAH! HAH! YES! GIVE IT TO ME!"

Dash smiles. "I love your sounds Monica. They really turn me on."

He goes full speed and spanks Monica again, making her scream even louder. "YES! SPANK ME DASH! I LOVE BEING SPANKED BY YOU!"

Another spank and Dash begins rubbing Monica's clitoris. This makes Monica have her fourth orgasm. Dash feels his manhood get squeezed as Monica has her first multiple orgasm. She shakes violently and scream as loud as she can. "FUCK! OH DASH! UH! UH! Ohhh..."

Dash also has his fourth orgasm and overfills Monica with yet another huge load. "MONICA!"

Monica gasps at the size of this load and moans when Dash erupts again, having a multiple orgasm of his own. "Ohh Dash... That was a huge load."

Dash pulls out of his wife and pants, sitting in the water. "Yeah. (panting) Not did you have a multiple orgasm, I (panting) had one too."

Monica giggles and snuggles up to him. "That was amazing Dash."

He nods and massages her back, making Monica purr. "Yes it was, but we're not done yet."

Monica smiles. "I was hoping we weren't."

She gets out of the water fountain and bends over, opening up her backside. "Fuck my ass. Tear it apart just like you did to my pussy."

Dash gets behind his wife. "Are you sure? We've never done this before."

Monica nods. "I know, but I trust you Dash."

Dash gently rubs Monica's anus, making her shiver. "Alright, here we go."

Monica squeals as Dash enters her, having him stop on occasion so she can adjust. Pain shoots up her spine and she yelps a little. Dash rubs her back and kisses it. "Are you okay Monica?"

Monica pants and shakes, a sign that she didn't expect to be in this much pain. "Ow... This hurts (panting) a lot more than (panting) I thought it would."

Dash massages her back muscles a little. "Relax your body honey. That should help you."

Monica takes Dash's advice and relaxes. The lavender hero smiles. "Much better."

Monica smiles and looks behind her. "Alright baby. Tear that ass apart."

Dash nods and instantly goes half his full speed, burying his huge organ completely into Monica's thick rear. The female echidna gasps and screams as her pain becomes pleasure. "AH! AH! OH! UH! UH! YES! DASH! YEAH!"

Dash's right hand reaches around and rubs Monica's womanhood. He feels Monica shudder and smiles at her sounds. "UH! UH! YES DASH! FUCK THAT ASS! HARDER!"

The hedgehog adds more force to his anal assault and speeds up again. "Like this?"

Monica starts drooling and pants heavily. "YES! (panting) JUST LIKE THAT! (panting) DASH I'M GOING TO CUM! AAAHHHHH!"

Monica's fifth orgasm roars through her and she feels Dash unload as well. He fills her and bellows her name as he does. "MONICA!"

After their orgasms pass Monica closes her eyes as soft bubbles explode in her head. "Ohh... Dash that was amazing."

Dash pants and pulls himself out of Monica. "Whew... How long have we been mating?"

Monica looks at the setting sun. "I'd gets about 45 minutes if we include foreplay."

Dash lays on the ground. "How are you feeling?"

Monica crawls on top of her bluish-purple husband and purrs. "I'm still good to go. How about you?"

Dash smiles at the red echidna. "I'm ready to keep going, but you do the work."

Monica giggles and positions her rear over Dash's thick appendage. "That's fine with me."

Slamming herself down onto Dash, Monica instantly rides him hard and fast. "HAH! OH! THAT FEELS SO GOOD! IT'S SO BIG! UH! I LOVE IT!"

Dash smiles. "I love it too Monica!"

He starts playing with Monica's bouncing breasts and this action makes her start drooling again. "YES DASH! PLAY WITH MY BODY! UH! UH!"

Obeying his mate's demands Dash squeezes her left nipple, suckles on the right, and inserts three fingers into Monica's soaked flower. The female echidna's amethyst eyes widen and she arches her back as the pleasure makes her shiver. "DASH I'M ABOUT TO CUM AGAIN!"

The newlywed couple matches rhythms and reach their next orgasm in a short time. The evening air echoes with screams of love and passion as Dash and Monica scream each other's name.

Monica's legs shake violently and she pants heavily. "Dash? (panting) Wow... I think Mom was right (panting) about the potion."

Dash chuckles. "It's definitely given us (panting) more endurance."

Monica giggles and kisses her husband. "In case you lost count, that was nine orgasms for both of us if you include our multiple orgasms."

Dash laughs a little. "I'm just focused on pleasing you Monica."

She smiles and licks his neck. "You've done that for the last 16 months and also nine times today... Want to go for ten?"

Dash nods. "Sure, and I'll do the work this round."

Monica gasps as Dash thrusts upward into his wife's rear hard and fast. "OH FUCK! SHIT THAT FEELS GOOD! POUND IT HARD AND FAST!"

Dash nods and speeds up, going half of his full speed and burying himself inside his wife's ample backside. Monica's flower drips a mix of her juice and Dash's seed as her pleasure skyrockets. "AAH DASH YES! FUCK THAT ASS BABY! FILL IT UP AGAIN!"

The bluish-purple hedgehog goes to his full speed and uses as many of Monica's erogenous zones as he can. The sensations jumped across Monica's fur and skin as her mate pleased her. In fact, he did such a good job that Monica had another multiple orgasm.

Her scream was so loud it hurt Dash's ears. "DASH! OH SHIT! AH! UH! UH! OHHH! Uhhh..."

Dash arches his back and erupts in his final orgasm. "MONICA!"

The 23 year old couple pants rapidly and just lays there by the water fountain. Dash purrs quietly and Monica snuggles him. "Not fair. (panting) I had more orgasms than you did. (panting) I had 12 orgasms total."

Dash chuckles. "I had 10, but every one of them was awesome."

Monica smiles. "I agree."

After a few minutes Dash and Monica enter their hut and lay in the huge bed, using the smell of the candles to help them calm down. Monica nuzzles Dash's chest. "Are you ready to admit that the special potion worked?"

Dash holds Monica to him and gives a deep chuckle. "If we're not sore at the end of our honeymoon, then I'll admit the potion worked."

The newlyweds are soon sleeping close together in their hut, completely content and not worried about anything. The triplets were with Sonic and Amy and Igor was still in jail. For the first time in a good while, Dash and Monica slept soundly without a single care in the world.

Igor escapes again

Two weeks went by way too quickly for Dash and Monica. They never wanted their honeymoon to end, but sadly it had to. They both had to go back to work. It's the morning of August 8th and Dash's alarm clock goes off at 7 AM.

Shutting it off the bluish-purple hero sits up and rubs his eyes. "7 AM already? Wow... (yawn) Well, work won't wait for me."

Climbing out of bed Dash goes over to Monica and kisses her. "Time to get up Monica."

The female echidna growls a little and opens her eyes. "Dash? (yawn) Do I have to get up? I'm tired."

Dash nods. "I know you are honey, but Dad needs you at work."

Monica nods and climbs out of bed, pressing against her husband. "Have the children made any sounds?"

Dash holds Monica to him, making her tail wag a little. "Not that I've heard. I'm sure they'll be awake by the time we get out of the shower."

Monica drags Dash into the shower where they spend 30 minutes nuzzling each other. Of course, they take a few minutes to wash each other and dry each other off once the shower is done. Dayna, Crystal, and Angelica were awake as Dash said they would be, so Monica goes into their room to nurse them. Dash gets dressed in his work clothing, if you could call it that. A collared shirt, a tie, khaki pants, and white overcoat were all he wore.

Joining Monica in the children's room he takes Crystal and changes her before burping the lavender baby girl. Dayna and Angelica are nursing and Monica smiles at Dash. "Hey honey. I don't have to be into work until 10 AM. Just thought I'd let you know."

Dash chuckles. "Lucky."

After Dayna and Angelica have nursed and been changed Dash kisses Monica. "I'll be home around 5. Be careful okay?"

Monica nods and kisses Dash back. "Okay honey. You be careful too."

Dash nods and bolts out of the house to work. Monica smiles and begins getting ready for her work day. During this time Dayna, Angelica, and Crystal decided to crawl around on the carpet floor. Around 9 AM Amy knocks on the door and comes in. "Monica? It's Amy. I'm here to get the children."

Monica comes into the room and hugs her mother-in-law. "Hello Mrs. Hedgehog. The children have already been changed and fed. They're ready for your care."

The pink hedgehog hugs her daughter-in-law and picks up the triplets. "I have to ask if you and Dash used protection during your honeymoon."

Monica shakes her head. "We didn't, but Mom told me that the potion we drank wouldn't allow me to get pregnant again."

Amy nods. "That's good. I'm glad you and Dash are doing so well. You've had a long road to travel."

Monica nods. "Yes, but I wouldn't change it for anything."

Amy nods and gets the baby bag, talking to the triplets. "Are you ready for spending time with Grandma?"

The babies make happy noises as Amy carries them to her house. Lily had also come along to help out while getting ready for college. She was almost 19, and Amy had turned 42 the day before. Sonic was 44 years old now, approaching 45, like Knuckles and Tikal. Rouge was 46, Shadow was still an unknown age, and Tails and Cream were now 41. After Amy had taken the triplets Monica finishes getting ready for work. Once she's ready Monica locks her door and goes to the resort spa.

-Downtown Station Square-

The female echidna walks into the resort spa and clocks in just before Sonic comes out of the main office. "There you are Monica. Please hurry and get to work. We've got a lot of people scheduled today."

Monica nods. "Yes Mr. Hedgehog."

She goes into the athlete's area and is stared at by everyone there, guys included. A woman walks over and hugs her. "It's nice to have you back Monica."

Monica smiles and hugs the woman back. "Thanks Roxanne. It's nice to be back, and I'm married now."

Roxanne, who was a 25 year old fox-squirrel mix, looked at the rings on Monica's finger. "Oh, those are pretty. Is he rich?"

Monica giggles. "His name is Dash."

Roxanne gasps. "The world hero Sonic's son?"

Monica nods, earning a few jealous stares. "Yes, that's him. He's everything I've ever wanted Roxanne. He's hot, sweet, and he's awesome in bed."

Roxanne giggles. "You'll have to tell me when we get our lunch break later."

Monica giggles and nods. "As long as no one else knows alright?"

Roxanne nods and lets Monica start her shift.

-The Mojave Desert-

In the middle of the Mojave Desert we find an SUV driving toward a small cage. Inside this cage was Igor, and once again he was plotting his escape from this version of a prison. An officer walks up and tosses Igor a bag of bread and beans. "Eat up."

Igor shakes his head. "You don't get it do you? I'm going to escape again and this time I'll achieve world domination."

The officer laughs, not realizing loose change had fallen from his pants pocket. "Even if you do, we'll know it. Your electronic ankle bracelet will tell us. Not only that, but you're also 20 miles from any form of civilization. You'd die of dehydration before you got anywhere."

The police car drives off and leaves Igor to continue plotting an escape. Looking around the cage he finds the money the officer dropped. "Money... That idiot dropped money."

At this moment a tiny light bulb turns on in Igor's head. "Yes... Yes that's it! If I can shape some of these coins using parts of this cell, maybe I can pick the lock. If not, I'll make a wedge and pry the door open. First, I have to do something about this ankle bracelet."

Igor breaks the wooden bench off of the wall and starts working on the plan to escape.

-With Monica-

The female echidna and the fox-squirrel were in the break room talking about girl stuff. At the moment Roxanne was trying to get Monica to tell her about Dash. "Come on girl, you have to tell me."

Monica blushes. "But it's embarrassing."

Roxanne rolls her eyes. "Fine, if you won't tell me, then I'll get Dash to tell me."

She takes Monica's cell phone and calls Dash's phone. It goes to voicemail and Monica takes her phone back. "He doesn't get good service in San Pedro where he works."

Roxanne frowns. "Aw come on! Can't you get him here at all?"

Monica giggles. "I can, but it would take him an hour."

Roxanne sighs. "Tell me please?"

The echidna sighs. "Fine. He's awesome in bed like I told you earlier."

The 25 year old fox-squirrel frowns. "Details Monica. I want details."

Monica blushes heavily. "Fine, but be prepared to be jealous."

Roxanne listens as Monica brags about Dash being gifted down south and averaging 10 orgasms per mating session. The sessions last over an hour and Roxanne shakes her head. "You are so lucky. My husband isn't anywhere near that good."

Monica nods. "Dash gets off work around 4, so he should be here around 5, which is when I get off."

Roxanne nods. "I want to meet him when he gets here."

Monica nods. "I think you'll like him."

-With Dash-

The lavender hedgehog is busy filling prescription bottles when his phone goes off. Finishing with the orange bottle of pills Dash takes out his phone and reads the text message from Monica. 'Baby, Roxanne wants to meet you. She's married, so don't worry about her hitting on you. I love you. Monica.'

Dash gives a deep chuckle and goes back to work, but it wasn't long before Lucas comes in. "Dash? Can I talk to you?"

The hedgehog frowns and steps out of the pharmacy office to talk to his cousin. "What's going on Luke?"

The fox-rabbit, now just past turning 22, looks at his hedgehog cousin. "Matt's just called me and said Igor may be working on another escape attempt."

Dash sighs and rubs the back of his head. "He never learns does he... My question is how? He's in the middle of the desert."

Lucas chuckles. "Igor thinks he can use the actual jail cell to help him escape."

Dash shakes his head. "I told Chief Parkinson going with a Western-style cell was a stupid idea. Igor could use the chains from his bench to either pull on the door or the nails in the wall to wedge the door open.

Lucas nods. "I was told to put you on high alert."

Dash nods. "Alright. Thanks Luke."

Lucas leaves and Dash goes back to work. 'Well, looks like Monica and the girls will have to go back to Mom and Dad's house.' Dash sighs and keeps filling prescriptions.

-Four days later-

Dash and Monica are seen walking in the massive park on the outskirts of Station Square. Sonic and Amy were also there since they hadn't spent much time with their grandchildren. Well, Sonic hadn't since he'd been working longer than normal.

Amy pressed against him and sighed happily. "Thanks for coming with us Sonikku. I'm sure your grandchildren appreciate it."

Sonic smiled and kissed Amy. "I'm glad I came too Ames. I think we all needed a day off."

It's about 5 PM on August 12th and the family stops by a little pond just inside the boundaries of the park, far from people and the hustle and bustle of the big city. Dash and Monica take Crystal, Dayna, and Angelica out of their stroller and let them crawl around. The pond had a rail around it so that babies wouldn't fall in. Dash and Monica watch the children while Sonic and Amy go a few hundred feet away and mate.

Dash shakes his head. "Get a room will you!"

Monica giggles. "At least we're far away from other people."

Dash nods. "That's true, but I don't want anyone to get curious if they hear my parents mating."

Crystal crawls over and reaches her arms up to her father. "Dada!"

Dash looks at Monica. "She said her first word."

Monica smiles. "Yeah... She said dada."

Dash picks Crystal up and feels her snuggle up to him. "Dada."

Dayna crawls over to Monica. "Mama?"

Monica smiles and picks up the red baby. "Yes Dayna, I'm mama."

Dayna purrs and touches Monica's face with her tiny hands. "Mama."

Monica holds Dayna to her and Angelica looks at them with big purple eyes. She next looks to where Sonic and Amy had gone and then back at her parents. "Pa?"

Dash picks her up. "She's talking about Sonic and Amy."

Monica nods. "We'll tell them after they get done mating."

It takes a few hours, but Sonic and Amy do eventually get done mating and rejoin their family. Dash smiles at them. "Welcome back guys. Your grandchildren are talking now, and Angelica was looking for you."

Amy curls up against Sonic while he holds Angelica. "Really?"

Angelica looks at Sonic and hugs his face. "Pa!"

Sonic smiles and Amy nuzzles him. "She loves you Sonikku... Just about as much as I do."

The blue speedster gives a deep chuckle and puts Angelica on his shoulder. "I'm sure of that Ames."

Angelica smiles and purrs as she snuggles into Sonic's silver-blue quills. Dash smiles. "Come on guys, the sun is about to set."

Dayna, Angelica, and Crystal are put in the stroller and Dash pushes it while Monica walks beside him. Sonic carries the sleeping Amy bridal style in his arms. At around 9 PM Sonic carries Amy into their house and Dash's family gets home around 9:30 PM.

-4:17 AM, August 14th-

Dash is woken up by his phone ringing. He rubs his eyes and has a short conversation with Matthew before waking Monica up. "Honey, wake up and get the kids."

Monica's sleepy reply is heard. "What's going on?"

Dash gets dressed. "Just do it."

Monica hears the urgency in Dash's voice and she gets up. Getting the kids Monica gets dressed and meets Dash by the door. "Honey? What's wrong?"

Dash picks his family up and bolts to Sonic and Amy's house. "Matt called me."

Banging on the door, Dash waits a few seconds before Lily answers. "Dash?"

He goes inside as Sonic and Amy come downstairs. "What's going on Dash?"

Dash answers Amy's question. "Igor has escaped again."

All's well that ends well

Sonic, Amy, Lily, and Monica just stared at Dash, too shocked to say anything. Dash puts Monica down and he looks at his family. "Matt says Igor somehow looped the chains from the bench around the door handle just added pressure until the wooden door split."

Sonic shakes his head. "How is this possible? Robotnik wasn't even this hard to take down."

Amy gets an idea. "Sonikku, do you think Tails can come up with an energy type of handcuff?"

Sonic thinks for a second. "I think he could, but it would take a while. He'd also need the government's involvement since Igor is basically on the top of the Most Wanted list."

Dash nods and kisses Monica and his triplets. "Get some sleep everyone. Dad, give Tails a call in the morning. We'll need all the time we can get."

Dash leaves the house and Sonic locks the door. "Alright everyone. Monica, you know the drill."

The female echidna sighs. "Sadly I do. I just want Igor gone."

Amy nods and puts a hand on Monica's shoulder. "You're not alone Monica, but we'll have him in jail before long."

Monica takes the triplet girls up to Dash's room and Lily turns off the lights. Sonic makes sure everything is locked before climbing in bed. Amy climbs in beside him and snuggles up to her husband. "Do you think Tails can come up with something that'll finally keep Igor in jail?"

Sonic pulls Amy close to him. "He doesn't have a choice Ames. Honestly, I don't think it's just the handcuffs. He also has to have a custom-made cell."

The two hedgehogs fall asleep and dream about ways to stop Igor.

-The next morning, Tails' P.O.V.-

I walk into my shop at about 9:30 in the morning and crawl underneath the latest job from the government. At the moment it looked like a regular tank, but this particular tank was eventually going to travel faster than most cars. For two hours I'm lying on my back and banging on this futuristic machine. Around noon I crawl out from underneath the tank and stretch. Once again my orange fur is soiled with grease.

Taking a look at myself I shake my head. "I seriously need to get a suit of some kind."

I hear a knock on my door and when it opens I smile. "Hello Cream. What brings you out here?"

She smiles and kisses me before cupping my cheeks. "Hello Miles. Sonic is on the phone for you. After that, come see me in our room for some fun, my dirty boy."

I laugh a little and wink at her before taking the phone. "Hey Sonic."

The voice on the other end of the phone sounds a little frustrated. "Hey Tails. I hate calling you with this since I'm not sure I want to be involved, but the government was very persuasive about me being involved. Anyway, I've been asked to tell you about your new assignment."

I frown and scratch my head. "That's two assignments I'll have to do."

Sonic chuckles a little bit. "The tank is to be put aside for now. Your new assignment is to create handcuffs to keep Igor from escaping. At this moment Prison Island is being upgraded specially for him."

I nod and sit at my workbench. "What are my resources?"

I'm certain Sonic smiled before his answer came. "Your resources are your imagination and all the money you need."

My brain is already coming up with ideas before I answer. "How soon do you need it?"

Sonic's voice has brightened a bit. "As soon as you can get the design done. You'll be paid handsomely and Chris Thorndike himself will oversee the building of the new handcuffs."

I smile and get a pencil. "Give me a few days and I'll have something ready."

I hang up and take care of Cream's mating needs before starting on a design. It was based on the medieval stockade and would have electrical current going through it.

-With Dash, Normal P.O.V.-

We find the lavender hero once again filling prescriptions when a customer approaches. Dash stops what he's doing and goes to help them. "Hello, can I help you?"

The customer smiles and Dash blinks a few times. "Mom? What medicine do you need?"

Amy chuckles a little and adjusts the kids in the cart. "I'm here to get my menopause medication."

Dash goes and looks at the waiting medicines before finding Amy's. "Here it is. Estrogen patches and some shots for you."

Amy pays for the medication and smiles. "I love your father's card. No limit and that's just fine with me."

Dash chuckles a little bit. "Don't get too crazy Mom. Dad won't hesitate to put a limit on that card if he has to."

Amy giggles and leaves so Dash can help the next customer. It's his sister-in-law Delilah. "Well, hello there brother-in-law."

Dash pretends to be irritated with her. "Next window please."

Delilah's face makes him laugh. "Sorry, I couldn't help it. What can I do for you?"

Monica's identical twin smiles. "I'm here to get my flu shot."

Dash nods and helps Delilah go where she needs to go before continuing his daily routine.

-Five days later-

We find Tails in a top secret location somewhere in New Mexico talking with the government scientists about the design for the handcuffs. Among the scientists was Chris Thorndike. He would be in charge of building the new handcuffs based on the design Tails made. Sonic had accepted the invitation to come along and he'd left Monica in charge of the resort spa for the week he'd be gone.

At the moment Chris was at the podium. "Alright design team, please welcome the creator and backup resource, Tails Prower and Sonic the Hedgehog."

The two males walk out from behind the curtain as applause is heard. Once it finishes Sonic speaks into the microphone. "Hello, and thank you for coming. As you can see on the TV monitors Tails has the newest handcuffs designed for the most dangerous criminals, like Igor."

The orange fox takes over and speaks through a headset. "These handcuffs are based on the medieval stockade, as you can tell by the thickness of the metal. The metal itself is a magnetized neodymium material. Sonic, will you put your hands behind your back?"

Sonic nods and does so. Tails fits the handcuffs on Sonic's hands, which sit in the middle of the device. After this he measures Sonic's biceps and looks at the scientists. "As you can see Sonic is in extremely good shape. His biceps are 14 inches around, and we all know how strong he is. So Sonic, escape the handcuffs."

Sonic uses Chaos Control and escapes the handcuffs. Everyone blinks and Tails picks up the handcuffs. "Alright you cheater. Chaos Control wasn't supposed to be used."

Sonic blushes and rubs the back of his head. "Heh... Sorry about that."

Tails chuckles. "I'm glad you did that though, because now I can demonstrate something else the handcuffs have."

Tails shackles Sonic again and has him try to escape again. This time it fails, and Tails looks at the scientists. "As you can see, as strong as Sonic is, he can barely move his arms thanks to the strength of the magnets. Now, watch this."

The orange fox takes the sides of the handcuffs and folds them over, creating a second set of handcuffs that connect just under Sonic's elbows. The cobalt hedgehog did everything he could to escape, but it was no good.

Tails chuckles. "Sonic, come here please."

Sonic rejoins the twin-tailed fox, who releases the handcuffs via remote control. The audience of scientists claps and Sonic looks at him. "Tails, is there anything else we need to know about these handcuffs?"

Tails nods. "Yes. This remote control has a red button and a green button. The green button releases the handcuffs as you just saw."

A woman raises her hand. "What does the red button do?"

Tails pushes it and everyone watches as arcs of electricity travel around the handcuffs. "It's a taser."

Sonic shakes his head. "Dude, that's sinister."

Tails smiles. "Igor is a sinister person Sonic. We can't take chances."

Chris comes onto the stage. "What about the blue button Tails?"

Tails looks at the side of the remote control. "Oh, I forgot about that one. Um, that's a remote locking button for the second set of cuffs."

Chris nods and looks at the scientists. "Any questions?"

None are heard, so Chris nods. "Alright everyone. We'll be working in three groups of 20 people, and we're working 24 hours a day. I want this done within a week."

Tails taps his shoulder. "Actually, you can just use this one."

Chris smiles. "Thanks Tails, but you'll need it to capture Igor. We have the blueprints so that unit can go with you."

Tails and Sonic nod and Chris starts the team working on the new handcuffs. As they leave Sonic and Tails look at the paycheck they've been given. Sonic's eyes widen when he sees the amount. "One million dollars per unit?"

Tails shakes his head. "You said I'd be paid handsomely, but I wasn't expecting it would be that handsomely."

Sonic nods. "We'll split it 50-50, and I'll give half of my share to Dash so he'll have money for his kids to go to college."

The fox nods and looks at the hedgehog. "That's a good idea Sonic. I'll give half of my share to Lucas and Matthew, who will share it between them. That'll be \$125,000 for each of them to use."

Sonic nods. "Let's hope they don't get greedy."

The two males go back to their hotel room and spend the week checking up on the progress of the new handcuffs.

-August 20th, Dash's house-

The lavender hedgehog enters the empty house to find Tails' new handcuffs and a note from Sonic on the table in the living room. 'Hey son. These are the new handcuffs to use when you next meet Igor. Also, the check is for your children to use for college, and there's more to come. Sonic.'

Dash opens the envelope and almost faints. "\$250,000 and more coming?"

He calls Monica and tells her, which makes her squeal with happiness. "Do you know what this means? We could retire and never work again."

Dash chuckles a little. "Now hold on a minute. We're only 23. We've got a lot of working left to do. However, we can save what we need for the girls and invest the rest in a retirement fund."

Monica nods. "Alright. Also, I heard Igor was going to be put in some new handcuffs?"

Dash nods. "Yes. Uncle Tails has designed them and tested them on Dad with complete success. That's why I've been given so much money. Dad is giving me half of his pay, which is half of what Tails is getting since they split it between them. Basically, Tails is getting a million dollars per unit, but he's also sharing with his kids."

Monica smiles. "That's very nice of him. Oh, hold on. Your children want to talk to you."

She puts the phone near the triplet girls and they start talking. "Dada! Dada!"

Dash smiles. "Hello Dayna, Angelica, and Crystal. Daddy will be over soon to see you."

Monica speaks to her husband again. "When will you come see them?"

The bluish-purple hero chuckles. "Let me change and I'll be over there."

The call ends and Dash quickly changes before he goes to Sonic and Amy's house.

-The next day-

Dash, Monica, and the triplets are sleeping when Dash's phone goes off. He rubs his eyes and answers the call. "This better be good Matt."

Matthew's voice is frantic. "I'm downtown and Igor has the Defense Department building hostage. Dad is in there too!"

Instantly Dash gets dressed and bolts downtown where he finds Lucas and Matthew among a huge crowd of people and police watching Igor pointing a gun at Tails' head. "Where is Dash Hedgehog? Either he shows up or the fox gets it!"

Dash runs around and finds Sonic. "Dad, can you freeze time and get these cuffs on him?"

Sonic frowns but nods. "I'll see what I can do. Be careful Dash."

Sonic takes the cuffs and starts sneaking behind Igor. Shadow had already been shot and was taken to the hospital. Igor had gotten Shadow's left thigh and Shadow had nearly bled out on the way to the hospital.

Dash walks through the crowd and crosses his arms. "You called for me Igor?"

The 16 year old smiles. "Hello Dash. As you can see I've got the Defense Department under my control. I also have this .300 caliber molecular blasting ray at my disposal. It's one of the secret projects I found in the building. One blast and Tails here becomes part of the atomic universe."

Dash rolls his eyes. "You sure about that? It looks like a prop to me."

Tails, who looks unusually calm for being a hostage, sighs. "It may look and sound real Igor, but it's a fake."

Igor presses the gun against Tails' head. "Shut up. I'll determine if it's a fake or not, and I'll try it out on you."

Igor pulls the trigger and... Nothing happens. Igor frowns. "What the-!"

Sonic knocks him down from behind and puts a foot on Igor's back. Removing the fake gun from Igor's hands Sonic quickly uses the new cuffs and secures both sets. Igor struggles to break free but is unable to.

Tails smiles and looks at Sonic. "Nice job Sonic. The handcuffs are a true success."

Igor growls. "I'll just escape again!"

Chief Parkinson walks over and picks Igor up. "Not this time Igor. Your cell in Prison Island has been upgraded just for you. The only opening in there now is the dinner slot in the door. Other than that, carbon-steel will be your company."

Igor is taken to the upgraded underwater cell and Sonic looks at Dash. "Nice job Dash. You're officially a world hero now."

The crowd scatters and Tails is allowed to take the rest of the day off.

-Sonic and Amy's house-

Dash is busy laying on the couch with Dayna, Crystal, and Angelica crawling on him. Monica makes sure the babies don't fall off while they enjoy crawling on their father. Dash had just gotten home from an interview and was just happy to have a break from the publicity that came with being a world hero.

Sonic looks at him. "Dash, did you know that was a fake gun?"

Dash chuckles a little. "Not at all. I was making it up and I honestly thought Uncle Tails was just playing along. He told me later that the real gun was in a secret part of the building."

Amy comes in and joins Sonic in the recliner. "I'm glad you're okay Dash. Problem is, what if Igor escapes again?"

Dash sits up with Dayna in his arms. "I think he'll have a hard time escaping from a carbon-steel cell with only a two inch high gap in the door."

After a few hours Dash takes his family back to his own house. Sonic and Amy begin planning their 25th wedding anniversary trip and decided to spare no expense this time.

-That night-

Dash comes into his room and finds Monica already in bed waiting for him. "Dash? Will we have to worry about Igor anytime soon?"

The lavender hero shakes his head and climbs in bed, snuggling Monica to him. "He'll be in jail for a long time Monica. I think we'll finally be able to live in peace for a while."

Monica nods and lays her head on Dash's chest. "Good. I think you can use a break from saving the world anyway."

Dash nods and closes his eyes. "Yeah. We can finally live normal lives."

Dash and Monica sleep peacefully and begin their normal lives the next morning.

THE END

Table of Contents

[Disclaimer](#)

[A Sonamy Story](#)

[The Story Begins](#)

[Evil with a twist](#)

[An unexpected confession](#)

[Planning a special night](#)

[Dinner with a special dessert](#)

[Sally's trial, part 1](#)

[Birthday with lots of romance](#)

[Sally pushes Sonic to the limit](#)

[Sally's trial, part 2](#)

[Sonic's big decision](#)

[A very special birthday present](#)

[Big news for the hedgehogs](#)

[The wedding planning begins](#)

[The first sonogram](#)

[The bachelor and bachelorette parties](#)

[The wedding](#)

[A wild honeymoon](#)

[The second sonogram](#)

[A bundle of joy for the hedgehogs](#)

[A Sonamy Story Sequel](#)

[The story continues](#)

[Dash's birthday party](#)

[A nearly fatal battle](#)

[A long recovery](#)

[A birthday to forget, part 1](#)

[A birthday to forget, part 2](#)

[Anniversary romance](#)

[Sally causes more trouble](#)

[Two unexpected funerals](#)

[Samuel gets adopted](#)
[Tails' challenge](#)
[The hedgehog love marathon](#)
[Babies on the way](#)
[Sonic gets an unexpected visitor](#)
[Poker at the hedgehog residence](#)
[Oceanside passion](#)
[Tikal's warning](#)
[Tragedy strikes](#)
[Will history repeat itself?](#)

[A Sonamy Story Threequel](#)

[Ten years later](#)
[The big decision](#)
[The curse is cast](#)
[A nocturnal rendez-vous](#)
[The plan comes together](#)
[Operation: Leverage](#)
[Monica's secret comes out](#)
[Hunting for a hedgehog, part 1](#)
[Hunting for a hedgehog, part 2](#)
[The torch is passed](#)
[Dash and Monica move out](#)
[A step toward the future](#)
[A threat to the family](#)
[Dash's children arrive](#)
[The wedding is finalized](#)
[The knot is tied](#)
[A steamy wedding night](#)
[Igor escapes again](#)
[All's well that ends well](#)